TOTEM

BOOK 01

Deep-Fried Stuffed Bun

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Totem

(图腾**)**

by

Deep-Fried Stuffed Bun

(油炸包子**)**

Synopsis

This is a world of totems.

Here, people believe that power is derived naturally from all of nature: fire, rock, slimes, wolves, the Twelve-Winged Golden-Eyed Dragon King, even going so far as saying that humans themselves... as long as they are naturally formed, can communicate with this power and summon it as their own “faith totem”.

Jiang Nan, an anatomy professor on earth, the kind of unfortunate man who doesn’t even deserve to find a woman in his life, has come to this world.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ceruleonice @ Ceruleonice Translations

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 01: My Name Is Professor

Chapter 001: Twenty-Seven Seconds, You Deserve To Be Incapable Of Finding A Girlfriend!

Early morning, Paris Medical University, Human Anatomy Class.

“Protest, we must protest! The administrative office actually arranged a twenty-six year old professor for us. This is an insult to us!”

On the platform, an old man with two patches of graying hair on either side of his head shouted animatedly as he waved his arms.

This old man’s name was Dandy , and he was the headmaster of a third-rate medical university, as well as a famous scholar of human anatomy.

(TL note: Dandy (dān dí) - I don’t even knowww; diminutive of the name Andrew)

Not long ago, Dandy had received an invitation from the Paris Medical University. On it, it read, “Headmaster Dandy, in the past few years, upon looking over the field of human anatomy, I’ve had a breakthrough in research. As such, I have specially established a class for advanced studies. If you are interested, please inform me by December 1st!”

Dandy was a bit displeased. To let a headmaster go and become a student, wasn’t this just bullying people?

However, Paris Medical University was the world's best among first-rate medical institutions, and they were especially known for their academic program on human anatomy. Dandy felt that if he didn't go, wouldn't his fellow colleagues and peers of the same field think him unreasonable? Would the professors at Paris Medical University consider it as him not giving them face?

Following this train of thought, Dandy ultimately attended with extreme reluctance!

But then, when he went into the classroom, once Dandy saw the identities of all his other classmates, the grumpiness in his heart immediately vanished into thin air, and he instead got excited to the point that he couldn't contain himself!

God, this advanced studies class only has thirty-six students: thirty-six people, twenty of them chairmen, twelve of them headmasters, three of them that enjoyed the reputation of an international anatomic authority, and the final one was amazingly the recipient of last year's Nobel Prize in medical physiology!

This classroom was clearly only for the expert scholars and specialists to study!

To be able to become a classmate with so many prominent and distinguished people… face, face!

"Greetings, fellow students!"

Right at this moment, Dandy heard a voice resonate through the air, and lifting his head, he saw that it came from two educational assistants that walked in.

One assistant pushed a portable dissection table, and on it was placed two adult male cadavers. “Fellow students, this is anatomic subject we will be using for this class. Please pay close attention: this one is a thirty-six year old who died in a traffic accident, while the other is a twenty-eight year old who died from swine flu…”

The other assistant carried a stack of blue-bound booklets and handed it out one by one, “Fellow students, within this blue-bound booklet is a brief introduction of the professors for this term’s advanced studies class. To better learn the curriculum, we ask that all esteemed guests read it thoroughly and understand your instructors in advance…”

The main show has begun!

To be qualified to teach so many scholarly authorities and experts, exactly what kind of person was this new instructor?

Dandy was incomparably curious, and reverently opened the blue-bound booklet to the first page…

“This term’s advanced studies class instructor, Head Professor You Jiang Nan: Jiang Nan, Chinese nationality, twenty-six years old…”

Reading up to here, Dandy's expression changed, "What is the meaning of this? The educational administrative office actually arranged for a twenty-six year old instructor? Could it be that they have no knowledge of our identity? We're professors, chairmen, headmasters, and one of us is even a Nobel Prize winner!"

"This is ridiculous, absurd! I'm already sixty-eight years old this year. I definitely cannot accept a twenty-six year old instructor!"

Another expert also stood up, and with a "bang" that booklet slammed onto the floor. "What kind of medical accomplishments can a youth of twenty-six years achieve? How much ability could he have to educate us?! Absurd, too absurd!"

Other self-confident experts, although they didn't voice their objections, also revealed extremely unsightly expressions!

When Dandy saw that his voice of protest had unexpectedly lead a group of seven or eight other experts to echo him, he immediately grew hot-blooded and rushed onto the rostrum, "Fellow scholars, fellow seniors, originally I didn't even have the qualifications to address you. But this time, the educational administrative office has truly gone too far! We must raise a protest! Furthermore, we should also send a proposal to the educational administrative office to make this Professor Jiang Nan youth to beat it! Who's with me?"

"I'm in!"

“Count me in as well! Ai, this is simply too outrageous!”

The atmosphere in the classroom immediately reached a boiling point, and the two assistants exchanged a glance and laughed bitterly, “What should we do? Based on the identities of these long-time specialists, they are completely qualified to raise a protest, and are also completely qualified to drive this Professor Jiang Nan out…”

“What can we even do? I’m going to go look for Professor Jiang!”

One assistant already felt that the circumstances were already out of his control, and stealthily slipped out of the classroom.

However, right as he went out the door, he saw a glasses-wearing youth leaning against the wall, on one hand gently cleaning a cane, and on the other calmly laughing…

“Professor Jiang, you, you’ve already arrived?”

*addressing in a more formal, respectful manner

God, since you actually came, why didn’t you go in? The assistant hastily said: “Professor Jiang, hurry up and go in to take a look. The mood of those scholarly experts is already…”

“Calm down, calm down!”

The youth continued to clean the cane. Only until there wasn't even a speck of dust left did he take his sweet time to reach the classroom entrance, "Alright, I'll go settle them down."

The assistant sighed and anxiously said: "Professor Jiang, be extra careful. The identity of these long-time specialists are in no way similar to those commonly seen. Don't offend them by any means..."

The youth was already about to push the door open, but turned and laughed at the assistant's words, "Mister, do you know why?"

"Huh?"

"Why I can become a professor at just twenty-six years old, while you, who are already thirty-two years old is still only an assistant?"

(*formal)

"This... please advise me."

"Because in my perspective, those so-called specialists and authorities are meant to be offended, are meant to be surpassed, are meant to be conquered! Do you understand now?"

.....

"Esteemed seniors, good morning!"

Jiang Nan pushed open the classroom door, walked onto the rostrum and spread his arms wide, “Let me give a brief introduction of myself, Jiang Nan. You may call me Professor Jiang, or Teacher Jiang!”

In that split second, the whole classroom went silent.

The specialists all measured this ‘Jiang Nan’ with suspicion, thinking, THIS is Jiang Nan? What refined and elegant bearing, what a perfect smile…

However, no matter how good his outward appearance, it did not hide the fact that he was only twenty-six years old!

Jiang Nan must be driven out!

Jiang Nan measured and took into consideration all the expressions of the specialists before him. Without even giving them a chance to speak, he used his cane and waved it at his ear, “Alright. Everyone’s identities, everyone’s dissatisfactions, I’ve already heard it from the outside! Esteemed elders, you believe… that I am not capable of educating you all, is that correct?”

(*就用手杖拨了拨自己的耳朵 raw because I’m unsure, but I’m assuming he’s signalling them to be quiet because he’s already heard enough)

The specialists shared mutual glances between themselves, and finally Dandy stood up, “Correct, we believe that you don’t have

the qualifications to educate us!”

“But, my qualifications, my capabilities... just because you’ve assumed so... does it mean it’s correct?”

Dandy was stumped.

“Alright. Esteemed elders, I will give you all an opportunity, an opportunity to authenticate my capabilities: this class’ originally planned curriculum is canceled. Within the period of one class, just within the anatomy category, you all may challenge any aspect of my abilities! If I fail, then you all won’t have to send a proposal to the administrative office. I will take the initiative to leave. But, if within your group none of you can prevail over me...”

Jiang Nan shook his head and laughed, no longer continuing to speak further, but those scholarly experts were able to understand the implied meaning, “If even your assembled group of thirty-six of the world’s most outstanding anatomy experts still can’t prevail over me, then please willingly and genuinely attend class, and sincerely call me... Teacher Jiang!”

Jiang Nan just sat beside the cadavers, “Right now, who wishes to be the first to challenge me?”

The scholarly experts suddenly began to hesitate. It’s not that they were afraid of losing, but based on their identity and status, to go and challenge a twenty-six year old youth...

Was shameful!

After a long while, Dandy hastily put himself out in front of all the other experts, striding to stand before the dissecting platform, “This youngster who doesn’t know how high the heavens are and how profound the earth is, I, Headmaster Dandy of Sofia Medical University, have come to give you a lesson!”

Jiang Nan chuckled, saying: “Elder, what aspect of my ability do you wish to challenge?”

“As everybody knows, the speed at which one dissects a cadaver symbolizes the degree of understand an anatomy specialist has towards the structure of the human body. More importantly, it indicates the standard of anatomical experts. Jiang Nan, I will compete in dissection speed with you!”

Dandy grabbed a scalpel from the platform and took out a stopwatch, declaring arrogantly: “I don’t know how long you need to completely dissect a cadaver, but I only need three minutes! Jiang Nan, do you dare to compete with me?”

“I’ve already said, I will accept any kind of challenge.” Jiang Nan shrugged.

“Alright, then I’ll start timing now!”

Dandy used one hand to start the stopwatch to time it by seconds and brandished the scalpel with the other. Like lightning, he used

the scalpel and pierced into the chest area of the cadaver!

The eyes of the rest of the specialists all revealed a sort of excitement!

Completely dissecting a cadaver wasn't just an average person's understanding of 'cutting a corpse to pieces', as if 'killing a pig then skinning and deboning it' only.

A fully intact human body consisted of tens of complicated groupings and systems——the heart, the brain, the skeleton... Only by removing these organs and body parts and categorizing them into groups on the dissecting platform, while making sure that each individual organ was a single entity within the group, would this be considered a 'complete dissection'!

Dandy's boasting of only having to take three minutes, if he didn't lie, then his understanding of the human body structure had already reached the level of 'knowing it like the back of his hand'. As such, he would have no qualms in identifying himself as a 'scholarly authority' in regards to anatomy!

Jiang Nan faintly chuckled as he observed Dandy's dissecting technique, then suddenly asked: "Elder, if my dissecting speed is slower than yours, then I'll naturally excuse myself. But... what if yours is slower than mine?"

Dandy momentarily blanked out, then snorted: "If I'm slower than you, then from this day forward, no matter where I am or what situation I am in, I will refer to you as 'honored teacher'!"

Jiang Nan laughed in satisfaction and moved to one side of the other cadaver, slowly extending out his cane...

Click! The cane split apart, and a set of master craftsman dissecting tools unexpectedly appeared!

“Good heavens, this is...”

The experts stood dumbstruck, and some even leaked expressions of greed. To an anatomy specialist, this cane was an absolutely priceless treasure!

“Esteemed elders, although the person who gifted this cane to me stated that this cane was supposedly constructed from a meteorite fallen from the heavens and conceals seventy-two different types of dissecting tools, and is truly marvelous beyond compare, can you all temporarily forget its quality please? That is because... I am about to begin dissecting!”

Jiang Nan attracted everyone’s gazes, then beamed as he looked at Dandy, “This esteemed elder said that he only needed three minutes to completely dissect a cadaver, which is very good. I am very content to fulfill the role of his instructor. But... to completely dissect a cadaver, I only need twenty-seven seconds!”

Only twenty-seven seconds to perform a complete dissection?!

The specialists exploded into an uproar, “Preposterous, this is

absolutely impossible!”

“You all think it is ludicrous, impossible? But I only want to say this——that none of you understand doesn’t mean that it doesn’t exist!”

Suddenly, Jiang Nan lightly flicked his cane, and an exquisitely sharp scalpel jumped into the palm of his hand as he spun and pierced it into the cadaver’s throat!

“Esteemed elders, how many of China’s historical anecdotes do you know and understand? Have you heard of a story by the name of ‘Butcher Ding’s Bull Dismembering’?”

(*TL: Butcher Ding's Bull Dismembering - It’s a fable, but I can’t seem to find any English translation of it, and I’m much too lazy to translate it. Anyways, it’s basically equivalent to skilled and magical craftsmanship, and being able to control your hand any way you want and understanding the object of craftsmanship to an unimaginable level.)

As he dissected, Jiang Nan also fixed his gaze on the group of scholarly authorities, his sudden words seeming as though they had no relevance.

One specialist muttered: “It’s a really famous story. It was said that Butcher Ding was able to dismember an ox in just ten some seconds.”

“If you take the concept of ‘Butcher Ding’s Bull Dismembering’ and apply it to dissecting a human body, could one completely dismember a human body?”

The specialist was stunned, “Could it be… that you are capable of Butcher Ding’s technique?!”

Jiang Nan laughed and didn’t answer him, “I’ll ask you another question, have you all heard of ‘interlocking blade’?”

“Nonsense! Interlocking blade is the fast dissecting technique in Western anatomy, of course we know! However, the interlocking blade technique has been long since lost in transmission!”

“Who said it’s been long lost?” Jiang Nan’s voice suddenly boomed!

“Butcher Ding’s technique, I’m capable of it! The Western interlock blade technique, I’m also capable of! Furthermore, by fusing these two techniques together, I’ve even developed my own dissecting method! I’ve named this method, ‘Golden Inch Blade’! Chinese people say that an inch of time is worth an inch of gold… in other words, golden inch blade means that in dissecting cadavers, I’m always efficient and economical with my time…”

Only after Jiang Nan threw away his scalpel and beamed as he pointed at the cadaver did the specialists shockingly discover that the cadaver in front of Jiang Nan… had already been completely dissected!

Only twenty-seven seconds to completely dissect a corpse!

Almost at the same time, Dandy had completed his dissection as well...

And on his face was a blank expression. Yes, he and Jiang Nan had finished dissecting at the same time, but Jiang Nan had only begun dissecting after giving him two minutes and thirty-three seconds! Furthermore, Jiang Nan had simultaneously dissected and gazed at the specialists as he conversed with them, not even sparing a glance for the cadaver below the scalpel, so how much time did this waste?!

Just twenty-seven seconds to completely dissect a corpse!

This clearly implied that based on Jiang Nan's comprehension of the human body structure, he already stood at the peak of humanity's medical field, and absolutely had the ability to teach any scholarly authority!

"Honored... Honored teacher!" Dandy addressed him with extreme difficulty as he stated in the bet.

However, Jiang Nan instead went to the behind the rostrum, "Esteemed elder, I can't accept this title of honored teacher. Human anatomy is a deep and profound branch of study. Just by contesting in dissecting speed doesn't mean that you are not equal to me. From now on, if you could please use your experience to aid me in fulfilling this academic term's curriculum? As for our bet... How about just think of it as a bit of humor!"

(*more formal/respectful way of address)

The specialists broke out in thunderous applause. Such a humble youth! Triumphing over another, yet still preserving so much face for the other person. What fault could be found with this kind of instructor?!

Dandy, on the other hand...

Jiang Nan looked towards the scarlet-faced Dandy and snickered in his heart, thanks for serving as the backdrop for my glory! “Right now, are there any others who doubt my ability? Are there any others... who wish to take my place as instructor?”

The classroom was full of absolute silence.

.....

Towards evening, it started to snow heavily from the sky, adorning this famously romantic capital with a thick blanket of silver.

It hardly ever snowed in this temperate, ocean breeze filled Paris, much less snow heavily. As such, the vehicles on the road didn’t neglect to make their preparations, and they all began to slow down and drive cautiously, afraid that they might hit a pedestrian on the side of the road.

Jiang Nan had already concluded one day of the academic

program, and carrying his cane, he stood before the entrance of a coffee shop.

At this moment, he was completely different from the way he was in the classroom. Rather than being an energetic, driven young man, he was unsure of himself, ill at ease, and bewildered, as if he was an extremely inexperienced and shy large boy!

Every family has its problems, and Jiang Nan was no exception. In all of his twenty-six years of life, he had only one huge regret in his heart...

He was like any other man, and thirsted for love, longing to have a young and innocent girlfriend.

But...

In his twenty-six years of life, he had confessed his love to eight women, and was rejected by all these eight woman in a row!

A twenty-six year old medical professor, annual salary of hundreds of thousands, and handsome, actually couldn't find a girlfriend for himself. If this was spoken out loud, would anyone believe it?

Jiang Nan also didn't quite believe it, but in reality, not only did he never have a girlfriend, he was still a virgin!

In order to say goodbye to his single life, he had just arranged to

meet a with beautiful woman at a coffee shop: he determined that during this date, he would take a chance and confess his love.

He hoped that on his ninth confession, he would be able bid farewell to his single life!

As snow slowly drifted through the air, Jiang Nan pushed open the door to the coffee shop.

The cafe was very peaceful, and seven or eight couples sat opposite each other as they each whispered to each other. However, from time to time, a man would cast a glance towards the coffee table overlooking the window.

There sat a beautiful and fashionable woman, and her every movement and action stole the spotlight of all the women within the room!

She was the person Jiang Nan wanted to confess to.

Once she saw him enter the shop, the woman stood and called out to him with familiarity, “Jiang Nan, long time no see.”

“Don’t say anything, don’t ask anything. The reason I called you out today was just so I could ask you a question——you, can you be my girlfriend?”

Jiang Nan took a deep breath and said as he closed his eyes.

Too direct? The woman stared blankly, “This…”

Jiang Nan stealthily opened his eyes to dart a glance at the woman, then swiftly closed them again.

The seconds ticked by, and finally, the woman laughed, “I’m sorry, I don’t think we are suited to each other. We…can we still be ordinary friends?”

Ai, rejected again! Jiang Nan spoke stiffly and formally: “Why not? Is it because I’m not good enough?”

“No, you’re outstanding enough. In regards to outer appearance, there is nothing to criticize, and in terms of financial situation, you’re earning ten or so times more than me. As for education…”

“Then why would you still reject me?!”

He felt thwarted, and could no longer control his perfectly flawless smile, instead hastily interrupting her and bluntly staring at her!

The woman was a bit indignant at his staring, “Are you forcing me to speak the truth? Fine, I’ll tell you. It’s because I can’t accept your field of specialty!”

“My specialty?”

“Yes, your specialty, human anatomy! I can’t imagine accepting a boyfriend who’s a human anatomy specialist in any situation——these two hands of yours, everyday they touch numerous corpses, dig out numerous organs dripping with blood, yet late at night, you’re still going to caress my body with those hands? Furthermore, I don’t want to imagine that you, a passionate anatomist, will hoard various organs of different people, and every morning while I’m in the kitchen cooking soup for you, I won’t be able to help but think——God, just several feet below me are countless organs steeping in formalin, and even being preserved… I apologize, I got a bit emotional. But I’m speaking honestly——Jiang Nan, it’s natural for you to have a passion towards anatomy, but this only makes me feel repulsed. In fact, it makes me feel like no longer having any relationship with you! This is the reason why I’m refusing!”

After she was finished speaking, the woman stared at Jiang Nan with an icy expression, not flinching the slightest bit!

After a long while, Jiang Nan pushed up his golden-rimmed spectacles, and resuming that so-called perfect smile, he answered, “I understand now. Goodbye!”

His tone was a bit agonized…

The woman immediately walked off without hesitation, but after a few seconds, she suddenly stopped and returned. With a ‘bam’, she slapped down several crisp, green bills to Jiang Nan!

His eyebrows furrowed, then he used his hand to push back the money, “What’s wrong? You think I can’t settle the bill?”

“No, it’s not that I think you can’t settle the bill. I only wish to abide by my words——I don’t wish to have any sort of relationship with you, even being treated to a cup of coffee is unacceptable!”

At this, the woman turned and charged into the freezing, snowy world without a second glance. And Jiang Nan just sat there by himself, a cane for anatomy that was even more lonely than himself accompanying him…

This was his ninth rejection now!

……

There was once a person who jokingly said, men who study anatomy are unlucky fellows who ‘deserve to be incapable of finding a girlfriend’.

To Jiang Nan, this phrase was the truth…

In the twenty-six years of his life, he had confessed eight times ——excuse me, nine times, yet he had been rejected a whole nine times!

Everytime, the reason for the rejection was frighteningly similar, “Jiang Nan, I’m sorry, I really can’t accept your specialty, that nauseating human anatomy!”

“Jiang Nan, you’re a disgusting bastard. Don’t even think about letting me see you again!”

“I beg you, just forget about me, it’s impossible for there to be love between us…”

Reaching this bone-chilling conclusion, Jiang Nan’s heart was extremely unreconciled, “Why, why aren’t there any women who are willing to accept human anatomy! Why, why aren’t there any women who will love the me as a human anatomist?!”

It’s not that he hadn’t thought about giving up human anatomy for a perfect love… but, could he truly do so? If he didn’t have any true love towards human anatomy, could he have achieved the accomplishments he had today?

Anatomy, cadavers, he couldn’t bear to part with these two things, couldn’t cut them off!

Even if he was facing an unmatched beauty!

Jiang Nan had a whirlwind of thoughts in his mind…

Suddenly, honk honk! A piercing horn resounded through the air behind him!

Turning around to look, it turns out that a sports car had lost

control on the frozen road, and through the windshield, one could see that the driver's face was full of alarm and panic. She thought that she had alerted Jiang Nan for quite a while, but his heart was no longer there and he failed to notice.

Bam! Jiang Nan's eyes went wide as he watched himself get shot into the air, and as he floated at death's door, his heart flooded with regret and unreconciliation!

"I bitterly studied anatomy for twenty-some years, and now, I can say the purpose of every single muscle as if listing my family's valuables; I can completely dissect a human body in twenty-seven seconds; even, even completely assemble the human body from a pile of fragmented organs within three minutes... yes, these abilities have brought me success and recognition, won me the title of genius of the anatomy world, the number one researcher of the human body! But, they have also gotten me rejected nine times, made me deserve to be unable of finding a girlfriend!"

Jiang Nan's body slammed onto the icy road, and in the last moments of his life, he used his hand to adjust his golden-rimmed spectacles and settled himself in an extremely elegant dying posture, and then... he laughed self-deprecatingly.

(TL: those priorities doh. but dying in style)

"Alright, alright! What use is there in being able to completely dissect a body in twenty-seven seconds? F*** me, I'm an unlucky guy who deserves to be incapable of finding a girlfriend!"

Jiang Nan slowly closed his eyes, so he didn't see that right at the

moment of death...

The cane he had been tightly gripping in his hand had disappeared!

Chapter 002: Big Talk Of Yulianne

“Gentlemen, would you like to have the continent’s most beautiful woman accompany you for a spring night every night? Would you like to bewitch the moon with one blade, and possess the exceptional power to fell a thousand-troop army in one stroke? Do you wish to have an endless and inexhaustible amount of authority and wealth?”

……

Evening, Yuanzhi Continent, on a street of Sun City.

An obese old man dressed in a robe stood on a flight of stairs, fiddling with his beard and speaking softly as he said these phrases full of attraction and enticement.

This old man was a wandering minstrel, and he was currently in the middle of making money through singing stories which spoke about a number of young heroes that shook the continent.

And the phrases he had just said signified the beginning of another tale.

A number of leisurely passerby’s surrounded him, and one particularly knowledgeable passerby immediately began applauding when he heard the minstrel’s opening phrases, “Old sir, could it be that the story you are about to sing next is about the continent’s number one beauty—the story of Yulianne?

The old man lifted high a forgotten container for his profits and loftily said, “Correct, it certainly is the story of Yulianne!”

Many people within the crowd immediately revealed impatient expressions, “Che, the name of Yulianne has already shaken the continent, and we’ve long since heard her story to the point that we’re sick of it. Change to a new one!”

“Exactly! If you asked me to tell you the name of my grandmother, I probably wouldn’t know, but if you asked me who the most beautiful person on the continent is, then I would immediately be able to tell you—Yulianne!”

(TL: arrogant form 老子)

“Don’t you have any other new stories? If you don’t, then just come down, haha!”

Several scum people began jeering, trying to force this old man down.

But the old man wasn’t panicked in the slightest bit, and lazily sighed, “Indeed, Yulianne’s beauty is truly too famous. Whenever someone mentions her, the first thing people in the world think of is always her soul-ensnaring, star-like eyes; it’s always that graceful stream of long raven hair, always that smile capable of tearing down cities and nations… You all have long since gotten fed up with hearing this, and I’m also tired of saying it, so!”

The subject suddenly changed, “So I won’t talk about Yulianne’s appearance today. What I will speak of is Yulianne’s… blade!”

“Yulianne’s blade?” Hearing this, the crowd quieted, “Could it be that Yulianne was also a warrior that used blades?”

The old man didn’t answer, and instead gazed loftily at the twilight that followed the setting sun, then with a voice thick with passion, he began to speak, “Three years ago during late autumn, the Beastman King of the Great Plains, whose name was Abrund (阿布伦多 ā bù lún duō), and was also known as the ‘Golden Lion’, led a force of one million through Jiangnan in an attempt to forcefully level our Rheim Empire!”

(*TL: Okay, take my name choosing with a grain of salt but these are definitely supposed to have English counterparts. If you have a better suggestion, feel free to let me know. Other than that, I’m just doing some guess work…)

“Our king gathered soldiers to contend head-on with their forces, but they were continuously defeated. Within a fortnight, Abrund had seized seventeen of our military’s strategic towns, and nearly ten thousand *li of our country’s territory had been taken over. For a period of time, our king fell ill from grief, and nearly went into exile quite a number of times, but made a comeback…”

“**我王起兵迎**战，**但**连战连败，**半月内**，**阿布**伦**多**连**克我国一十七座**军事重镇，**万里国土**沦**陷**，**一**时**我王悲愤成疾**，**几欲流亡海外**，**以**图东**山再起……**”

(1 li 里 = 500 meters; idiom:东山再起 = literally to return to office after living as a hermit on Mt. Dongshan; TL: okay I’m not sure about this paragraph so I’m leaving the raws above)

“But who would’ve thought that Abrund’s forces had advanced with such lightning speed that they had already besieged our nation’s capital. Although our king really wished to leave, he couldn’t anymore!” The old man stamped his foot hatefully on the ground, when his tone suddenly underwent a complete change, “But it was just at this moment that a note suddenly appeared on Abrund’s table, and on it were characters dating back to the Milky Way Era, a paragraph of ancient lettering…”

Then the old man tilted his head and stared into the distance towards the unending billows of green mountains and hills, his tone extremely artful, yet overflowing with killing intent.

“The great king leads his force of one million through Jiangnan, a mighty army capable of stemming the current, their might vast and mighty, yet unequal to the ambition of the heart! But on the night of the full moon, once the head of the great king is taken, to drink together with the moon, isn’t it beautiful?”

“闻君率百万大军渡江南来，投鞭断流，军威浩荡，不胜心向往之！月圆之夜，当借君首级一用，邀月对酌，岂不美哉？”

(TL: not sure about this one at allllllll, but context clues guys, read the following dialogues)

The people on the street gawked in astonishment: “Could it be that this note was written by Yulianne?”

“Exactly. Yulianne couldn’t bear to see the destruction of the empire, nor stand to see humanity fall under the oppression of the beastmen race, so she purposefully wrote a note to Abrund, requesting him to take his forces and return to the Great Plains. But what kind of character was Abrund? He was the king of

beastmen, the bravest within the Great Plains and for miles around! Would a simple note be able to frighten him?”

The old man answered his own question, “Abrund’s response was... immediate orders to besiege the city and do an all-round attack! That night, it happened that an autumn wind was blowing, scattering the leaves throughout the air, and the massive force of beastmen marched in formation, drawing nearer step by step...”

“But just at this moment, the city gates opened! Dressed in pure white with a silver mask covering her face, Yulianne slowly strode before the army of beastmen and said in a light voice, ‘Withdraw, or die?’”

“Abrund laughed heartily, ‘Just relying on yourself, you wish to obstruct my force of a million men?!’”

“As his tone fell, a silver light flashed, and holding Abrund’s head, Yulianne turned to the rest of the beastmen forces and said in a light voice, ‘Withdraw, or die?’”

“Both sides possessed a million-man force, one thousand generals, and there were several tens of peak experts, yet not a single one of them... had seen Yulianne’s blade clearly! This is what was called: bewitching the moon with one blade, felling a thousand-troop army in one stroke!”

Clink, clank~ the people in the crowd threw out copper coins one after another, the greatest praise and encouragement for a story.

After reaping his rewards, the old man began speaking with even greater enthusiasm, “Abrund was killed, and the beastmen army naturally crumbled from within, so Yulianne swiftly stole away. The following two years, the people talked about Yulianne’s legend nonstop. Within those two years, she had consecutively defeated thirty-four blade experts, thoroughly establishing herself in the continent as the owner of the fastest blade. Even government authorities acknowledged her strength, and if Yulianne was considered second-place, no other would dare to call themself first! But following the rise of her prominent reputation, people began to discover a strange thing: Yulianne always wore a silver mask on her face year-round, and never revealed her true face to anyone… Why was this? People grew ever more curious, and numerous rumors began spreading until finally, people believed one explanation—Yulianne’s blade method was godly, but her appearance was hideous, so she… didn’t have any face to see other people!”

After speaking up until here, the old man suddenly halted, building their appetite in suspense, “Tell me, how do you think Yulianne responded to these people?”

The old man’s laughter rang through the air, “Last year, the eastern region of the continent held a beauty pageant to decide the East’s ten most beautiful women. However, right before the night of the awards ceremony, Yulianne privately found these ten women, and pulled off her mask right in front of them, laughing as she glanced at them and left… The second day, the ten beauty contestants declined to attend, declaring that they had no qualifications to receive any reward. They said… as long as Yulianne existed, the title of beauty would never turn to them!”

At this point in time, the sun had nearly set in the west, casting a long shadow from the old man's figure, "From then on, Yulianne's title as the number one beauty traveled throughout the whole world, and people could count it as an honor to have seen her beauty. But here's a bit of tantalizing news. At the beginning of this year, when the name of Yulianne had reached the peak of fame, she suddenly made yet another decision that had people thinking her outrageous..."

Reaching the climax, the old man suddenly shut his mouth, his eyes brimming with mystery as he looked at each and every one of the crowd's anxious faces.

"What happened?!" He listened to the crowd's angry shouts and pleas, "Dammit, you'd better hurry up and tell us!"

The old man began roaring with laughter, his manner of speaking so astonishing that even he didn't quite believe himself: "Yulianne withdrew from the Knight's Union to become a chef skilled with the knife!"

"Huh?!"

"Furthermore, Yulianne even said that if anyone's blade speed could surpass her's... Hehe, if it was a woman, then Yulianne would help her do any one thing as long as it didn't go beyond the line of morality."

"What if it was a man?!" the crowd asked frenziedly.

“If it was a man, Yulianne would bring her wealth, which was comparable with a country’s vast wealth, bring that blade of her’s which could bewitch the moon, bring her strength which could fell an army with one stroke, bring that top-notch, absolute beauty of hers… and marry him!”

Hearing this, the crowd suddenly went silent…

After a long while, one listener in the crowd suddenly leaped up, strong and burly, “Look at me, I am also a chef skilled with the knife, so I’m going to look for Yulianne and compete with her!”

(*TL: arrogant pronoun)

“Mister, don’t invite hate onto yourself! You’re not the only one who wishes to take Yulianne as a wife. But… who’s knife work do you think can trump the owner of the fastest blade in this world?”

The chef’s face went scarlet as he retorted, “My blade is able to dismember an entire ox within half an hour!”

(*My = arrogant way of referring to himself)

The old man nearly cried from laughter, “To dismember an ox, Yulianne only needs twenty-seven seconds!”

“Gentlemen, if you want to wed Yulianne, first learn that supernatural twenty-seven second blade method and then talk!”

The old man ending his story with this warning, then gathered his copper coins together and went into a tavern.

Those who had wanted to express their intent chattered and discussed with one another, “Only twenty-seven seconds to dismember a whole ox, is Yulianne still human?”

“Ai, if I could have Yulianne as a wife, my whole life would have meaning, but dammit… This blade of mine isn’t fast enough!”

(*arrogant pronoun)

At this moment, within the crowd, a youth of average stature and good proportions dressed in shabby clothes quirked his mouth and said disdainfully: “Rodi (罗迪 luó dí), do you know? This old fellow is definitely spewing crap. Twenty-seven seconds to dismember an ox, f***, how could such a quick blade method possibly exist?”

“Just because you don’t understand doesn’t mean it doesn’t exist!”

A youth of fifteen or sixteen years stood beside him, shaking his head as he said this.

This youth was likewise dressed in shabby clothes and also well proportioned. But what was different was that his height was a bit above average and his appearance was handsome, not to mention that he had striking, light silver hair.

His disposition was also distinct from the rest of the crowd, and one could faintly see a sort of obstinacy and haughtiness and a bit of an air of one who would always lecture others. Rather than a

fifteen or sixteen year old youth, he seemed more like a weathered and experienced man who'd suffered tribulation, like a mature man who was about to turn thirty.

"I don't understand, but don't tell me YOU understand?"

The thin and frail youth who had just been mocked grabbed Rodi by the collar and said in a loud voice: "Can it be that you've seen the blade method that can dismember an ox in twenty-seven seconds?"

Pointing at his nose, Rodi answered, "If I told you I've seen it, and can even perform it, would you believe me?"

"I believe, believe that you're an idiot!" The youth guffawed, "If you truly know this blade method, then why haven't you gone to go compare with Yulianne? Don't tell me that you have no interest in the continent's number one beauty."

Rodi just laughed but didn't answer. Dismembering an ox in twenty-seven seconds, he really could perform this blade method, and could even do it faster! But... he truly had no interest in the continent's number one beauty!

The continent's most beautiful person was also a woman. As long as one was a woman, none of them would love him!

Because he loved to dig out hearts dripping with blood!

Because he enjoyed dissecting human bodies into organ systems!

Because he couldn't bear to part with corpses and dissecting, because he was an unfortunate guy that deserved to be incapable of finding a girlfriend!

Rodi, former name, 'Jiang Nan'...

Chapter 003: From Heaven To Hell

Jiang Nan didn't know what happened, but all he remembered was that after the car accident, he opened his eyes to an unfamiliar world.

He had reincarnated, and taken over a white youth's body named Rodi.

And this world was called Yuanzhi Continent. Here, there was no so-called magic, battle qi, nor any mythological beasts; here, people believed that power stemmed from natural living things, and developed a type of mysterious power called 'totem'. Here, totem masters were the top of the top, and they possessed unparalleled status. Here...

Enough!

Did this whole mess even have any relation with Jiang Nan?

Jiang Nan was only a slave!

More accurately, the body of Rodi which Jiang Nan occupied belonged to Count West, his master, and he was only a pig herder on West farms.

Every morning before it was even light, he would be lashed awake, then cut the grass, feed the pigs, clean the pig pen... He was always bustling, and only late at night would he rest and take his

meal, but this was his only meal. There would only be two pieces of charred steamed bread, and a big pot of barely seasoned wild herb soup.

If any pigs gave birth, the master and his household definitely wouldn't sleep, so Jiang Nan had to accompany them until dawn. If any of the fat pigs caught illness or lost some weight, Jiang Nan would receive twenty lashes of the whip as punishment...

This was the only thing Jiang Nan could imagine for his entire life! Totems... totem masters... was a slave even qualified to think of such things?

It's not that Jiang Nan had never rebelled, but once, when he had only uttered two phrases of complaint, he was taken by the farm overseers and hung up and whipped thirty times. He just narrowly avoided being whipped to death.

He had also thought about running away, but this was the world of totems, and on his shoulder was a mysterious mark that would allow those mysterious totem masters to catch him and bring him back even if he ran until the ends of the earth. Then... it would be a whipping until he could only spasm lifelessly, to serve as an example to those who wished to run away as well!

Eventually, Jiang Nan began to accept his fate as a slave...

From an anatomy professor of great standing and prestige, he had degraded into slave caretaker of pigs. Jiang Nan believed that the goddess of fate had played an insane joke on him!

Oh, I apologize, Yuanzhi Continent had no goddess of fate.

Rather, as long as nature and all living things persisted, there was a reason for everything. It could be that Jiang Nan was so frustrated because he had done something he shouldn't have done in the past world.

……

"Mr. Tom, do you still remember what we came into town to do? Look at the time!"

Jiang Nan took the cane hanging at his belt and lightly knocked it against Tom's head.

That youth who had mocked Jiang Nan was named Tom, and was also a slave who took care of the pigs. Both of them had went into the city to purchase some pigs, but took advantage of the opportunity to be a bit lazy and listen to the story of Yulianne.

"Don't you know? We came to buy pigs… Aiya, not good, not good. We only thought about listening to the story. Don't you know? If we don't get those pigs before nightfall, the overseer's going to beat us to death!"

Tom always like to say the phrase 'don't you know' because his family had been slaves for seven generations. As such, he had considerably more experience than other slaves, giving him an air

of superiority.

“Calm down, I counted the time. We can still make it if we leave right now.”

After Tom put away his cane, the two people disappeared from the streets of Sun City.

What was weird was that the cane which was made from other worldly material and hid seventy-two types of dissecting instruments actually came along with him into this world, and Jiang Nan couldn’t figure out why. However, carrying this cane made him feel in his spirit as though something had been entrusted to him, and this gave him a sort of security in his heart.

As such, Jiang Nan used mud, grease, and rotten leaves to muddy the cane, allowing it to look as if it had just been thrown on the street like something nobody wanted or cared for... a rod for sifting through manure!

Not long after the two men began walking, the crowd on the street still hadn’t dissipated, and they were still discussing the matter of Yulianne.

At this moment, that obese minstrel who was sitting in the tavern stuck his head out of the window. Seeing that there was still a crowd, he gleefully said: “This old man’s story has already been told, yet you’re still not scattering? Could it be that you guys wish for me to tell another?”

Nobody acknowledge the old geezer.

“These ungrateful wretches, have you forgotten who told you the story?”

Indignant, he leaped onto the dais and cleared his throat, shouting: “Ladies and gentlemen, if any of you want to hear about Yulianne, then turn your heads this way and look at me! This old man knows something big, something good!”

Something good? A number of passerby’s turned their heads out of curiosity.

The old man’s head bobbed as he laughed, when his face suddenly straightened and he said in a serious voice: “Within a month, Yulianne will appear in Sun City!”

“What?!”

All the gazes of the crowd again fixed onto the old man, and one said in pleasant surprise: “Old mister, aren’t you deceiving us? Would Yulianne come to a place like this?”

“Within one month, if Yulianne hasn’t come, then this old man will jump down from here!”

The old man’s voice was incredibly captivating as he spoke resolutely, “Gentlemen, would you like to have the continent’s most beautiful woman accompany you for a spring night every

night? Would you like to bewitch the moon with one blade, and possess the exceptional power to fell a thousand-troop army in one stroke? Do you wish to have an endless and inexhaustible amount of authority and wealth... your blade method only needs to be faster than Yulianne!”

.....

Sun City was simply a town of around thirteen to fourteen thousand people located in the midst of a mountain range, encircled by golden yellow soil.

This soil was so valuable because the amount of crops produced when planted in this soul would be twenty-some times more than normal, and was thus called ‘golden soil’.

Count West’s farm was situated on top of the golden soil, and took up around 2,900 mu. The farm possessed 4,800 slaves, and was the largest farm in the vicinity of Sun City.

Right as the sky grew dark, Jiang Nan and Tom promptly arrived back at the farm. At this time, that repulsive and despicable overseer, unknown if had drunk a lot or just took advantage of female slave, was in quite a good mood. After checking the live pigs, he waved his hand and said with a smile: “Your work isn’t bad. Go on, you guys can rest for the night.”

“Hurrah! Did you know? Caretaker, I’m grateful to death to you!”

Tom leapt up in excitement because to slaves, resting for a night was the most extravagant reward.

Jiang Nan, on the other hand, only nodded his head, then turned to leave.

“Rodi!”

The caretaker suddenly called after Jiang Nan, then mockingly said: “Tom can go rest, but not you! Miss ‘Weylin’ (维兰) is currently looking for you!”

Miss Weylin!

When he heard this name, Jiang Nan who had unflinchingly faced the provocation of tens of old-time experts and referred to them as things that should be conquered suddenly looked as if he had just swallowed seventy or eighty flies. Speechless, he just laughed bitterly.

Weylin was Count West’s younger sister, and could also be considered as Jiang Nan’s master.

Fairly speaking, Weylin was Sun City’s most beautiful woman, and had turned nineteen this year. She possessed a bust size that assaulted one’s visual senses to the limit, and had a body line as curved as the path of a roller coaster (TL: that description though.) Starting at age fifteen, she began to help the Count manage the farm, and was a lovely and remarkably capable woman.

However, while Weylin possessed a beautiful outward appearance, she had a considerably irritable temper that couldn't be worse. Whenever she spoke, it was so foul and biting unlike her age, and at the drop of hat, she would take out her whip and lash a person. It was exactly because of this temper that although she was already nineteen, she still hadn't been married off, and had become Sun City's infamous 'leftover spinster'.

And for some specific reasons that Jiang Nan didn't feel like saying aloud, Weylin always looked on him unfavorably, constantly searching for an opportunity to sort him out...

When Jiang Nan found Miss Weylin, she was in the middle of supervising the female slaves as they washed clothes by the creek that ran through the farmland. Seeing how Jiang Nan took his time walking over, she grew furious and roared: "Rodi, I had told you to arrive by the afternoon, and right now...

What time is it right now? Did you even take what I said to heart?!"

Jiang Nan silently uttered the next half of Weylin's speech because almost every time, she started berating him with the same opening. After that, she'd deliberately find something to nitpick on and make things hard for him. "Calm down, Miss Weylin. Haven't I come already? What instructions do you have for me?"

Weylin snorted, then pointed towards several baskets of laundry beside the creek, "Go, go wash the clothes! You, a lowly slave,

dares to have the audacity not to take my words to heart, so your punishment is to wash one hundred articles of clothing before dark. If you can't finish, then you'd damn well not think about sleeping!"

Before dark? F***, it was already 7:30 in the evening!

Jiang Nan wanted to say, "Honorable madam, do you not recall that for a period of time, even though it wasn't right, your mother at least dealt with my body reasonably?"

However, he did not let slip a single word, and diligently got to work washing the clothes.

If one was a slave, one must have the bearing of one!

Seeing that Jiang Nan actually began performing the labor of women, the female slaves began snickering. One of them even pointed at Jiang Nan's handsome face and mocked him, saying, "Rodi grew up to be so handsome, and even washes clothes for women. Teehee, it'd be great if master could just marry you off."

"Stop dreaming already. For handsome slaves as Rodi, they're generally gifted to the nobility who have lost their husband as a present..."

"You lowly slaves, what are you talking about?"

After hearing the slave girls' commentary, Weylin was fuming to

the point that she drew out the whip at her waist and ‘Pah!’, she lashed Jiang Nan’s face. “If you dare to talk drivel again, this woman’s going to whip this pretty boy to death!”

Jiang Nan’s face began developing a welt lined with blood, and shrugging his shoulders, he continued to wash the clothes.

Even though it was another party’s fault, he would get thrashed, and this kind of situation would occur nearly everyday. Anger, vexation, unreconciliation… Ah save it. He was long since numbed to these things!

Didn’t someone say he was a lowly slave?

However, it was a bit weird. Weylin would often lash Jiang Nan’s face, but never before had any wounds left a scar. Even counting the time that Weylin had once used a knife and torn his nose, several days later it still recovered to its former condition.

This infuriated Weylin, so she would often scold him by calling him a ‘pretty boy who wouldn’t repent even in death’.

……

Yuanzhi Continent had three moons: one golden yellow, the other blood red, and the last a mild silver color.

When these three moons had reached their highest point in the night sky, the female slaves had long since gone to rest, and the

enormous West farm only had a few patrols going through their rounds. Jiang Nan, however, was still washing clothes one by one by the creek.

Right at this moment, ‘crunch, crunch’, a piercing nose resounded from beside the creek.

A woman had crawled over.

This woman was a disabled person, and in the pant legs of her trousers, there was nothing but empty air below her knees. As her body lay atop a flat cart, her two hands grabbed towards the ground, and her crawling speed was just a tiny bit faster than a snail.

On the other hand, while one didn’t have to look for a word to describe this woman’s age and appearance, in truth, this woman’s face had two grisly scars that intertwined together sinisterly. Adding the fact that she had appeared in the middle of the night, she was basically a malevolent-looking and horrifying demon!

But when Jiang Nan saw this terrifying face, he only began laughing from his heart, “Auntie, what are you doing here?”

This woman was called Alisa (艾丽莎).

She was Rodi’s mother’s sister, so obviously she was his maternal aunt.

It was said that Alisa had once been a beautiful woman, but just a day after she had become a slave, a cruel and lecherous male master had wanted to possess her. As such, she had unhesitatingly and resolutely seized a fruit knife and carved 108 cuts onto her face.

It was also said that when that brutal and lecherous male master had found out about Alisa's decision, he exploded in rage, and immediately called people to cut off her two legs!

Of course, those were all just rumors, and in Jiang Nan's eyes, Alisa had genuinely been this way already.

He still remembered that the first day he was reincarnated into this world, it seemed as though his body suffered dehydration, and couldn't even stand up.

(it was probably because Rodi's body was originally very frail or because of some other obscure reason)

No one on the farm would care about the life or death of a slave. Therefore, Lord West, several overseers, and a number of slaves, besides Weylin who had been preoccupied, all waited for Rodi's life to run its course, not to mention that a few thugs had even brought a burlap sack over to take Jiang Nan, whether dead or not, and feed him to the wild dogs!

Right at that moment, Alisa has dragged her disabled body over and blocked the thugs, pleading and begging Lord West, "Master, I beg of you, Rodi is not yet dead!"

(*TL: respectful term)

Lord West had only shrugged, “My dear Alisa, I won’t raise a useless person. Even if he hasn’t died, he is already of no use…”

“Yes, Rodi is useless, but I am not yet useless!”

Gritting her teeth, she spoke, “Lord, I still have two hands. I will put forth all my effort to perform manual labor worth two people, I beg you, as long as you give Rodi back to me…”

(*TL: They alternate between Lord and Master)

Lord West’s character wasn’t bad, and curling lips, he agreed.

Alisa thanked him profusely, then dragged Jiang Nan who was like a dead dog to a shanty. She sobbed broken heartedly and said, “Rodi, you still live, thank goodness you still live! Lie down, from now on Auntie will provide for you!”

From then on, this woman would drag her disabled legs and perform two people’s worth of manual labor in the day, then pick up wilted vegetable leaves to boil as porridge at night. Miraculously, Jiang Nan was able to live.

And at the beginning of his rebirth, Jiang Nan was unable to speak the common language of Yuanzhi Continent, nor did he recognize all the people next to him. He could only put on the facade of an ‘idiot’ to observe this world with a detached point of view.

During that challenging period of time, as always, it was Alisa who bore the hardship of educating Jiang Nan in language, reading, and the general knowledge of a slave. One could say... if there was no Alisa, there would be no Jiang Nan today!

For a woman who had sacrificed herself for him to this extent, would Jiang Nan still consider her face as horrifying? Would he not be most willing to call out the word, ‘Aunty’?

People’s hearts were of flesh, not stone, and thus susceptible to feelings and emotion!

.....

As Alisa arrived before Jiang Nan, she smiled, although on her it seemed a bit unsettling, “Because you didn’t return, Auntie couldn’t sleep, so I came to look for you.”

Slightly raising her head, her terrifying face expressed uneasiness, and she shouted: “What would I have done if you didn’t return? What if you had been killed by someone?”

Jiang Nan only laughed bitterly.

Alright, Alisa was actually a sick person. More accurately, she had contracted ‘intermittent delusional psychosis’, or in medical terms, ‘hysteria’.

好吧，艾丽莎姨母其实是一个病人，准确说，她患有‘间歇姓幻想精神病’，

也就是医学上所说的‘臆病’。

(TL: noooo idea of this paragraph. I searched up these terms and I’m not sure they’re correct, so I’m leaving the raws.)

She always deluded herself into thinking that there were people out to murder Jiang Nan, and after just several minutes, she would start inquiring of every person anxiously, “Is my child still alive? Is my child still alive?”

If a whole day passed without seeing Jiang Nan, she would drag her disabled body around and look all over the place for him, on one hand searching, on the other hand bawling and wailing, “Wuwu, my child has definitely been murdered, Rodi is already dead, wuwu…”

(*TL: onomatopoeia for crying/whimpering)

But really, who would come and murder him? His present rotten life wasn’t even worth the value of a dog!

Jiang Nan ground out a few smiles with difficulty, then consoled his aunt, “Auntie, don’t worry. Nobody came to murder me today. Miss Weylin only told me to wash clothes.”

“It’s fine as long as you’re alive, it’s fine as long as you’re still alive…”

Alisa breathed a sigh of relief, then took out a shabby bowl from the flat cart, “Rodi, you’re exhausted from the whole day, so eat.”

Slaves were only allowed to eat one meal a day, but Alisa always worried that Jiang Nan didn't eat enough, so she would always secretly boil a bowl of porridge for him.

But, seeing the contents of the bowl, there were a few withered leaves, some muddy yellow soil that, while edible, would most likely lead to digestive problems, and a dirty pile of mud. This was the porridge that Alisa had boiled.

Because the soil within the porridge was called golden soil, Alisa even called what she cooked 'golden porridge'.

Honestly speaking, Jiang Nan couldn't drink this kind of porridge, but thinking about how his aunt had dragged her two disabled legs here and picked those withered leaves, he simply tilted his neck and 'gulp', he drained the bowl in one breath.

"The porridge that Auntie makes is the continent's best porridge!"

Alisa laughed and her scar-filled, horrifying face scrunched up, then she began muttering to herself, "It's fine as long as you drink it, it's fine as long as you drink it. Tomorrow, Auntie will boil a bowl of porridge for you again..."

Counting the days, Jiang Nan had already lived in Rodi's body for half a year, and for this half year, he would drink this bowl of porridge nearly everyday.

Considering the past Rodi, in truth, Jiang Nan's body had already been nourished by this 'golden porridge'...

For ten whole years!

Chapter 004: Order To Kill

Jiang Nan finally finished washing one hundred articles of clothing at 3:30 in the early morning, then pushed his aunt on the flat cart back to their dwelling place.

Alisa had accompanied him until 3:30 in the morning!

They lived in a shanty next to the pig pen that was around one meter high and highly susceptible to wind. It was also filled with the pungent smell of pig manure, but even so, this shanty had attracted many jealous gazes from other slaves.

This was because from the slaves' perspective, the shanty was so close to the pig pen that there would be opportunities to secretly take some of the discarded pig meat from the slaughterhouse. It was simply the most perfect slave house!

"Auntie, even though Miss Weylin punished me, she didn't hurt me, so next time could you go to bed earlier next time?"

(*TL: respectful term)

Jiang Nan on one hand pushed the cart into the shanty, and on the other spoke in a soft voice to Alisa.

"How is that okay? How is that okay?" Alisa repeatedly shook her head, "You've toiled bitterly for a day, and are tired and hungry. If Auntie doesn't make a bowl of golden porridge for you, you'll go hungry. Not to mention..."

Her voice suddenly grew angry and fierce, “What if they come to kill you? If Auntie is not by your side, who’s going to protect you?!”

Auntie’s illness truly was getting much more serious.

Jiang Nan sighed bitterly. As a medical professor, it wasn’t that he had never thought about curing her illness, but...

He specialized in anatomy! In regards to psychiatric illnesses, he didn’t even understand one thing!

In his past life, a friend of his who specialized in psychiatry had said, “Illnesses of the heart require medicine of the heart. If you wish to remedy their spirit and the mental aspect of their illness, taking medicine is essential. But even more important is that you must find where the mental illness stems from, then cut it down from the root.”

Following these words, Jiang Nan had previously asked of his Aunt’s feelings and thoughts four or five times: exactly who did the ‘they’ that wanted to kill him refer to?

However, whenever Jiang Nan would ask these kinds of questions, his aunt’s eyes would abruptly open wide and she would begin to tear her hair out in grief, loudly yelling: “Don’t kill him, don’t kill him! Rodi is only a child! If you want to kill, then just kill me! I’m the one who’s done wrong... if we really have done wrong!”

There were many times that Alisa had even yelled herself hoarse and immediately fainted on the spot!

After similar scenes occurred, Jiang Nan didn't dare to ask anymore. Clearly, his aunt had extremely distressing memories buried deep inside her heart, and for the time being, she couldn't mentally bear this type of inhuman pain.

However, Jiang Nan had gleaned a few pieces of information from the overseers.

According to what the overseer had said, Rodi and his Aunt were purchased ten years before. At that time, a slave trafficking caravan had passed through Sun City, and one of the overseers had coincidentally wanted to buy a few slaves and thus went to take a look. It turned out, his first glance had landed on Alisa, and he had been shocked into a daze!

At that time, Alisa didn't have that monstrous face, and although she had already contracted mental illness, when she was calm, her speech was dignified and elegant, her bearing graceful and poised. Even being a slave, she carried a clear air of nobility! The overseer thought that if he bought such a beautiful woman, she would definitely catch the eyes of the lecherous master, so he took out two gold coins on the spot and purchased Alisa and the six-year-old Rodi.

Unexpectedly, one gold coin was returned because the seller had said that the two were bought from the black market, and didn't

have any proof of identity. As such, they weren't worth the high price of two gold coins.

No proof of identity? No problem. Couldn't that overseer just ask Alisa herself? Thus, he persisted and purchased the two. However, when he had returned to the farm, he was grieved to find out that every time he brought up the past, Alisa would go mad, and nothing would be answered!

As such, nobody in the farm knew of the two people's pasts nor their names, so when registering the two, the overseer had simply picked random names for them.

"Rodi, go to sleep. Tomorrow we still have work to do!"

Jiang Nan was pulled back to reality by his aunt's call, and taking a look, he suddenly realized that his nose began aching.

It was already November, the latest stage of autumn. The shanty was basically like a small icehouse, but Auntie had actually curled up in a corner of the shanty, using her body to block the holes where wind could blow in!

And at the center of the shanty, the warmest place, was a scraggly blanket... left for Jiang Nan.

"Auntie, sleep here. The wind is strong over there."

Jiang Nan wanted to shift his aunt over, but Alisa's eyes suddenly

opened wide and she rebuked him, “Out of the question, out of the question. These cracks are so big, what would we do if ‘they’ snuck in through here and killed you?!”

Ai…

Jiang Nan was left speechless, and could only spread the blanket over his aunt’s body.

Soon after, Alisa began to snore softly, but no matter how Jiang Nan tried, he couldn’t fall asleep.

He was dissatisfied with the fact that he had fallen to such a level, but he was further occupied in his mind with a small incident that had occurred several days in the past…

……

During the evening a week before, a slave who was in charge of taking care of the horses had died from illness, and the master overseer had instructed Jiang Nan while plugging his nose, “Rodi, go take this dead body and bury it under the farmland. Dammit, even if you’re dead, you should still contribute to the farm by at least serving as fertilizer!”

“As you wish, master overseer!”

Although it appeared as though Jiang Nan was extremely reluctant to accept this task, once he turned around, he carried the

corpse with a beaming smile to a remote grove.

This was a corpse, the human body that Jiang Nan most understood!

After he had been reincarnated, Jiang Nan had one big question that always dwelled in his mind: he wanted to know if the human body structure on the Yuanzhi Continent had any differences from the body structure on earth.

This was the natural curiosity of an anatomy expert!

And now, the farm overseer had given Jiang Nan an opportunity...

Click, Jiang Nan opened up his dissecting cane to begin dissecting the corpse in preparation to analyze the physiological structure of the humans on the Yuanzhi Continent.

But right at this moment...

“Rodi, don’t do it!”

Like a ferocious lion, Auntie Alisa had jumped out from who knows where and clamped down on Jiang Nan’s wrist with her teeth.

She spoke vaguely: “You want to dissect this corpse? You cannot,

absolutely not! Rodi, Auntie is already a disabled person, and death will not begrudge me, but you can't die! You absolutely must take revenge, you must live and take back all that is rightfully yours from 'them'!"

I'm screwed! Auntie saw the dissecting cane! Jiang Nan's thoughts were in a flurried mess, and therefore didn't clearly hear what his aunt had said.

Only after a full three minutes later did he resume his normal expression and ask: "Auntie, why can't I dissect this body?"

Gritting her teeth, Alisa's demonic face was brimming with hatred and rancor, "Rodi, you remember what Auntie is about to tell you. Hundreds and thousands of years ago, all the powerful nations on the continent, all the totem masters, and all the totem aristocracy all jointly issued three death declarations!"

"Any person who dissects and studies a corpse will be regarded as revolting against nature, kill three generations!"

"Any clan who produces a clans member that dissects corpses will be regarded as revolting against nature, kill the whole clan!"

"Any nation that shelters a person or clan that dissects corpses will be regarded as revolting against nature, kill the whole nation!"

After saying these three death declarations, the knife scars on Alisa's face distorted into a sinister look, as if she was discussing

multiple incidents of large-scale massacres, eras and eras of history dripping with blood!

Jiang Nan was stunned to the point that he was speechless. Only after a long, long while did he roar in a hoarse voice: “These f***ing death declarations! Why are there three such death declarations!

“This…”

Alisa had an odd look on her face, “Auntie can’t say for sure either. In any case, it’s prohibited to dissect corpses. Come, we’re going back!”

At this, Alisa dragged Jiang Nan back to the shanty.

Maybe it was because of Auntie’s mental illness, but she never brought up this incident again. Naturally, she didn’t inquire about the matter of Jiang Nan’s dissecting cane either.

And naturally nobody paid any attention to that corpse, and it slowly rotted and decayed in the wilderness…

But just three days before, a fool discovered the dead body, and maybe he had been starving to death or had mistaken the putrid flesh as dog meat, but the fool began howling, then took numerous bites of the flesh.

Of course, the corpse was subsequently torn to pieces by him.

And yesterday when Jiang Nan had entered the city to buy pigs, he had seen the fool at the entrance of Sun City.

At that time, the fool and his whole family had been hung on the city gate, and a number of executioners had been sharpening their blades in preparation to execute them by death of a thousand cuts!

(*TL: old form of capital punishment)

There was even a sign hung on the fool's chest, and on it was written: "This man illegally dissected a corpse, kill without pardon!"

It was exactly that first death declaration: any person who dissected a corpse would be regarded as revolting against nature, kill three generations!

……

Because of this matter, Jiang Nan couldn't get a good sleep for the past several days. He felt a bit apologetic to that fool, and further felt… Isn't this world seriously too f***ing insane!

Calm down, calm down, to be a good model, one mustn't speak vulgar language…

But, why was it prohibited to dissect corpses?!

Was it that Yuanzhi Continent didn't know? If human anatomy, the foundation of medicine, didn't involve any dissections, it would be impossible to reach such a high degree of modern medicine!

Was it that those who issued the declaration didn't know? Even though dissecting human corpses looked gory, horrifying, and scared people at the very sound of it, it was the top academic discipline in studying and researching the mystery of the human body! How many mysteries of the human race had been uncovered due to medical dissections?!

Jiang Nan suddenly felt that being a slave wasn't unbearable. It was mainly just getting whipped and drinking wild herb soup.

But as a person who had once been a scholarly authority in human anatomy in the modern era, to be reborn into a world that prohibited dissecting, one could only wait to die of illness then be buried in the ground and turn to dust. How tragic was this!?

Damn it, damn it. Jiang Nan couldn't help but sit up straight, fiercely cursing: "F***ing damn it!"

"Rodi, that you haven't slept for the majority of the night, who are you cursing? Don't you know, you almost scared me to death!"

Suddenly, a voice of complaint transmitted from the outside, scaring Jiang Nan out of his wits.

But once he heard that familiar ‘don’t you know’, he let out a sigh of relief, then stealthily crept out of the shanty, “My dear Mister Tom, it’s already three in the morning. It should be you that’s frightened me!”

“Three in the morning? Good heavens, have you lost it?”

Tom exaggeratedly pointed at the sky where the three moons had already nearly set. It was at least five in the morning already.

Jiang Nan had tossed about in bed, unable to sleep, for two hours!

But Tom didn’t inquire further, and grabbing hold of Jiang Nan’s arm, he simultaneously ran and told him: “Hurry, hurry up and go to the threshing floor with me. Don’t you know? Miss Weylin has ordered all of the male slaves to assemble at the threshing floor. If we’re late, we’re going to get whipped to death.”

“Don’t tell me something big happened?”

“Something big, big enough to shock you to death!”

Tom exaggerated his expression, “Don’t you know? We’ve ran into an opportunity, an opportunity to switch from a slave to an ordinary person!”

From a slave to an ordinary person...

Jiang Nan's heart contracted, and he felt as if all the blood had rushed to his head in a flash. But, he still kept that model face of indifference and passiveness, "En, that's very good news. Please do continue."

Chapter 005: Totem Pillar

On the Yuanzhi Continent, experts and masters were as common as the clouds and as numerous as droplets of rain, and all of these experts and masters had one common name... totem master!

Once a person became a powerful totem master, that person would naturally pass down his or her special secret skill to their descendants. If their descendants were skilled in running and handling a business, they would prosper like a rolling snowball to become a flourishing 'totem aristocracy'.

The continent's most powerful and wealthy totem aristocracy was undoubtedly the Rheinhardt Clan, also known as the 'First Totem Millennium'.

And Jiang Nan's master, Count West, was a member of the Rheinhardt Clan.

Of course, he was only an insignificant outer member, and his farm was located thousands of kilometers away from Rhein headquarters.

(*TL: raws cut it from Rheinhardt to Rhein)

Jiang Nan had already eventually understood all of these above matters, but as he and Tom went towards the threshing floor, Tom still babbled on and repeated it anyway.

After listening a while, Jiang Nan got a bit impatient and

shrugged his shoulders, then looked at the dark clouds in the sky: “Good, tonight’s moonlight should be pretty nice. What do you think?”

“Alright, alright, I’ll just say it bluntly then!”

Tom understood Jiang Nan’s meaning, and chortling in embarrassment, he said: “Our opportunity of changing our identity as a slaves means having a relationship with Rhein headquarters!”

“Yesterday night, a big fish called Overseer ‘Ceci’ (吉吉) arrived from Rhein headquarters! Do you know what he came to do?”

Tom could barely contain his excitement and started dancing, “Overseer Ceci said that Rhein headquarters wanted a large force of strong youth. He ordered the Count to prepare two thousand of his strongest and most robust male slaves and have them assemble before noon today. We’re going to the threshing floor so that Overseer Ceci can look over us and choose.”

After saying this, Tom sunk into a wonderful, imaginary fantasy, “Hehe, once we’re chosen by Overseer Ceci, then our identity as slaves will be automatically removed, and we’ll become common residents of the Rheinhardt Clan!”

“Rodi, we’re two of the most youthful and strong slaves. We’ll definitely be chosen by Overseer Ceci!”

Common residents...

To the carefree Tom whose parents had already died and was the seventh generation of a family of slaves, this truly was a splendid piece of news.

But Jiang Nan was speechless, and his expression had only dulled. After hesitating for quite a while, he asked: “Only youthful and healthy slaves have the qualifications?”

Tom also grew silent, “En.”

If only young and health slaves were eligible, then what about Auntie Alisa?

Could he truly just discard his aunt, leaving by himself to become an exalted, free person? Like this, Auntie would only have death awaiting her!

Jiang Nan halted his steps.

Tom realized what Jiang Nan was thinking and consoled him: “Rodi, you can first become a common person and earn money, and then redeem Alisa from her identity as a slave!”

“Tom, you understand Auntie Alisa’s condition, I’m afraid... before I earn enough money, she’ll have already died!”

Jiang Nan abruptly turned around, “I’m going to go back and feed the pigs. Mister Tom, I wish you good luck!”

“Hey, you’re not going to participate in the selection at the threshing floor?”

Jiang Nan’s steps were firm, and he barely even hesitated.

But at this point in time, the threshing floor was nearly right before their eyes. A brawny black man had seen Tom and Rodi, and seeing their youthful and strong bodies, he waved them over, “Aiyaya, you two slaves really aren’t bad. Come over and let me take a look!”

This two meter tall, muscled black man who wore a golden silk robe and round cap… was actually an effeminate man!

A slave overseer swiftly went over to urge Jiang Nan, “Rodi, why is a pig guy like you hesitating? This man is Overseer Ceci from Rhein headquarters. Hurry, hurry up and go!”

Jiang Nan sighed. As a slave, he didn’t have choice of refusing him.

Fine, I’ll just act as though I’m sick and purposely not get selected so I can stay behind and take care of Auntie!

Thinking of this, Jiang Nan held back his breath then softly poked at his third and fourth rib…

Immediately, his expression grew flushed, as if he had caught sickness and had a fever.

To a medical professor, faking sickness was truly too easy.

Unexpectedly, when Overseer Ceci drew nearer to take a look, the Jiang Nan whom he had originally thought to be healthy and strong actually seemed quite sickly, and he couldn't help but stare at him. Then, he turn to take a look at Tom, saying: "Aiyaya, you strong and healthy slave, what is your name~?"

"Don't you know? My name is Tom!"

Jiang Nan stood within the group of slaves and didn't feel like listening to the conversation between the two, and thus absentmindedly studied the circumstances surrounding his situation.

Just by taking a few glances, he suddenly discovered that the atmosphere was a bit fishy!

In the past, the threshing floor only had around two or three hundred slave workers, so the amount of slave overseers that were present to maintain order also weren't many. Even though today was a big day where all the slaves would be assembled, it was already enough to have all the 280 overseers present. But today... besides the slave overseers, in the vicinity of the threshing floor, there were even two or three thousand soldiers surrounding the area!

Heavy black armor, fiery red cloaks, and matching long bows and daggers, several thousand soldiers stood ramrod straight around the threshing floor without even the smallest noise!

What an elite force!

And behind the troops, there was still twelve gigantic pillars that were seemingly as thick as cisterns, twelve meters tall, and covered with a red cloth.

“Do you know what these pillars are for?”

When he heard this phrase, Jiang Nan knew that Tom had returned so he didn’t turn his head as he asked, “Don’t tell me you know?”

“Hehe, Overseer Ceci already told me. These pillars are called ‘totem pillars’, and are especially made to test one’s ‘innate totem talent’!”

“To test one’s innate totem talent?”

“Exactly. They’re able to detect whether you are eligible to become a great totem master.”

Jiang Nan finally turned his head around, and looked at Tom suspiciously, “They need totem pillars just to select men for a

strong labor force?”

Tom was just about to explain, when Overseer Ceci saw that the slaves had pretty much already assembled, and raised his hand in a graceful gesture to indicate that they gather before him.

“Aiyaya, you young and strong fellows, come here, come here! Someone has something to tell you!”

Immediately, goose bumps prickled all over Jiang Nan’s body, and taking a look, beside Tom who was extremely eager to get rid of his identity as a slave, the other slaves were also subtly scratching their arms.

Overseer Ceci began to talk as if addressing children: “The reason someone has come here, is because of two issues~! First, to select two thousand strong slaves to go to Rhein headquarters in Celestial Flower City to become the common residents there… It’s easy~ All of you will carry fifty kilograms of rice and run three laps around the threshing floor. The first two thousand to complete the three laps will be chosen!”

“As for the second matter… Teehee, this person has come to pick out some strong men to enter Rhein headquarters’ directly subordinate army!”

Join the army?!

The threshing floor had lapsed into absolute silence.

If the word ‘common residents’ excited the slaves to the point of trembling, then joining the army… would get them stirred up to the point that they would go insane!

On the Yuanzhi Continent, the status and treatment of soldiers were the top of the top among all occupations. Even if it was just the most ordinary military cook, he would be paid twelve silver coins per month! In other words, as long as one was a soldier for half a year, it would be sufficient to buy the strongest male slave in the market!

“Yi? How come none of you are talking anymore?”

Overseer Ceci all at once clapped his hands in front of his chest, “Ah, I understand~! All of you are so excited that you can’t even say one word, right?!”

No longer did anyone think that Overseer Ceci effeminacy was disgusting. On the contrary, all of the slaves thought that he had a f***ing heavenly voice!

“But, don’t get too happy just yet! The Rheinhardt Clan’s army isn’t a place that just anyone can enter. Those who wish to join… must possess ‘innate totem talent’!”

Sweeping a glance over those twelve totem pillars, Jiang Nan had already guessed what their purpose was.

As expected, Overseer Ceci swung his bottom around and went near the totem pillars. Patting the pillars, he said: “See these twelve pillars? They’re here to check whether you have ‘innate totem talent’ or not. Remember, after running, you are to come directly here to the totem pillar area. As long as the totem pillar shows that you have innate totem talent, then you have the opportunity to become a noble totem master… Aiya, congratulations~ You would become grand soldiers~!”

At this moment, the troops’ general stood out and shouted: “Right now, listen to my orders! Every slave heft up a sack of rice and start running! After you’ve finished running, go straight to the totem pillars and assemble there to start checking your innate talent!”

“Yes!!!”

Tom, who had long since prepared, answered with a loud shout, and gathering his strength, he picked up fifty kilograms worth of rice and began dashing towards the very front like a madman, “Don’t you guys know? I’m definitely going to be number one!”

Other slaves stared blankly, then immediately reacted. One rushing past Li Xuan urgently shouted at him: “Younger brother, what are you spacing out for?! If you want to become a common resident and join the army, run!”

“To no longer be a slave, run!”

Amidst the fanatical charging of several thousand slaves, Jiang

Nan seemed noticeably weird. He was taking his time as he heaved a fifty kilogram sack of rice and ran alongside fifty-some year old slaves in the very last group.

In reality, Jiang Nan's physical condition was even stronger than Tom's by a few levels, and if he truly wanted to get first place, almost nobody would be able to outrun him. But he couldn't run and get first place, much less become a common person thousands of miles away from here!

Or else, who would take care of Auntie Alisa who cared for him and him for her?!

It took about eight or nine hundred meters to run a circle around the threshing floor, and for those who ran quickly, they could reach the finish line in twenty-some minutes.

Tom really was number one, and was exhausted to the point that he was gasping for air. But, he still forced himself to control his breaths and stick out his chest, yelling loudly: "Lord Officer, do you know? My name is Tom!"

"Very good, resident Tom. This is proof that you've broken away from your identity as a slave!"

At once, the officer handed a small badge to Tom, then tore off the red cloth on one of the totem pillars, shouting: "Resident Tom, I now command you! Put your back to the pillar, close your eyes, and sense the environment around you. The totem pillar will determine the circumstances surrounding your innate talent!"

So this was the method of determining one's innate totem talent?

Jiang Nan who still had two laps left to go looked curiously over, and only saw Tom with his back to the totem pillar and his hands tightly clasped, constantly mouthing his prayers, "Don't you know? Don't you know, don't you know that I'm so very excited right now?"

Suddenly!

Boom, boom, boom!

The ground reverberated with ripples of booming sounds, and immediately after, a humongous, circular dark cloud appeared atop the totem pillar. On top of the dark cloud was a clearly jagged, palm-sized rock.

What did this mean? Tom looked nervously towards the officer...

The officer laughed, "With a rock-like physique, you can communicate naturally with stones, and have the potential to summon rocks as your 'faith totem'! Mr. Tom, you are no longer just a common resident, and have the opportunity to become a noble rock totem master of the Rheinhardt Clan, a guard directly subordinate to headquarters! Congratulations!"

"Yes!"

Tom lifted his head, and with his face streaming with tears, he broken-heartedly cried out, “Father, Grandfather, Great-grandfather, Great-great-grandfather… Do you guys know? Tom is no longer a slave anymore! Tom is a grand soldier!”

“Congratulations, Tom…”

With a bitter laugh, Jiang Nan ran even slower in gloomy silence.

Chapter 006: Ghost Totem

On the Yuanzhi Continent, everybody believed that the source of power originated from all living things. Hence, as long as something was created by or as a result of nature, then that object had a spirit.

And there was a portion of humanity whose bodies contained a type of mysterious power, called the ‘Bridge of Nature’. Its meaning was very simple, and it meant that one could construct a bridge to allow a person to communicate with some form of nature.

Fire, rock, numemon, wolves, the Twelve-Winged Golden-Eyed Dragon King, and even humans themselves... as long as they were a form of nature, then communication could be established.

And after successfully establishing communication, this person would be able to summon this form of nature as their ‘faith totem’, from then on capable of utilizing this form of nature as a means of protecting themselves or even defeating their enemies.

It was just like Tom. Just then, the totem pillar’s strange display signified that his body possessed the ‘Bridge of Rock’. As such, he would naturally be able to communicate with the rocks of nature and summon a ‘rock totem’.

In other words, Tom had the opportunity to become a ‘rock totem master’.

Please take note that he only ‘had a chance’. The fact that he possessed a ‘Bridge of Nature’ didn’t mean that Tom was guaranteed to become a formidable totem master. In fact, the way of totems was full of difficulties upon difficulties, and the vast majority of those who possessed ‘Bridges of Nature’ wouldn’t become mighty totem masters even throughout their whole lives.

However, just merely possessing a ‘Bridge of Nature’ was sufficient for Tom to join the army.

Jiang Nan simultaneously ran and listened to the discussions of the wizened and experienced slaves a bit. At this moment, what he hadn’t predicted was that he was, from the very last, the eighth person to finally reach the finish line.

“Seize him!”

Right at this moment, the officer abruptly let out a fierce roar, as if a powerful enemy had invaded the threshing floor!

Jiang Nan was momentarily startled, and even thought that he was the person who had committed some kind of offense. However, after one or two seconds, he realized that the soldiers weren’t targeting him.

It turned out that at another totem pillar not far away, a slave had already finished running and was currently getting tested by the totem pillar.

And that twelve-meter totem pillar already displayed the form of his totem, which was unexpectedly… a thick cluster of skulls!

“Good heavens!”

All the slaves were terrified into shock.

“Calm down, calm down…”

Jiang Nan’s eyes revealed a genuinely excited light because he was an anatomy specialist who associated with dead bodies! Seeing those skulls, he wasn’t frightened, nor was he dazed, but rather was as delighted as though he had met an old friend!

A number of soldiers charged over and seized the slave whose form of totem was a skull. The officer yelled, “Investigate thoroughly! Whoever is related to this slave by blood, seize the respective three generations!”

Why was this?

Jiang Nan’s head grew foggy, and during this strange event while the soldiers were busy capturing those people, Tom took the chance to stealthily slip away while carrying his new army uniform and flaunted it: “Rodi, hurry, hurry up and look at my new army uniform.”

Jiang Nan’s eyes swept over the uniform disinterestedly, then directed his gaze back to that slave, “Tom, has that person

committed a crime?”

“He’s committed one, and an unpardonable and disastrous sin at that!”

Tom caressed his new uniform gleefully, then asked Rodi: “Do you know of the continent’s three ‘death declarations’? Those three that have to do with human corpses!”

Any person who dissects and studies a corpse will be regarded as revolting against nature, kill three generations!”

Any clan who produces a clans member that dissects corpses will be regarded as revolting against nature, kill the whole clan!

Any nation that shelters a person or clan that dissects corpses will be regarded as revolting against nature, kill the whole nation!

These three death declarations made Jiang Nan feel as though a fishbone was stuck in his throat, as if a blade was pointed at his back! Even if that was a dream, he would’ve woken up filled with indignance, how could he not know?

“Truthfully, the goal of these three death declarations is only one, which is… to prevent the appearance of ‘ghost totems’!”

“Ghost totems?”

“Right, ghost totems!”

Tom had just learned this from the words of the other soldiers, and brought it out to flaunt at this moment without a hint of shame. He answered: “All living things have spirits, so naturally, all living things can be summoned as one’s faith totem, and ghosts are no exception!”

“The natural form of a ‘faith totem’ that has something to do with death is called a ‘ghost totem’!

Then Tom said mysteriously: “And this ‘ghost totem’ is the continent’s greatest taboo! Once a person is identified as ‘having relations with a ghost totem’, then he and his family will be thoroughly destroyed!”

Jiang Nan seemed to understand, “Then, the true meaning of those three death declarations is…”

“The true meaning of these three death declarations is basically that any person dissecting a corpse will be seen as trying to cultivate a ‘ghost totem’, or that they are associated with ‘ghost totems’, so they and their whole family must die!”

Calm down, calm down…

Jiang Nan was irritated to the point of wanting to curse someone, but the model person inside told him that he should calm down, calm down, and calm down even more!

Fine then. So the Yuanzhi Continent originally prohibited the act of dissecting human bodies, and furthermore prohibited any kind of close contact with dead corpses!

Once he came into close contact with any dead corpse, then he as well as Auntie Alisa would be classified as people ‘associated with ghost totems’ and would die!

Jiang Nan suddenly thought up an outrageous idea, and if it was possible... could he make this world a bit happier?

Of course, this was only a thought, and it immediately dissipated in a flash. To Jiang Nan who was a slave, this kind of idea was simply an impractical and unattainable, extravagant hope.

After calming down, he asked: “Why? Why must those who are associated with ‘ghost totems’ die?”

“This... don’t you know? I don’t know either! This prohibition has already existed for several thousand years already. Who knows what happened several thousand years ago?”

Tom laughed with embarrassment, then pointed at that slave whose form of totem was a skull, “In any case, that last test already proved it! This unfortunate fellow has a ‘Bridge of Ghosts’, and thus has a chance to become a ‘ghost totem master’, so he and his whole family must die!”

By this time, that slave's whole family had already been captured. There were eighteen people, as well as three additional farm overseers who were related to him by blood.

But no matter what identity they had, the officer still waved his hand dramatically, "Execute them!"

On the threshing floor, with bows and arrows at the ready, twenty-some people were shot through to death!

"Burn those corpses without a trace! Tell Count West that his slaves have been suspected of 'associating with ghost totems', and warn him to be more careful next time!"

The officer coldly instructed his men, then went straight to Jiang Nan who was standing in line and gestured at him, "It's your turn now."

So it's starting now?

A surge of anticipation suddenly swelled up, and although Jiang Nan had already resolved to stay behind and take care of his aunt, when the test was imminent, he surprisingly began to look forward to the result and hoped that he would also have innate totem talent!

No, no! Jiang Nan immediately dispelled that feeling of anticipation. He couldn't have innate totem talent, or else... his poor and lonely auntie wouldn't last for long!

According to the officer's instructions, Jiang Nan placed his back to the totem pillar.

Nearly right at the same moment, the totem pillar began to emit dark smoke, and dark clouds started to roil about in a mysterious and imposing manner!

On the sidelines, Tom roared madly in excitement, "Rodi, don't you know? When my innate talent was being tested, it was also like this! You possess innate totem talent, you definitely possess innate totem talent!"

I...

Actually possess innate totem talent?!

Jiang Nan's heart went cold as if he was already seeing the events that would unfold: the Lord Officer would assimilate him into the army, as if reeling in a potential fighter, and bring him to the big city. And Auntie Alisa... would be left all alone, only able to lie on that flat cart and wail, awaiting her death!

Damn it, why do I have innate totem talent?!

Jiang Nan lifted his head to take a look at exactly what this damnable innate talent was!

And right at this moment, that dark smoke already condensed into a ring, and faintly revealed something ghastly white.

From his perspective as well as from the viewpoint of his specialty, only Jiang Nan himself was able to see clearly and tell that this ghastly white object was unexpectedly… a bone!

More accurately, it was the skeletal remains of a skull.

Skeletal remains that symbolized a ‘Bridge of Ghosts’!

Don’t tell me I also have a Bridge of Ghosts? Don’t tell me, I also have the chance to become a ghost totem master?!

A corpse dripping with blood appeared in his vision, and Jiang Nan’s heart slammed within his chest. Don’t tell me, me and Auntie… also have to die here?!

Chapter 007: Good-For-Nothing, Or Genius?

The skull began to faintly emerge from that dark fog, starting to show more and more of its face.

As Jiang Nan looked, a complete skull was about to reveal itself.

But right at this critical moment!

Suddenly, a brilliant and dazzling golden mist began to billow out from Jiang Nan's back, its color like that of golden porridge.

In an instant, this glittering golden fog expanded outward and surrounded the totem pillar, simultaneously covering up the dense, ghastly air of that skull!

Jiang Nan's mind went blank.

The officers also began to take notice of this odd occurrence, but they only saw that golden mist, not the object concealed within, or rather, the skull which the golden mist was shielding from the outside.

An officer let out a surprised 'Yi' sound, "How strange. I've been a totem test proctor for ten-some years already, but have never seen such an unusual sight. Hey, do you know what this means?"

Another officer stared at the distant golden mist doubtfully, "I

don’t understand either, it’s so damn weird!”

At this moment, Overseer Ceci was also startled, and walked over in astonishment. He swayed over as he nibbled his fingernail, “Aiyaya, hurry up and let a person see! Exactly what just happened?”

The officer hastily bowed and answered: “Lord Overseer, after this slave approached the totem pillar, at first, dark clouds began to appear, which means that he definitely has some kind of innate totem talent! But after that, that golden mist suddenly appeared and surrounded the totem pillar... Lord, this subordinate truly cannot tell what kind of innate talent this slave has, please be the judge!”

“This...”

Overseer Ceci was also at a loss. To be honest, he didn’t know what this meant either. However, as a superior, he didn’t want to admit his inability in front of his subordinates.

Hence, he just laughed delicately and lied for the sake of saving face: “Dummy~ this obviously means that... this slave has no innate talent whatsoever, and he’s simply just an ordinary person!”

Ordinary person?

The officers stared vacantly. However, the superior had already

decided so, so they wouldn't dare to contradict it. An officer rushed towards Jiang Nan and gestured, "Leave the totem pillar then. Overseer Ceci has already said that you have no innate totem talent whatsoever, and are only an ordinary person!"

Jiang Nan was also startled, ordinary person! The result of the test really was... that he was only an ordinary person!

How was this possible? He himself clearly saw that there was a skull!

However, Overseer Ceci was a totem master of the upper echelons, and he probably wasn't wrong: perhaps that skull wasn't the proof of innate ghost talent.

Alright then, he was only an ordinary person.

F***, he was only an ordinary person!

Jiang Nan laughed bitterly in helplessness. That he was just an ordinary person signified that throughout his whole life, he would be unable to become a noble totem master, and further meant that in his life, he would have to be a genuine slave that cared for pigs!

A slave...

Jiang Nan was truly unwilling to be a slave!

……

Trudging along with a heart full of reluctance, Jiang Nan returned to his shanty.

Because he was one of the last to finish the physical test, and was proven to be an ordinary person for the innate talent test, he had already lost all eligibility to loiter around at the threshing floor.

At this time, Auntie Alisa had just woken up, and she was currently boiling a bowl of porridge for Jiang Nan: golden porridge.

The same color as that golden mist, golden porridge!

“Rodi, you’re not happy? What happened?”

Alisa’s face was quite serene, as though she had never contracted any illness.

Seeing that Jiang Nan’s face was quite downtrodden, she crawled over and touched his forehead.

Jiang Nan squeezed out a sliver of a smile, then narrated what had just happened to his aunt. At the very end, he was still a bit unreconciled, “Auntie, when I was being tested, I clearly saw a skull, meaning that I probably possess innate ghost talent, but right after its appearance, a golden mist just…”

“Rodi, your eyesight must’ve gone bad.”

Alisa’s expression was very strange, and something flickered in her eyes, as though she was avoiding something.

However, Jiang Nan didn’t take notice of his aunt’s expression, and only laughed at himself self-deprecatingly, “Alright then, my eyesight’s gone bad. There was never any skull, and I’m just an ordinary person…”

After saying this, Jiang Nan picked up the golden porridge that was finished cooking and drank half of it absentmindedly.

Although, his face was incredibly unsightly.

Seeing through Jiang Nan’s thoughts, Auntie Alisa began to console him: “Are you still feeling regretful? Regretful that you don’t have a chance to become a totem master?”

“En.”

Jiang Nan went silent for a while, until he nearly jumped into the air at a determined voice.

“Who says you don’t have a chance of becoming a totem master?”

Alisa's sudden words were startling!

She chuckled mysteriously, her horrifying face distorting, "The tests conducted through totem pillars are not necessarily accurate, and there are a lot of ways to make the totem pillar's test err. Rodi, don't be discouraged or dismayed, and remember Auntie's words well..."

Alisa's demonic face abruptly grew serious, and she spoke with extreme solemnity, "When a totem pillar classifies a person as ordinary, there are two situations. The first is that you are truly a good-for-nothing, and the second... that you are an incredibly rare genius that appears only once every ten thousand years! Your innate talent, under the shielding of some kind of object, has already exceeded the limit of the totem pillar!"

Jiang Nan lifted his head, stunned. He clearly remembered that several days before, his aunt had told him after she had caught him about to dissect a corpse that she didn't understand much about totems. Then now... how could she tell him such specialized info?!

"Auntie, you..."

Alisa didn't see Jiang Nan's face of astonishment, and instead clapped her hands and giggled foolishly: "Truthfully~ my Rodi is a huge, huge genius, teehee! Sooner or later, Rodi will become a totem master who will shake the continent, hehe. When that day comes, no person will be able to kill my Rodi anymore..."

She was happy to the point that she began waving her arms and

gesturing wildly in joy, as if she was seeing a mighty and awe-inspiring Jiang Nan. Suddenly, she saw that Jiang Nan still had half a bowl of golden porridge left.

"Why aren't you drinking? Don't tell me that you don't want to live through people chasing after you to kill you? Could it be, that you don't want to become a glorious and earth-shaking totem master? If you want to, then finish that bowl of golden porridge!"

At this, Alisa forcibly took the bowl of porridge away and forcefully fed the golden porridge into Jiang Nan's mouth.

Ai, so it turns out that Auntie just had another episode! Jiang Nan sighed. The things that Auntie had told him, that the totem pillar was inaccurate, that he was a genius, all these words, were total nonsense!

Might as well keep being a slave then!

Golden soil was bitter, the golden porridge was also very bitter, and Jiang Nan's heart... was even more bitter!

.....

In the evening, Overseer Ceci finally picked out two thousand robust male slaves, as well as two hundred or so female slaves whose physiques weren't bad and were proficient crafts makers.

On the other hand, there were still sixty-seven slaves who had

fortunately passed the innate talent test, and had become lofty and grand soldiers of the army.

And Tom was the luckiest! Maybe it was because he had demonstrated astonishing drive, but he had not only entered the army, but also earned the position of a captain!

Just like that, after Overseer Ceci had finished making a selection, only 2500 slaves remained on the threshing floor, and they were either old and weak or sick and disabled.

During noontime of the second day, Overseer Ceci led the selected slaves and departed.

Right at the time of departure, Tom had even made a solemn vow to Jiang Nan, “Rodi, don’t you know? Once I’ve made enough gold coins from being a soldier, I’ll send money back here and redeem both you and Auntie Alisa! We’ll forever be the best of friends!”

Jiang Nan laughed, but didn’t say anything.

What could he say? Just two days before, the two of them were still tending pigs together as slaves, and after barely one session of testing innate talent, one of them had become a lord captain of a big city, and the other was still a slave steeped in the smell of pig dung!

All of this was due to two words—innate talent!

Staring at the distant Tom, Jiang Nan suddenly felt that his cheek had gone cold. Raising up his head, he only saw layers and layers of sparkling, translucent snowflakes drifting down from the sky. It swirled about like rain, as if throwing a farewell party to Tom and mocking his own inability.

This was Flowerstream Era, Year 2143's first snowfall, and very quickly, the snow blanketed the farm in a huge expanse of silver.

Watching the snow flutter about in the sky, Jiang Nan suddenly felt a strong wave of shame wash over him, and right at that moment, a tiny little seed had begun to grow in his heart.

He told himself, "Fine, I have no innate talent, I'm a slave! But, I'm not willing to be a slave for my entire life! I will definitely find a way, no matter the method, to become a free person!"

Following that, he saw Alisa who was in the middle of dragging her crippled legs across the field and digging out golden soil. "Furthermore, Auntie has given me a new life! I can't allow her to live the rest of her years in that shanty. I absolutely must give myself and Auntie a new life! And all of this... will begin once I am no longer a slave!"

Jiang Nan silently made this resolute determination in his heart.

However, a question continued to pop up, which was that the innate talent testing was already over, so what other chance would he have to allow himself to discard the identity of a slave?

After pondering a while, Jiang Nan suddenly felt as though everything had become a sheet of white...

He couldn't think of any way to rid himself of this identity as a slave!

Frustrated, he grabbed at his hair in sorrow.

Right at this moment!

"Rodi! Why isn't a lowly thing like you going to work, and just standing here foolishly doing nothing? Are you looking to get beat?!"

A furious roar transmitted from behind, followed by the sound of a whip cracking.

Miss Weylin had walked over.

Sun City's most beautiful woman's elegant figure, graceful and measured steps, that long, golden hair that fluttered whimsically at her back, as well as that pale blue dress truly set off her beauty, seemingly making her grow prettier by the minute. However, her actions were still so cruel!

Pa!

A whip lashed against Jiang Nan's head, and Weylin began to

berate him: “You peasant, Overseer Ceci has just taken all the strong male slaves, and the farm is lacking farm hands everywhere, yet lowly scum like you dares to laze around? Do you truly believe that this woman doesn’t dare to kill you?”

“Calm down, calm down, I’m going to go work already. Those obese pigs of a master definitely won’t starve to death.”

Jiang Nan felt the blood left on his head, then turned and started walking. But, right at this moment, a lady of around eighteen or nineteen years of age obstructed him, “Remain standing there! Did the lowly you not hear? Miss Weylin is in the middle of teaching you!”

Jiang Nan sized up this young woman in astonishment. He knew that this young lady was a slave by the name of ‘Lola’.

In the past, Lola would always keep a low profile no matter who she saw, but today… she actually dared to scold him?

“What are you staring at me for?”

Lola’s face expression told him, ‘I’ve scolded a lowly scum like you, what are you going to do about it?’, then she arrogantly said: “You better remember this. Starting today, I’ve been promoted to being Miss Weylin’s personal maid! I have the authority to assist Miss Weylin in managing the farm, have the authority to chastise you, to beat you, and even have the authority… to kill you!”

Weylin also spoke: “Have you heard now? Rodi, you remember this woman’s words. Right now, there are insufficient farmhands on the farm, and you must perform labor worth three men. As to what it is, Lola will arrange it for you.”

After saying this, Weylin called over two overseers, “Lola, from now on, Rodi’s under your supervision. If he refuses to obey…”

Lola answered quick-wittedly: “If he refuses to obey, then I’ll just request of these two brave older brothers to beat him to death!”

Finishing her words, Lola deeply bowed, then laughed sweetly: “Miss, go ahead and receive guests without worry, I’ll handle the situation here.”

Weylin nodded her head in satisfaction, then turned and headed towards the farm gate.

Only after this did Jiang Nan realize that Weylin hadn’t come for the purpose of sorting him out. In reality, there was a guest outside the farm, and when Weylin had gone to meet the guest, she had taken advantage of the opportunity to make arrangements for future human affairs within the farm.

The guest was around thirty years old, and stood at a height of two meters. His physique was slender, and had a head of short, pale black hair. His two arms actually reached to his knees, and his nails were around one or two chi long, all of them a dark green color!

(*TL: chi = ~⅓ meter)

The guest perceived that Jiang Nan was sizing him up, and icily returned a glare!

“A lowly slave like you dares to measure the high and noble me?!”

From this gaze, Jiang Nan felt a slight chill well from the depths of his heart. Laughing, he withdrew his gaze, although in his heart he exclaimed in alarm, Sauron?! Sun City’s number one totem master, Sauron, actually came!

Chapter 008: Exploiting The Power Of A Nation, Enticing A Ruler's Favor

Sun City was an excellent area densely filled with resources, and just like Rhein Headquarters had established West Farms here, many other totem aristocratic families on the same scale or higher also established resource gathering locations.

Of these establishments, the ones who held the most influence were West Farms, as well as the Rhein Headquarters' rival—Sommer (苏摩尔) Clan's 'Suzanne' (苏珊) Farms.

In a struggle over resources, the two large-scale farms had already gone through a bloody history of enmity for tens of years. One could say that it was a rivalry where 'enemies could not live under the same sky, so no rest until death'

Sauron was the number one overseer of Suzanne Farms, as well as Sun City's number one expert.

He had slaughtered at least one hundred or more overseers from West Farms!

Therefore, when she first saw Sauron, Miss Weylin didn't reveal any kind of pleasant face, "Sauron, why is a lowly person like you not hiding at home like a cat in winter, and rather running to this woman's farm?!"

"Maybe it's to discuss something, or maybe... it's to kill

someone.”

Sauron licked his lips and chuckled faintly and sauntered through the farm’s gates. When he passed by Jiang Nan, he spoke sinisterly: “Weylin, this slave knows no etiquette, how about I kill him in your place?”

Saying this, Sauron unexpectedly really extended his hand out to grab Jiang Nan!

“Mister, it’s alright, isn’t it? All I did was take a glance at you.”

Jiang Nan hastily explained himself! However, right after he spoke, he realized something. Sauron wouldn’t care about something so trivial as a simple face expression—Sun City’s number one expert wasn’t so petty. He was only purposely killing a person to establish his authority and demonstrate it to Miss Weylin!

Killing several slaves to flaunt his power was to increase his negotiating power, and which was a common method of aristocratic families.

Jiang Nan smiled bitterly then closed his eyes...

Pa!

At the most critical point, Weylin suddenly drew out her leather whip, and lightly cracking it, she coiled it around Sauron’s arm,

“You lowly person, it isn’t your business to teach this woman’s slaves. If you want to fight, then come at me!”

“Heh, you still have this temper of yours. Alright, I was just joking. Let’s head in to talk.”

Sauron playfully swept his gaze over Jiang Nan, then walked into the farm with his eyes crinkling happily.

“So powerful…”

Jiang Nan who had just escaped death only felt his whole back prickling, his shirt already soaked through.

Just then, Sauron’s grip didn’t contain strength able to shake the heavens and the earth, nor was there any ingenious technique behind it. However, just a casual gesture caused Jiang Nan to feel as though he was completely incapable of fleeing, that he could only await death!

Was this the power of totems?!

If he himself possessed this kind of strength…

Jiang Nan suddenly felt that he was quite laughable. He was just a useless piece of trash that had no innate talent, just a slave. Thinking such things… was there any meaning in doing so?!

……

On the other hand, Sauron had already reached the courtyard at the back of the farm, and strode casually, seeming as though he had reached his own house's courtyard.

Weylin didn't call any servants to receive him and serve tea, and simply stood at the entrance to the courtyard, coldly saying: "There are no more outsiders now. Speak. Exactly what's the matter?"

Sauron smiled lightly, then adjusting his shirt, he spoke: "Weylin, you are Sun City's most beautiful and strongest woman. However, when speaking of the whole continent, there is yet another stronger than you, lovelier than you… Do you know who I'm speaking of?"

"Yulianne?!"

Weylin's face changed, "Don't tell me that this matter has to do with Yulianne?"

"Correct! There's news from Yanjing. The continent's number one beauty, owner of the fastest blade, the number one chef specialized in knife work, Yulianne… is about to arrive at Sun City!"

Sauron's face grew solemn, "We're both very clear on the matter that happened three years ago. Yulianne killed the Golden Lion

amidst that cavalry of ten thousand men, rescuing the fate of the empire. However, she wasn't willing to receive the gratitude or title given by the empire, and even left without letting anyone know."

"What's the point?"

"What other point is there? Yulianne's bewitching blade and her power to fell a thousand-troop army in one stroke changed the whole history of the continent with just a casual swing of her hand. What emperor wouldn't want to curry favor with such an expert, and what emperor wouldn't want to bring such a beautiful woman into his harem?!"

Sauron eyes emitted a mocking light, "In order to get into Yulianne's good graces, His Majesty the Emperor has exhausted all kinds of methods these past three years. This time is not an exception either: His Majesty has secretly commanded that when Yulianne arrives, Sun City is to have all powers attempt to find favor with Yulianne at all costs! Furthermore, His Majesty has also said... whoever is able to make her the happiest..."

He let out two rounds of unbridled laughter, "will receive a sufficiently significant reward!"

"That reward... is how significant?"

"Whoever is able to make Yulianne laugh and ally with the empire, His Majesty will permit that person to view the 'Tortoiseshell of Destiny!"

The Tortoiseshell of Destiny…

“You lowly person, you lowly son of a b****!”

Weylin suddenly roared. Although others didn’t know what the ‘Tortoiseshell of Destiny’ was, as one of the respective leaders of the Rheinhardt Clan, she was extremely clear on this subject!

To curry favor with Yulianne, His Majesty had even taken out the ‘Tortoiseshell of Destiny’! This was basically ‘exploiting the power of a nation to entice Yulianne’s favor’!

Rhein Headquarters had actually neglected to promptly send news of such a major affair, and instead allowed her archenemy, a person belonging to ‘Suzanne Farms’, to notify her! This, this… what a f***ing son of a b****!

During this time, Sauron had been watching Weylin with a gleeful smile on his face. Only after waiting for her rage to gradually dissipate did he slowly and deliberately say: “Miss Weylin, the matter is like this. In order to obtain the opportunity to view the ‘Tortoiseshell of Destiny’, each respective power of Sun City will definitely flock to welcome Yulianne, sparing no effort or resource to rope in the continent’s number one beauty, but…”

Turning the direction of the conversation, he continued, “Sun City’s larger and smaller powers amount to 137 families. With so many powers swarming around, it’ll definitely be a scene of chaos, leading to Yulianne’s displeasure… Therefore, the lord of our

Suzanne Farms has a bit of a proposal!”

“If you have s***, then let it spew!”

Weylin glared icily at Sauron.

“S***? Ai, it’s really hard to imagine that such a vulgar and filthy word came out of the mouth of such a beautiful lady…”

Sauron chuckled, then resumed the topic, “My farm’s Lord’s proposal is this: that all 137 powers of Sun City ally together and form a ‘reception committee for Yulianne’ with my farm’s Lord taking on the role of committee president, leading everyone to welcome her altogether.”

If Suzanne Farms’ Lord took on the position of president, once Yulianne was roped in, then when His Majesty bestowed the reward of viewing the ‘Tortoiseshell of Destiny’, it would naturally fall solely on Suzanne Farms!

No matter how much Weylin thought about it, she couldn’t understand.

Furthermore, she had also thought of the fact that Suzanne Farms’ Lord might take advantage of the opportunity to suppress each power, exclusively monopolizing Sun City’s abundant resources!

So Weylin laughed frostily: “Your farm’s Lord really is quite

calculating!”

“You flatter me!”

Sauron chuckled faintly: “As of this moment, twenty-seven farms, fifteen mines, and four livestock managements have already acknowledged my farm’s Lord as president! On the other hand, there were several farm lords who were quite stubborn and refused my farm Lord’s good will… Of course, I’ve already made it so that they will will never have the chance to nod again… Miss Weylin, do you recognize my farm’s Lord as president?”

After he finished speaking, he directed an indifferent gaze towards Weylin. Clearly, if Weylin dared to say the word ‘no’, he wouldn’t mind taking advantage of his identity as Sun City’s number one expert to kill someone in a fit of rage!

“Sauron, you lowly son of a b****, don’t go too far!”

Facing such humiliating conditions and such forceful oppression, Weylin had become furious to the point that her veins were bulging!

However, after roaring in such a manner, she suddenly clenched her fists, squeezing out a thread of a smile, “But this woman appreciates your strength, so return and tell Suzanne Farms’ Lord that when Yulianne arrives, West Farms will acknowledge her as our lord and listen to all that Suzanne Farms commands!”

A cold gleam flashed across Sauron's eyes, and fixing his gaze at Weylin for a long moment, he suddenly praised her: "It is truly the fortune of Count West that West Farms has you in charge!"

At this, Sauron blew out a long whistle, then disappeared into the obscurity of snow.

As for Weylin, she stood there in the snow, grinding her teeth. Suddenly, she lashed out her whip and with a 'boom', she broke a large tree whose trunk was as thick as someone's waist!

"Suzanne Farms, this woman will remember the shame of this day!"

After a while later, a manager on the farm hastily ran over, "Miss, there's news from Headquarters saying that the continent's number one beauty, Yulianne, is about to..."

"A lowly thing like you doesn't need to run his mouth off, this woman as long since found out!"

The manager stared blankly, "*You already know?"

Weylin waved her hand to cut him off, and narrated to him what had just happened. The manager then responded in alarm: "Miss, Suzanne Farms wants to take the chance of viewing the 'Tortoiseshell of Destiny' for themselves, and even wants to seize the opportunity to suppress our farm, *you, how could *you accept!"

“Then would it be okay if this woman refused?!”

Weylin pointed at the empty farm, “Overseer Ceci has taken two thousand of our strong men at once! If I didn’t accept and started a fight, what would I make use of to battle with someone?! With the current offensive force of this farm, we wouldn’t even be able to withstand three hours of onslaught!”

The manager also understood this and laughed bitterly: “That’s true, it’s not the time to start fighting right now. Not to mention others, just Sun City’s number one expert Sauron himself, even if it was Miss, *you might not be able to resist him.”

“Hmph! As long as you understand! Go on then, spare no effort to accommodate Suzanne Farms in welcoming Yulianne. In order to protect our future, even if it’s humiliating, even if it’s infuriating, this woman must... bear it!”

Weylin limply gestured, indicating that the manager could take his leave.

And then she secretly let out a sigh.

Weylin was only a young woman of twenty years, and a woman as young as her was solely responsible for the lives of several thousand people. There was also inner turmoil within the farm, and external pressure from Suzanne Farm’s aggressive negotiators. It was really too exhausting...

But no matter how bitter or tiring it was, Weylin still had to persevere. After all, who told her older brother, Count West, to be such a playboy? Besides herself, the farm had no second backbone.

Ai, if only at this time, a reliable man stood forth and bore part of the responsibility with her, how nice it would be!

The heavy snow scattered in all directions, and in the world of ice and snow, Weylin let out a sigh.

……

For the upper levels of the farm, there were already turbulent undercurrents. However, for the slaves of the lower levels, they didn't care much for this, and instead only worried about whether they'd be able to eat their fill the next day.

After sending Weylin off, Lola brought Jiang Nan and the two overseers to an empty space next to the pigsty, then commanded Jiang Nan to assemble all the slaves in charge of caring for the pigs.

During this time, Jiang Nan had also understood the process of Lola's promotion: it turns out, Weylin's personal maid was also taken away by Overseer Ceci, and below her, there was nobody she could use. Thus, Weylin promoted Lola who at least seemed a bit quick-witted, and from that day on, Lola started to assist Weylin in managing the farm. She could be considered as Jiang Nan's immediate superior, and partially his master.

Late at night, at ten, Jiang Nan finally assembled all the slaves in charge of raising the pigs and stood in the empty space, and Lola shouted in declaration before them: “You guys better listen up! From this day forward, I am the manager of affairs of this place, and all of you must obey my orders, understand?!”

A lowborn person’s dream come true!

A number of slaves curled their lips disapprovingly, replying quietly: “We got it already…”

Being unable to get an answer, Lola’s face turned a bit green. Her gaze inspected the crowd as she thought in her heart, “Oh no, all these old foxes of a slave don’t accept me, what should I do? Let the overseers pressure them into submission… No, no, there are too many slaves. If I do that, I might incite rebellion.”

Shifting her eyes, she thought of something: “Right, Miss Weylin said that under these circumstances, I should punish someone as an example and straighten out the strongest slave to establish my authority…”

In the next second, Lola’s eyes settled on Jiang Nan, “Rodi, you get your lowly ass out here!”

Chapter 009: Twenty Seconds, Golden Inch Blade Again

“Alright, alright, whatever you want.”

Jiang Nan shook his head as he stepped out, an expression on his face that said ‘I already knew you were going pick on me in particular’.

For some reasons that Jiang Nan didn’t wish to say, Miss Weylin never ever had a favorable impression of him. As such, she would often seek him out to sort him out, and now that Lola was the manager of affairs, it’d be extremely odd if she didn’t follow in Weylin’s steps and specifically pick on Jiang Nan to sort him out.

“Rodi, right now you are the strongest slave on this farm…”

Lola began imitating the aristocracy’s method of diplomacy, “Abler people do more work, and right now, there isn’t enough manpower to perform labor. Thus, you must take on the responsibility of performing labor with several people… En, from this day onward, you no longer need to raise pigs, and instead have been specially chosen to slaughter pigs! From now on, you must slaughter at least twelve live pigs, understand?”

All the other slaves all inhaled sharply in surprise, their faces expressing, ‘Lola, if you wanted Rodi to die completely, then just say it directly, why beat around the bush’.

To slaughter twelve live pigs in one day was definitely the sort of labor an ordinary slave couldn't complete!

One must know that slaughtering a pig wasn't as simple as 'slitting your own throat'. On West Farms, the precise definition of killing pigs was this: in slaughtering a live pig, one must take out its heart, bones, meat, skin, offals... and such organs had to be completely removed and categorized to be put away into their respective storage areas in the storehouse for the chef to use!

With this kind of procedure, even if it was the chef on the farm whose knife work was the best, he would still only be able to slaughter ten live pigs!

Rodi... this unlucky fellow. Even if he exhausted himself to death, he still wouldn't be able to finish!

Jiang Nan's face also revealed helplessness, "Miss Lola, yesterday's test already proved that I am only an ordinary person! Do you think an ordinary person can finish such a task in one day?"

"I don't care if you can't finish, in any case, you'd better remember this. Rodi, early tomorrow morning, I'm going to come and inspect your performance: if you slaughter one less pig than you are supposed to, then I'll have you whipped twenty times. If you slaughter twice less than required, I'll have you hung at the gate of the farm for three days. If you slaughter three less than you should have..."

Lola aimed her gaze at the distant shanty, “For the sake of your Aunt Alisa, that useless trash that should just die, you had best not slaughter three less than required!”

“You!”

Lola actually made use of Alisa to threaten him! Fury flashed through Jiang Nan, but he still took in a deep breath. As a slave, he had to have the bearing of one, “Alright, I’m a slave. It’s only proper that I exhaust myself to death for *you. Alright, I’ll go slaughter pigs...”

Lola snickered, “You’d better remember~ tomorrow morning at seven, I’m going to inspect your performance!”

The slaves all tilted their heads upward to look at the light of the three moons...

It was already ten in the night, and there were only nine hours left until seven the next morning. To slaughter twelve pigs in nine hours... Ai, Rodi and Alisa were fated to die tomorrow!

When they thought up to here, they expressions they displayed towards Lola suddenly swelled with fear.

At 10:15 p.m., Jiang Nan arrived at the pigpen to prepare to start slaughtering pigs.

Suddenly!

Auntie Alisa hastily crawled inside, “Rodi, Auntie already knows. Lola wants you to slaughter twelve live pigs in one day. This, this, she’s trying to seize the opportunity to lead you to death!”

“Auntie, who said Lola wanted to harm me? Alright, even if she truly wanted to harm me, her decision was the biggest mistake she could have possibly made!”

Jiang Nan definitely didn’t have that innocent face from before, and instead radiated with excitement, with an inconceivable smile on his face.

“Auntie, just rest assured and go back to relax. Slaughtering twelve live pigs in one day, this is definitely a task that I can finish.”

“Oh, so it turns out that you’re able to finish it… Teehee, it’s fine then, it’s fine then!”

Alisa patted her chest in relief when she suddenly took out a bowl of golden porridge from the flat cart, shouting so loud to the point where she might lose her voice, “Auntie can leave, but you absolutely must drink this golden porridge! If you don’t drink it, what if ‘they’ come to kill you? What would I do if you died?!”

Again, it was golden porridge and completely baseless crazy talk…

Jiang Nan only laughed bitterly.

Only after personally seeing that Jiang Nan gulped down the golden porridge did Alisa crawl out in satisfaction.

And Jiang Nan could finally start slaughtering pigs.

“Pft…”

Jiang Nan glanced left and right and saw that there was only him in the vicinity. Therefore, he stealthily drew out his dissecting cane, then took a deep, deep breath.

The pigs seemed to have sensed that they were about to become dead spirits under the blade, and were so afraid that they began to tremble.

At this moment, Jiang Nan unexpectedly didn’t even bind the pig or make use of any assistance. Click, the cane split apart, and an extremely sharp *dissecting knife pierced into a pig’s throat!

Then, all that could be seen was Jiang Nan’s hand flashing like lightning, the knife as though it were flying, as if it was the burgeoning of spring after the rain, one knife wound appearing on the pig’s body one after another. No matter if the incision was wide or narrow or deep or shallow, not even one bit of blood leaked out from the incisions!

And that obese pig went rigid, no longer moving…

Twenty seconds later, click, the dissecting cane returned to its original appearance, and Jiang Nan turned towards the pig while laughing faintly, lightly expelling the stifled breath within his chest, “Hu…”

Rumble!

That pig that was just fully intact a moment ago abruptly fell apart like pouring rain and like the toppling of city walls. A heart, bones, flesh… all sorts of organs fell apart from a whole, and that pig had already been completely butchered!

And that pig’s blood flowed out like an energetic snake, winding around as it followed along the cracks of the blood and bones into a drain on the side…

The pig was dismembered in twenty seconds! It was exactly Jiang Nan’s golden inch blade!

Letting Jiang Nan slaughter pigs… what a joke. Jiang Nan was a person who had learned the art of dismembering from ‘Butcher Ding’s Bull Dismembering’! No matter if it was killing pigs or dismembering bulls or livestock, all these were simply issues that took about as long as it did spark a fire by striking flint!

Not to mention something absolutely wonderful: Rodi’s body, no matter if it was strength, speed, or agility, they had all reached the limits of the human body! With the support of this kind of body, Jiang Nan’s dissecting speed had already reach a degree that he

couldn’t have even hoped for in his past world!

To slaughter twelve pigs, Jiang Nan only needed four minutes!

Lola’s decision was indeed mistaken!

Around an hour later, Jiang Nan had already butchered twelve pigs and put everything away.

But right as he reached the bank of the small creek after leaving the pigpen, “Hold it!”

A gloomy and unfeeling voice that didn’t seem as though it was human abruptly reverberated through the air.

On a big tree some distance away, a black fog shrouded a figure which was currently staring straight at Jiang Nan.

And then this black figure jumped down and walked slowly towards Jiang Nan. Right as the person was walking, the cool breeze of the night scattered the black fog around the figure and the person’s face was revealed.

He wasn’t a person! The muscles and skin on his face had already begun festering. Half of it was rotten, while the other was ghastly bone. Furthermore, an eyeball even toppled down, shockingly hanging on the bare cheek bone of that face.

He seemed like a nightmarish ghost!

……

The night was dark and the wind high, and a nightmarish ghost-looking person suddenly appeared before Jiang Nan. If it was any other person in his place, that person would likely have fainted dead on the spot long ago.

However, Jiang Nan had studied anatomy for tens of years, and had personally created a few things even more horrifying than this black figure before him. In Jiang Nan's mind, the horror factor of this figure… was basically equivalent to that of a cute kitten. ^_^

And Jiang Nan firmly believed that in order to be a model character, he had to maintain the calm attitude of one who 'wouldn't bat an eyelash if even the heavens were to collapse'. Very quickly, he calmed himself down, "Alright, Mr. Stranger, you've blocked my path home. What is your identity?"

"What an interesting young fellow. Human whose expression doesn't even change the slightest bit at my appearance, you are the first!"

The black figure's voice was gloomy as before, but was a bit angrier, "You don't need to know my identity. You only need to know that I recognize you, and understand everything about you. I've come to make a deal with you."

Chapter 010: Dignity And Freedom, Sudden Opportunity!

Deal?!

Jiang Nan suddenly felt that reality was a bit too ridiculous. Imagine his situation a bit: in the middle of the night, a person seeming like a nightmarish ghost obstructs your path, and even tells you that he wants to make a deal with you.

This black figure had slipped through the patrols of the heavily-guarded farm, and had even hid his presence so that no one could detect him. Clearly, he was an important character who possessed mysterious power.

But this kind of important character actually wanted to strike a deal with a slave...

“You think my actions are laughable, right?”

That black figure had caught Jiang Nan’s expression, and said coldly: “No, it is not even one bit laughable! If only I didn’t want something only you could get a hold of, hmph! Do you think I want to lower myself and make a deal with a slave?”

Something only he could get a hold of...

Jiang Nan looked blankly, “Alright, tell me about the deal. Just

first say what you need me to do for you first."

"It's very simple, I need you to do two things:" that black figure extended out a finger, "Number one. Within one month, obtain a detailed map of this farm for me, particularly of 'Mt. Longinus' in the west region of the farm."

Jiang Nan directed his gaze towards the farm's western region.

West Farms was located to the west of Sun City, and if one went further west, they would come across a boundless mountain range. Twenty-three of the tallest mountain peaks of that range formed into what was called 'Mt. Longinus'.

Mt. Longinus was also considered Count West's property, and was an extinct volcano. Just like in the vicinity of other extinct volcanoes, the resources were quite abundant around there.

However, it was due to the abundance of resources around Mt. Longinus that Miss Weylin had labeled the area as top secret information. For those who wanted to obtain a map of Mt. Longinus, the difficulty level was basically equivalent to trying to dig out a piece of Weylin's mind.

"Why do you want a map of Mt. Longinus for?"

Jiang Nan furrowed his eyebrows as he sized this black figure up.

"That is something that does not concern you." The black figure

suddenly let out a queer laugh, and it was even a bit shady, “In any case, I know that if others were to try to get a hold of a map of Mt. Longinus, the difficulty would probably be higher than scaling the heavens, but for you…

Rodi, I know about the matter between you and Miss Weylin. Even if Weylin beats you, curses you, with your relationship with her, as long as you say one sentence, she’ll obediently hand over the map of Mt. Longinus over to you!”

“You don’t need to mention further. Alright, I admit, I can get anything from Weylin’s grasp.”

Once Miss Weylin was mentioned, it seemed as though Jiang Nan had just swallowed a swarm of flies, and he hurriedly cut off the black figure’s words. “Say the second thing then, what else do you need?”

“It’s still not time to reveal the second matter to you, Rodi, but first hear me out. Once you hand over the map to me, I can offer many benefits to you.”

Jiang Nan shrugged his shoulders apathetically, “Oh? Then what benefits can you give me?”

This benefit was…

The black figure suddenly tore Jiang Nan’s collar!

“Mister, your actions are really lacking manners!”

Startled, Jiang Nan was just about to call for help until he followed the black figure’s gaze to his own shoulder.

On Jiang Nan’s shoulder was a symbol similar to a capital ‘W’, and that symbol was the brand of a slave which contained totem power, indicating that Jiang Nan belonged to Count West. It was also because of this mark that as long as Jiang Nan did any sort of action violating the identity of a slave, then he would be captured a mysterious totem master and brought back to be flayed and whipped, to set an example to others!

“This is the benefit that I can offer you!”

The black figure pointed at the mark, “As long as you help me get a hold of Mt. Longinus’ map, I can help you get rid of your slave marking and allow you to become an ordinary person with your own freedom and dignity!”

Jiang Nan’s heartbeat accelerated!

“Furthermore…”

The black figure’s hadn’t finished laying out the terms, and set yet another sentence. This sentence caused Jiang Nan’s rapidly beating heart to begin pounding, frantically pounding, “I can impart the Ghost Mystique Arts to you and give you power! Cultivate you to the point that no matter how the experts of the

continent chase after you to kill you, you can become an independent and unfettered ghost totem master!”

Ghost totem master...

Jiang Nan could no longer utter any words, but he quickly thought of an extremely important problem, “Alright, I admit that your conditions are very enticing, but to me, they have no meaning. In order to become a ghost totem master, one must possess innate talent consisting of a Bridge of Ghosts, but just several days before, that talent test already proved that I am only an ordinary person. I have no innate talent, and even if it’s you, you can’t help me become a ghost totem master!”

“Who says you have no innate ghost talent?!”

The black figure’s tone was precisely the same as Alisa’s, “I also saw the circumstances of the innate talent test. Rodi, the reason that the totem pillars couldn’t properly judge whether you were an ordinary person wasn’t because you had absolutely no innate talent, but because your innate talent was too high! Under the shielding of some things, your innate talent had already exceeded the limits of that totem pillar, forcing it to be unable to judge your circumstances correctly!”

At this, the black figure coldly stared at Jiang Nan for a while, waiting for him to digest his words, and then patted his shoulder: “Rodi, I am a ghost totem master, and I can tell you with my dignity on the line that: you absolutely possess innate ghost talent, and I am able to cultivate you to become a ghost totem master!

How about it? Are you interested in this deal of mine?”

Jiang Nan calmly stared at the black figure.

Truthfully speaking, to accept a stranger’s proposal in the middle of the night was truly moronic.

But...

The opportunity to retrieve his freedom and dignity had come, and he could only decide between taking a risk and accepting, or continuing to be a slave without any dignity that was lower than dogs...

Jiang Nan suddenly believed that he had no other options left.

“Alright, within one month, I’ll acquire Mt. Longinus’ map for you.”

“Deal!”

That black figure unleashed a piercing laughter, then suddenly raised his hand to reveal a dim golden arc. Jiang Nan accepted it into his hands and took a look. It turns out that it was a dim golden sheepskin scroll.

“This is the secret entry manual to become a ‘ghost totem

master’. Study according to the manual, and a month from now, I’ll come to get the map while simultaneously inspecting your cultivating progress! If your progress satisfies me… Hehe, at that time, I’ll tell you the information regarding the second issue.”

A secret ghost manual.

Jiang Nan’s fingertips trembled when he suddenly thought about Sun City’s number one expert, Sauron!

Just several hours before, Sauron had just lightly grabbed him and nearly brought him to extinction. If he was able to successfully train in the arts within the scroll…

Could Sauron still look down on him so easily?!

This wasn’t a scroll, but rather power, to give himself, to give his aunt the power to retrieve their freedom and dignity!

“Within one month, I’ll definitely learn the things of the scroll!”

Jiang Nan resolutely lifted his head, but when he did, he was the only person left in the pigpen! That mysterious black figure had already unknowingly traced away!

Jiang Nan looked at the secret manual within his hands, and an outrageous idea suddenly popped up in his mind.

This black figure knew him, could even tell of the relationship between him and Weylin, the matters that had happened back then which he didn't wish to say...

Could it be that he was someone he knew, and disguised himself in coming over?!

But...

Exactly who was he?!

Jiang Nan thought that something didn't add up, but his gaze was filled with interest, "Alright then, West Farms. Within one of the first thousand-year old totem families, there's actually a ghost totem master hidden among you! There actually exists a ghost totem master by my side?!"

Chapter 011: Fiddling With The Secret Manual, Alisa's Mysterious Ambush!

For the whole night, Jiang Nan immersed himself in deep study of the secret ghost manual.

Of course, he didn't become careless because of it, and before he began to study, he did two things: first, he returned to the shanty to reassure his aunt to go to sleep.

Second, he brought the secret manual to the cellar of where the pig meat was stored. This cellar had already been sealed shut for the winter, so no matter what Jiang Nan did in there, nobody would come to disturb him.

And then within the cellar, Jiang Nan flipped open the secret ghost manual...

"Young fellow, remember this. Everything in nature has a spiritual component, and ghosts are not an exception: if you believe in a natural form of something pertaining to ghosts, and possess a bridge of ghosts as well, then you have a chance to open a road to a ghost totem..."

The secret manual was written by that black figure, so the content's tone naturally struck against Jiang Nan's heart.

And when he flipped it open, the manual gave a brief introduction which explained the basic and fundamental

knowledge of totems. Jiang Nan already understood all of this, so he just jumped ahead to the details, directly looking at the next step.

"Keep in mind, the way of totems consists of a detailed and rigid division of levels..."

"Specifically speaking, the power of totems consists of a total of three stages! Once a person has a bridge of nature and succeeds in communicating with a form of nature, he has stepped into the first stage of the way of totems—Totem Warrior!"

"The stage of Totem Warrior is divided into three ranks: primary, intermediate, superior, and each rank consists of 9 levels. The 1st level is the weakest, and the 9th is the strongest."

"In similar fashion, the second stage is called 'Totem Master', which also consists of 3 ranks and 9 levels per rank. As for the stage above Totem Master, it is called 'Totem King'... Totem Warrior, Totem Master, Totem King. These three phases all in all amount to 3 stages, 9 ranks, and 81 levels of the way of totems!"

Three stages, nine ranks, eighty-one levels, the way of totems...

Jiang Nan suddenly felt as though his mind had a layer of clarity!

He had once heard a person mention that Sun City's expert Sauron was an 'intermediate rank 6th level Carnivorous Flower Totem Warrior'.

When Jiang Nan had first heard this wordy and long-winded way of address, it was simply fog in his mind. However, he now understood that the whole meaning of this way of address was this: Sauron believed in the power of the Carnivorous Flower, and had subsequently trained until the first stage—Totem Warrior stage's intermediate rank, 6th level!

Alright, so Sauron was only a 'Totem Warrior', and in the eyes of genuine experts, only a nobody who couldn't even be considered 'mainstream'.

But a nobody like him... had pressured him to the point that he had shut his eyes and could only await death!

Once he thought about this, there was a faint pain in Jiang Nan's heart.

So it turns out.... that he was not even equal to a nobody! Fine, he was a nobody within an ocean of nobodies, a weakling through and through!

However, tightly gripping the secret manual, a feeling of valor bubbled up from Jiang Nan's heart, "So what if I'm a weakling? I possess the chance to become an expert. Alright, sooner or later, I'll be even stronger than Sauron."

Jiang Nan impatiently looked down in excitement...

“Young fellow, I now eagerly await for you to embark on the way of the ghost totem: 1st step, you must utilize the ‘bridge of ghosts’ within your body and communicate with a natural form having to do with ghosts, deriving power from that form... What are you waiting for, hurry up and find a natural form that has to do with ghosts!”

A form that has to do with ghosts...

Jiang Nan suddenly laughed. The cellar he was in was used to store pig meat, and there were, at the very least, one hundred dead pigs. Wasn’t this a readily available ghost form?

“Alright, since you’ve found a ghost form, then according to the method below, draw power from within it...”

According to what the manual said, Jiang Nan focused and calmed his spirit, closing his eyes to sense the dead pigs within the vicinity.

When he first started, Jiang Nan didn’t feel any particular change, but after his mental state grew more and more focused, suddenly, it seemed as though Jiang Nan’s soul was spinning and the skies and the earth were spinning!

Gradually, this revolving force expanded outside of his body and allowed the air around Jiang Nan to start spinning as well....

Suddenly, those one hundred dead pigs, without the slightest

warning, began to reveal ghastly white, incorporeal bodies one by one, and these apparitions followed with the circulation of air to surround Jiang Nan's body, surging into his body all at once!

"So this is the power of ghosts?"

Jiang Nan was ecstatic, and a turbulent power filled his whole body!

However, Jiang Nan didn't dare to relax, because according to the manual, he had to guide the incorporeal substances within to be absorbed into every nook and cranny of his body.

According to the explanation in the manual, these deathly pale forms were called 'necromantic energy', and were an indication that one had stepped onto the path of ghost totems as well as the basic foundation for cultivating a ghost totem.

(TL: okay... so necromantic/necromancy/necromancer sounds a lot better than 'ghost', but for some unknown reason, when I was comparing the two words and looking in the dictionary, I chose ghost. IDK. let me know below what you think: necromancy or ghost?)

However in Jiang Nan's perspective, using the methodology in wuxia novels to explain 'necromantic energy' was a lot simpler: if one likened a totem master to a martial arts expert, then necromantic energy would be equivalent to the 'inner strength' of a martial arts expert.

To a ghost totem master, the significance of 'necromantic

energy', this kind of inner strength, probably didn't even need to explained much.

"Very good, you've already absorbed the necromantic energy, and have officially stepped onto the path of ghost totems!"

The manual continued to write: "However, it's still not the time for you to be laughing in joy! Young fellow, once you possess necromantic energy, you must swiftly begin guiding the energy..."

Jiang Nan thought this paragraph of words to be quite cryptic and hard to understand, but after a while of contemplation, he understood. It was still better to use the terminology of wuxia novels: after Jiang Nan possessed inner strength, he had to learn how to utilize the inner strength within his body. In other words... 'internal skill'!

(*TL: So apparently, raw pinyin is also an English word (neigong 内功) so it basically refers to "refers to any of a set of Chinese breathing, meditation and spiritual practice disciplines associated with Daoism and especially the Chinese martial arts" – source)

And after that, the manual had a paragraph written on the internal skill of how to utilize the 'necromantic energy'.

"Young fellow, the power of ghosts of my faith as well as the method of how to utilize necromantic energy is called 'Ghost Secrets'... The first secret, Dark Steps, is to circulate the necromantic energy within your body into the flesh of your two legs, thus displaying demonic speed..."

Once Jiang Nan saw this, he couldn't help but eagerly read and follow the instructions at the same time to try out 'Dark Steps'!

However, training wasn't something that could just be done overnight. The explanation within the manual was extremely clear: 'Dark Steps' was used to heighten one's speed. However, even after Jiang Nan had practiced for around four or five hours, he had only increased his speed by three seconds.

"Fine, fine!"

Throwing the secret manual to one side, Jiang Nan lied down on the floor and smacked his forehead in frustration. He had bitterly trained for four to five hours, but had only achieved very little. This was certainly a cause for dejection!

However, Jiang Nan also understood that he wasn't some protagonist in a novel, and wouldn't be able to learn and utilize the power described within the manual in just a few seconds—if he wanted to improve, then he would have to take it slowly and steadily, going at it step by step.

Jiang Nan stood up and was going to pick up the manual to continue training...

But right at that moment, "Teehee, Rodi, what are you doing~?" (TL: Holy crap that's creepy.)

Auntie Alisa abruptly charged into the cellar, and she didn't even

use the flat cart she normally used, but rather her two hands to crawl over! (TL: OKAY THIS IS REALLY CREEPY)

But just the strength of these two hands was able to allow Alisa to crawl at such an unbelievable speed. In a blink's worth of time, she had already rushed before Jiang Nan and grabbed the secret ghost manual!

"Yi? Are you reading a book? Let Auntie see, what kind of book is it~?"

Alisa's head shook and nodded as she took a look at the manual, mumbling to herself in a deranged manner. Clearly, her mental illness had acted up again.

And Jiang Nan was flabbergasted to the point that he couldn't say a word. He was startled and afraid, startled that his aunt could actually possess this kind of speed, and afraid that...

He was screwed, following his dissecting cane, Auntie had even seen the course of his training!

How was he to explain this?!

"Aiya, this is a secret ghost manual, a secret ghost manual!"

After looking at it for a few minutes, Alisa abruptly began crying out repeatedly and shouting in panic, "Rodi, didn't Auntie tell you? You absolutely must not have any kind of relationship with

ghost totems! Once you establish a relationship with ghost totems... Wuwu, for a crippled person like Auntie, it doesn't matter that I am implicated with you and die, but you, you can't die!" Alisa sobbed and wailed madly: "By training with the secret ghost manual, you'll die, you'll die an incredibly miserable death!"

"Moreover..." Alisa seemed as though she was furious, "Who gave you this rotten old thing? Was it that freak who had a hanging eyeball?! That damned freak, what is he giving you this detestable thing for?! Rodi, you need to become a glorious and world-shattering totem master! That freak with the hanging eyeball is protecting you in the darkness, but! He gave you! This detestable object! It absolutely... doesn't measure up to you!

If you want to cultivate, then you must have the best!" At that, Alisa suddenly grabbed a handful of half-congealed pig blood and carelessly smeared it all over the pages of the manual, "This kind of detestable thing can only hold you back! Auntie must destroy it, must destroy it!"

"Auntie, what are you doing?!"

Jiang had finally regained his senses, but while he was in a dazed stupor, he didn't hear even one bit of the phrases like 'protecting you in the darkness', 'detestable thing', 'if you want to cultivate, then you must have the best'!

Jiang Nan hastily attempted to snatch the manual back.

But Alisa's grip was as though she'd never relinquish it even in

death, continuing to obliterate it!

Fairly speaking, based on Jiang Nan's strength, he only needed to push aside Alisa to snatch back the manual, but... doing something like that would definitely hurt Auntie Alisa!

Could Jiang Nan bear to hurt Alisa? This woman was the aunt who had given him a second chance at life!

Looking on helplessly, Jiang Nan could only watch as that manual had been smothered into a filthy mess of a bloody red color...

The opportunity to become an expert as well as the anticipation towards regaining his freedom and dignity... was totally destroyed!

Jiang Nan shut his eyes, already unable to bear to watch anymore.

"Teehee, it's better like this, better like this! Rodi, that detestable object is no more, and only the best of it has been left behind. Auntie's going to go back and rest~!

Remember, if that freak with the hanging eyeball appears, you don't need to mind him. Hmph, he isn't worthy of instructing my Rodi!"

Alisa's monstrous face was brimming with satisfaction as she smiled and let out an odd, gurgling laugh, then she crawled out.

Jiang Nan didn't pay any attention to what his aunt had said though, and simply followed behind Alisa numbly as though he had lost all awareness, wanting to leave the cellar.

However, that secret manual couldn't be left inside the cellar, and had to be taken out to be destroyed. Therefore, before he left the cellar, Jiang Nan who had been scared out of his wits bent down and picked it up.

But right at this moment, Jiang Nan carelessly swept a glance over it and went blank, then made a fist in pleasant surprise, "Calm down, calm down, alright, it's still not hopeless! I still haven't sunk into despair!"

Although the manual had already been smothered into a big mess, it wasn't known whether Alisa had let him off leniently or if it was just coincidence, but there were still many sentences preserved within the manual.

Furthermore, the manual had been written with scarlet red ink. Once it had been smeared with pig blood, the characters had grown extremely blurry. It was so messed up to the point that the scratches of Alisa's fingernails had caused the common language of the Yuanzhi Continent within the manual to become similar to that of complete and traditional characters from the Chinese language. As a result, the original words had yet another layer of meaning to them.

For example, for the introduction of 'Dark Steps', the original

text had been this, “The first secret, Dark Steps, is to circulate the necromantic energy within your body into the flesh of your two legs, thus displaying demonic speed…”

And after it had been changed, the sentences had transformed into this: “The first secret, Dark Steps. Concentrate the necromantic energy at the area between your eyebrows, and then diffuse it to spread it to your shoulders. Let it sink down, and allow your shoulders to become the focal point to guide the energy’s circulation pace instantly…”

“Diffuse the necromantic energy to spread it to the shoulders?”

Looking at these completely altered words, Jiang Nan subconsciously gave it a try.

Suddenly, Jiang Nan felt as though a gale scraped past his ear, and after composing himself, he had already shifted forward five or six meters worth of distance in a flash!

Through Alisa’s adjustments, the Dark Steps which he had just practiced before for around four to five hours without much success had unexpectedly… succeeded in just one second!!!

Chapter 012: Famous Knife Work Chef

Just like Dark Steps, the remainder of the techniques and skills of the ‘Ghost Arts’ had been completely altered. However, similarly, just like how Jiang Nan had learned Dark Steps, he only needed a short six minutes to completely comprehend the rest of the ‘Ghost Arts’!

What needs to be clarified, however, is that through Alisa’s alterations, of the originally viewable number of ‘Ghost Arts’ techniques… Jiang Nan was only able to see the contents of three of them.

The first was the ‘Dark Steps’ that boosted one’s speed.

The second, Skeletal Poison Blade, involved the bones of the body abruptly expanding outwards into sharp points to kill one’s enemy. Simultaneously, the skeletal lances were additionally coated with acute, deathly poison, capable of corroding and dissolving one’s enemies.

The third was called ‘Death Armor’, which was a method of instantly strengthening one’s skin, allowing one to have an extra layer of protection with its solid shell.

(*TL: the character for the word death can also mean rigid, impenetrable, etc.)

One technique boosted speed, another offense, and another defense. Although these three were quite simple, after stripping these techniques to the very essence of them, were they not the

most practical, most effective techniques?

While practicing these three techniques, a huge question appeared in Jiang Nan's heart.

The original manual which he had bitterly practiced to no avail that had been totally transformed after his aunt's random smearing, this... was it mere coincidence, or had his aunt purposely done so?

If she had truly done so deliberately: to be able to amend an entire manual in just a few minutes, just how boundless was Auntie's knowledge of totems?!

Could it be that Auntie was once a powerful totem master?

No, that wasn't possible! If Auntie was a powerful totem master, how could she have degraded into a crippled slave?!

Moreover, if Auntie truly possessed totem power and wanted to help him cultivate, then she didn't have to use this kind of method! Based on the relationship between him and her, there was no need for her to put on a facade of mental derangement. Was it not enough to just directly say a few words to him?

Once he thought about this, Jiang Nan felt as though his aunt hadn't done this deliberately.

But... if it was a coincidence, wasn't this too much of a

coincidence?!

Jiang Nan repeatedly smacked his forehead, unable to understand exactly what was the matter.

However, what he could be certain about was that through Alisa's amendments, the quality of the manual had definitely increased by at several hundred levels!

"Alright, alright, Auntie truly makes a person baffled..."

Jiang Nan shrugged his shoulders helplessly. He wanted to swiftly find his aunt to make things clear, but at this moment, there were still a few sentences in the manual that he had not looked over, and content that he still hadn't read.

Auntie was in the shant anyway, and he could ask her anytime. However, this secret ghost manual was a hot potato, and definitely had to be quickly covered and promptly destroyed!

"Young fellow, by the time you've read these words, you've probably already reached the level of a 'primary rank Ghost Totem Warrior', and based on the current level of the stage you're at, there are two things you must keep in mind..."

"First, the way of totems consists of 9 ranks, and each individual rank has its own distinct characteristic: the characteristic of primary rank Totem Warriors are that... they are able to take on the natural form of their faith!"

This point was very easy to understand. Suppose a person possessed wolf totem power. Consequently, at the level of primary rank Totem Warrior, they would be able to morph into a wolfman!

Again, if one possessed fire totem power, then their bodies could ignite into flame.

However...

If those who had wolf faiths could turn into wolf men, then since Jiang Nan's was a ghost faith... could it be that as a primary rank Totem Warrior, he would become a dead man?!

Jiang Nan was nearly scared out of his skin when he thought of this.

However, the following paragraphs of the manual said this: "Keke, you're not wrong! As a Ghost Totem Warrior, you can morph into a dead man at the primary rank, then resurrected!"

"Dying and resurrecting, young fellow, is exactly what ghost totem masters have as a powerful advantage! On the other hand, once you become a dead person, there are still many more benefits, which you can slowly understand through real combat..."

"However, there is something you must take note of: that you can die and resurrect does not equate to being incapable of dying. If your opponent's level is that of an 'intermediate rank Totem

Warrior' or higher, then he can genuinely kill you!"

Totem Warriors at the intermediate rank or higher... such as Sun City's number one expert, Sauron... were capable of truly killing him!

Jiang Nan firmly lodged this warning in his heart, and then his gaze landed on the second matter.

"You must remember this second matter: Young fellow, you should know the attitude various empires within the continent hold against ghost totem masters. Once you demonstrate your ghost powers before the people of the world, it will attract an endless amount of people chasing to kill you! Therefore, in order to allow the power of ghosts to be demonstrated openly and honorably before the people of this world, my predecessor researched a method of 'concealing one's identity through sacrificial battle strength', which is called 'Radiance Technique'!"

After giving a brief introduction to the Radiance Technique, the manual continued to mention: "Utilizing 'Radiance Technique' before fighting, coupled along with combat techniques, one can conceal the exuding ghost aura. Although this will decrease your battle power to only a fraction of it, it can allow you to seem like you possess the faith of ordinary Totem Warriors..."

"However, remember this: the Radiance Technique is not invincible, and primary rank Totem King experts possess a sort of obscure and mysterious power that allows them to pick up on your ghost aura!"

At this, the secret ghost manual concluded!

Jiang Nan stared at this section with his heart aflutter: he had already become a primary rank Totem Warrior, but the primary rank was divided into 9 levels. Exactly what level was he at currently?!

It was possible that the answer to this question had never even been touched upon in the manual, yet also possible that it had been, but had been destroyed by Alisa.

It seems that if he wanted to know his true level, he'd have to go test it out in real combat!

However, regardless of anything, he had already successfully practiced the secret manual, so this hot potato could disappear!

Jiang Nan lifted his head and shut his eyes, immediately recalling the contents of the manual, and then, he slowly raised up his right hand.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

Three sharp, skeletal lances popped out from Jiang Nan's back, piercing through the secret manual!

Immediately after, these three skeletal lances discharged a layer

of dark purple liquid, and when the sheepskin scroll came into contact with it, it began to rapidly corrode and dissolve. In the blink of an eye, it had vanished into wisps of dull purple mist.

It was precisely [Skeletal Poison Blade]!

……

When Jiang Nan emerged from the cellar, it was already white as a fish's belly in the eastern sky, and the snow which had fallen for a night had already ceased.

Looking out into the distance, there was a blanket of snow around 1 chi (⅓ meter) deep. The entire farm was a vast expanse of snow, icicles hanging from the trees, an occasional rabbit bouncing away below a tree. This beautiful scenery confirmed one old saying: a timely snowfall promises a fruitful year.

However, Jiang Nan didn't have any interest in appreciating the view because there were too many questions bubbling about in his heart that he wanted to ask Alisa.

"Hu!"

He inhaled a breath of biting cold air and exhaled in satisfaction, then turned and ran towards his shanty.

But right at this moment, Miss Weylin, Lola, as well as several overseers had turned around from the direction of the manor by

coincidence, and thus called Jiang Nan over.

“Rodi, a lowly slave like you is actually here?”

When Lola’s gaze fell on Jiang Nan, she was stunned for a bit, but then she suddenly pointed at his nose and shouted: “Rodi, you lowlife, this young miss told you to slaughter twelve pigs before 7 a.m., have you already finished? And you dare to lazily take a stroll?”

“Calm down, calm down…”

“Calm down your ass!” Lola chewed him out: “You don’t need to say it. A lowlife like you definitely didn’t finish your work. Just you wait, I’m going to go check on your performance and keep to my word from yesterday: if you kill one less pig than required, I’ll lash you twenty times. Two less pigs than required, I’ll beat you to death. Three less pigs than required… I, I’ll also have Alisa thrashed to death!”

“Alright, alright, I welcome you to go inspect my work, honorable Miss Lola!”

Jiang Nan spread out his hands in an indifferent manner. In any case, he had already slaughtered twelve pigs, no matter how Lola inspected!

Jiang Nan didn’t even care about the matter, but Lola had her own thoughts. Darting a glance at Miss Weylin, she suddenly

covered her mouth, “Aiya, look at how this lowlife Rodi is behaving. I’m afraid that he killed even less than three huh? What should I do? I didn’t say anything about the punishment for killing four pigs less than required or five pigs less than required!” She obsequiously brushing away the snow on Weylin’s clothes, “What do you say Miss… in the case that Rodi has killed four less pigs than required? How should I punish him?”

“You lowly servant girl, screw off and think about it yourself! This woman doesn’t have time for these things!”

Pa, pa, pa!

Weylin looked extremely irritable, and not only did she scold and shout at Lola, she had even taken out her whip and lashed Lola’s face three times.

“Yes, yes, it was only Lola’s own thoughts…”

Lola covered the marks on her face, so afraid that she didn’t dare to even breathe. However, very quickly, she laughed as though nothing had happened, “Heh, got it! If Rodi killed four less than required, I’ll cut off four of his fingers. Five less than required, and I’ll cut off five fingers… If Rodi’s ten fingers aren’t enough, I’ll, I’ll move on to Alisa’s fingers!”

As she was speaking, Lola didn’t dare to look at Weylin’s expression, a pair of venomous eyes rigidly fixed upon Jiang Nan.

Clearly, she had vented all her anger from getting whipped onto Jiang Nan.

At this time, there was a stranger within Weylin's group of people who was indignant with the Lola's manner who was just a slave, and furiously spoke: "What a malicious method! Miss Weylin, is this how you manage the slaves on your farm? This is equivalent to driving people to their deaths!"

The person who spoke was dressed in a white apron, wore an oilcloth hat, and was leaning as he carried a bag of various kitchen knives. Clearly, he was a knife work chef.

Jiang Nan suddenly felt as though this man was a bit familiar.

Right, right, Jiang Nan suddenly recalled: still remember the story of Yulianne? When the minstrel had finished telling his story, a stalwart and brawny man had leaped out, claiming that he 'only needed half an hour to dismember an ox'. This had resulted with the minstrel ridiculing and mocking him, and he had thus become Sun City's recent resident laughingstock.

And that brawny man was this person.

"How this woman manages her slaves is not something you need to blather about!"

Weylin slanted a glance towards him.

This muscleman glared at Weylin, and both people fuming and seething, they turned and ignored each other.

At this time, the group had already arrived in the vicinity of the pigpen, and Weylin roared: “All you slaves in charge of pig-slaughtering, you get out here!”

Good heavens! The tigress Weylin was actually personally waking them up?!

The slaves within their shanties immediately leaped up as though they were frogs injected with chicken blood. However, within just tens of seconds, sixty-five slaves in charge of slaughtering pigs had all rushed before Weylin.

(*TL: Supposedly in history, a way of keeping a person healthy was taking the blood of a rooster and injecting it into a person. When it happened, the person’s face would turn red, and supposedly have their ‘vitality revived’.)

Weylin didn’t seem to be in the mood for nonsense, so she randomly gestured at the muscleman, “This man’s name is Eddy (尤迪), and he’s an okay knife work chef. Right now, Eddy is going to select a few of you slaves who are good with the knife to help him with a few things. Whoever thinks their knife work is good enough and fast enough, step out. This woman has a reward for you!”

“Eddy? Could it be that he’s the number one knife work chef of the four greatest within the empire? The Eddy who can dismember a live pig in just half an hour?”

“Heavens, so you are Mr. Eddy! My father had once personally seen you dismember a live pig. You, you... how about you pick me!”

The slaves talked over each other in excitement!

Every profession had its legends, and without a doubt, in the perspectives of those pig-slaughterer slaves, Eddy, who was one of the four greatest knife work chefs in the empire, was a legendary idol!

However...

Why did one of the four greatest knife work chefs in the empire come to West Farms to look for pig-slaughterer slaves?

Jiang Nan was in the middle of a trance, but at this moment, Lola cracked her whip and barked, “Rodi, stop staring foolishly! Mr. Eddy wants to choose the slaves with the quickest knife-work, and you don’t possess the qualifications! Go, take me to go inspect your performance!”

Chapter 013: Knife Work Feast

“Alright, I welcome you to take a look…”

Leading Lola, Jiang Nan walked into the pigpen where he had slaughtered the pigs.

Meanwhile, Weylin kept staring at Eddy with a gaze full of despise and loathing, hating that she couldn’t slaughter this damned Eddy right there on the spot.

Yesterday, Sauron used forcefully made Weylin accept unequal conditions, and had even made her agree that West Farms would obey all orders of Suzanne Farms for the sake of welcoming Yulianne.

And just before, Eddy had represented Suzanne Farms to pass on an ‘insulting’ order.

……

A few minutes before, Eddy had just barged into Weylin’s living room without being shown in and offhandedly said, “Miss Weylin, for the sake of welcoming Yulianne, Suzanne Farms has asked that you cooperate with me to do something of paramount importance.”

“This woman has no time to listen to your long-winded speech, if you have sh** to say, then let it spew!”

When Weylin saw Eddy's careless manner, she instantly radiated fiery rage. On top of that, that repeated 'Asks you to cooperate'... F***, Suzanne Farms truly took her to be servant to be shouted at?

Therefore, Weylin's tone was also very rude!

"You! You!" Eddy was furious to the point that he stamped on the ground and roared, "Motherf***! Weylin, clean your mouth a bit! When this me was cooking for the imperial household, even the Emperor wasn't so overbearing!"

(*TL: okay so the cuss is basically a phrase in Sichuan dialect that has no real meaning, but is basically vulgar and swearing language to express one's anger/surprise at something they didn't expect to happen)

"So this woman's overbearing, so what?!" With a 'whoosh', Weylin stood up.

Seeing the sparks fly in every direction between the two, they nearly got into a fight. Finally, a number of prudent elderly managers stepped out and settled the matter between the two of them, at least making it so that they both sat back down.

"Say it, what does this woman need to do?"

"Suzanne Farm's lord has said: right now, Sun City awaits Yulianne's arrival to welcome her! And as she is the quickest knife work chef on the continent, it has been said that any male whose

blade speed is quicker than hers may take her as a wife... Therefore, Suzanne Farms believes that in order to curry favor with Yulianne, then we must think of a way to connect with this interest of hers!"

As Eddy spoke these words demandingly, he looked up towards the ceiling, not even looking at Weylin, "For this reason, Suzanne Farm's lord has decided to allow Yulianne to conduct a grand competition that will be called the 'Knife Work Welcoming Feast'!"

Speaking up to here, Eddy halted. Clearly, he was waiting for Weylin's question, exactly what did 'knife work feast' mean.

He didn't think that Weylin would just flip through a romance novel and totally ignore him.

And so these two people stayed at deadlock with each other.

At the very end, it was only after those experienced managers stepped out to help smooth things out did Eddy reluctantly give an explanation: "The meaning of knife work feast is to choose three hundred people skilled at knife work, and when Yulianne arrives, conduct a grand performance of knife work art after inviting her to be a special guest judge. This is what is called the Knife Work Feast! And as for me, I am this performance's general supervisor!" Eddy proudly pointed at his chest, "Miss Weylin, I'm currently selecting people skilled at knife-work, and while this desolate Sun City isn't lacking, there's no knife-workers..."

His tone grew warm, "Hehe, do you have any knife work experts

here? If you do, can you call them out so I can test them a bit?”

As Eddy said this, he squeezed out a full smile. Right now, his attitude could simply be considered as ‘lowering one’s voice and stifling one’s anger’.

But Weylin…

“Oh, so it turns out that a sh** person like you came to borrow some people…”

Weylin nodded in a detached manner, and then continued flipping through her romance novels.

One minute later…

Two minutes later…

At the three-minute mark, Weylin was still indifferent and unconcerned, and Eddy could no longer take it. At the end of his rope, he blew up, “Weylin, what exactly do you mean by this? I want to borrow some of your knife work specialists! If you have them, then call them out and let me test a number of them! If you don’t, then speak clearly! That you don’t even say one word, do you even think I exist?!”

After this, Eddy turned around and walked away, “Whatever, forget about it, I’m no longer going to stand being mistreated this way here! In my perspective, there aren’t even any knife work

specialists here, so all I have to do is just not choose any here."

"Stop!"

Weylin abruptly stood up, "Who said this woman had no knife work specialists? Messenger, assemble all the knife work specialists and let Eddy test as he pleases!"

……

In fact, Weylin's way of thinking was quite simple. She disapproved of the Suzanne Farms behind Eddy's figure, so she purposely faked a face of detachment to insult Eddy.

However, Weylin didn't want to offend Suzanne Farms over something as small as this, so she promptly called out all the knife-workers.

However, Weylin would never have predicted even in a thousand years that what would happen next would be like a slap in her face, shaming her to the point that couldn't show her face, and only wanted to scuttle into a crack in the ground and hide!

Weylin called out all the knife-workers on the farm, but Eddy simply took a glance at their fingers and repeatedly shook his head, "This won't do, they're not qualified! They can't even be considered to be knife work specialists, and aren't worthy of joining the knife-work team! Weylin, don't you have any better knife-workers?!"

These knife workers actually didn't meet the standards?!

Weylin could no longer hold back her expression and roared furiously: "Go, call out this woman's private chef! Eddy, *my personal chef was hired for ten gold coins and is a noble chef, and will definitely pass your test!"

Eddy smirked, and when the private chef came out, he told him to dismember a live pig under his inspection, "Nope, this won't do, this fellow isn't qualified either! Miss weylin, you really don't have any knife work specialists here? If you don't, then stop wasting my time!"

Weylin's face was ashen to the point that she couldn't even say one word.

This personal chef of hers was already the best chef on the farm, and she wouldn't be able to find any better.

Once she thought of this, Weylin's face flushed with heat. Just before, she had relentlessly mocked and cursed at Eddy, taking the matter to the extreme! However, after insulting him so, she couldn't bring out any knife workers....

It was truly shameful, shameful even to her grandmother!

At this moment, Weylin even thought, F***, if anyone is able to step out as a knife work specialist and recover some face for *me,

this woman, this woman is even okay with marrying him!

As Weylin burned with shame under Eddy's gleeful look, the clever Lola stepped out and stealthily tugged on Weylin's sleeve, "Miss, there are many slaves who have slaughtered pigs and learned some knife work for quite a number of years... it might be that they may be able to pass Eddy's test!"

Weylin's eyes lit up. Not bad, then there might be an expert hidden within those slaves who've helped slaughter pigs. She laughed heartily: "Eddy, you don't even put my own personal chef in your eyes? That's fine, then this woman will throw caution to the wind and take you to see true knife work specialists!"

Like this, a trail of people came to the vicinity of the pigpen, coincidentally running into Jiang Nan.

.....

After Jiang Nan left, Eddy ordered sixty-five slaves to arrange themselves on an empty expanse of land near the pigs and have them slaughter a live pig.

Eddy looked at their work one by one, and for several of the slaves within the group, he couldn't help but impatiently wave his hand, "Screw off, screw off, screw off! This kind of knife work even dares to exhibit and disgrace itself?!"

Weylin's face turned a bit unsightly.

After half a minute, Eddy snatched up the butcher knives of twenty-something slaves, speaking distastefully: “No need to continue, just looking at your blade methods, none of you even the least bit qualified to join the performance group!”

Weylin’s expression grew ashen!

A minute later, Eddy drove away twenty-some slaves. At this point in time, the number of slaves who were qualified to test only amounted to three.

And Weylin subconsciously rubbed her face. F***, I didn’t think that there wouldn’t be even one slave that wouldn’t fall short... Ah *my reputation!

“Useless trash, you three beat it as well!”

At this time, Eddy eliminated the last three slaves, then smirked as he walked towards Weylin, “Miss Weylin, this is the ‘true’ knife work specialists you speak of? I’m still better off going to other people’s farms to select people, excuse me!”

Weylin’s face was totally defeated!

One of the overseers who had come along with Weylin couldn’t take that she had been insulted and retorted: “Mr. Eddy, it seems that you’re purposely making it hard for our house’s Miss! The knife work of these slaves are already pretty good, on what basis

are you eliminating them?!”

“On what basis? Hmph, just based on my two eyes!”

Eddy pointed at his two eyes and said: “It is true that I don’t look favorably at your house’s Miss, but I have never deceived people in regards to cooking! The one standard for choosing a good knife-worker is this: to be able to dismember a pig within an hour. Look at these slaves, which of them can do this?!”

The overseer had nothing to say.

Eddy truly wasn’t purposely making it hard for people, but rather that the slaves on the farm really couldn’t meet the standard!

Eddy forcefully spat, then turned and left.

But right at this moment, Lola walked over with a face full of disbelief, her steps a bit lifeless as she helplessly said to Weylin: “Miss…”

“What do you want?! Go punish Rodi, I’m not in the mood to care for a lowly servant!”

Weylin’s mood was extremely horrible, and she thoughtlessly began scolding.

“But, but…”

Lola hesitated for a long while, then scowled miserably and said: “But I didn’t baselessly sort Rodi out! Rodi, this lowlife actually, actually slaughtered twelve pigs within nine hours!”

From last night at ten to this morning at seven, it was a total of nine hours.

Then based on that, Jiang Nan only needed forty-five minutes to slaughter a pig!

If one also counted the fact that the pigpen needed to be cleaned, the pig meat sorted and put away into storage, exhaustion, and multiple rest breaks, these bits of time… It seemed, for Jiang Nan to slaughter an entire pig… he only needed half an hour?!

Of course, these were only the speculations of the people present and not Jiang Nan’s actual ability.

However, just based on the inferred time, it was enough to make one of the four greatest knife-work chefs on the continent gape: “What did you say? There’s a person here who can dismember a pig in half an hour? Motherf***, *!@$#^$$%, get him out here!”

“Mister, were you looking for me?”

Jiang Nan emerged from the pigpen, a vacant look on his face.

Chapter 014: To Be A Model Character, I Don't Deceive Anybody, Truly

Everyone's gazes concentrated on Jiang Nan. For a while, everybody's expressions expressed astonishment or disbelief, but nobody knew what to say.

Such an ordinary slave could demonstrate the speed of a knife work chef at the peak of his occupation?

After several seconds of silence, Weylin was the first to react, and she knitted her brows, saying: "Rodi, for a lowlife like you to slaughter a pig, how much time do you need?"

"Half an hour."

Jiang Nan didn't tell the truth. He wasn't an idiot, and knew that with his ordinary appearance, to slaughter a pig in half an hour was already an inconceivably 'miraculous' speed. However, a miracle wasn't necessarily impossible. Hence, when Jiang Nan said that he only needed half an hour, some people may have been shocked, others incredulous, but they definitely recognized it... Actually, this fact was still believable.

On the other hand, if Jiang Nan had truthfully spoken that he only needed twenty seconds...

The people would think like this: slaughtering a pig in twenty seconds is definitely not something a human can do, Rodi

definitely has a loose screw in his head! Under the influence of this way of thinking, people might use any kind of method to investigate. For example, a severe flogging, hypnosis, taking hold of Alisa to blackmail him... In any case, nothing good would result out of him saying so.

The tallest trees of the forest are the first to get ravaged by the wind, Jiang Nan had to hide his ability!

“Half an hour?”

Weylin darted a glance towards Eddy. Wasn’t this person who was considered one of the top four knife work chefs on the continent the one who was known to ‘be able to dismember a pig in half an hour’!

So it turns out... Haha, this woman has a knife work specialist no inferior to you!

Weylin laughed heartily in excitement, but she was a bit skeptical, so she yelled out some instructions: “Bring over a live pig. Rodi, slaughter it here for me to see! Hmph, and let this lowlife Eddy get a look too!”

“Right, right, hurry up and show me!”

Eddy rushed over as though he didn’t even hear Weylin’s insults. He simultaneously ran and dug a stopwatch out of his bag, putting his finger on the button in preparation to begin timing.

Jiang Nan, however, didn't know of the relationship between Weylin and Eddy, and looked towards the crowd of people in a baffled manner. However, no person was willing to explain what had happened to a slave.

Very quickly, a live pig was brought over and bound onto a wooden stick, and a complete set of pig butchering tools were set beside it.

"Alright, then I'll butcher it!"

Jiang Nan grabbed a butcher knife and used a speed that seemed incredibly fast to others, but was actually quite slow compared to his normal level by several times, and pierced through the pig's throat.

Just by seeing this action. Eddy's eyes had already lit up, "Not bad. You're quick, you're technique is precise. Youngster, you are a pig butchering specialist!"

Weylin tilted her chin up and gleefully began bragging, "He's considered a specialist! What a pity, a pity that several days ago, headquarters took away many of our slaves, of which twenty-something were even stronger than this lowlife, Rodi!"

With Eddy's expression of praise, everybody already believed Jiang Nan because he really did have the ability to butcher a pig within half an hour. However, a question arose in Weylin's heart.

This lowlife's knife work... where did he learn it from?

Weylin immediately asked Rodi him this question, "Rodi, where did you learn your knife work from?"

"My knife work... alright, Miss Weylin, do you remember 'Old Pico'?"

Weylin's eyes expressed a vacant look and looked towards Lola. Clearly, she didn't remember who Old Pico was.

Lola hastily answered: "Miss, Old Pico was also a slave on this farm. In his generation, his family focused on butchering pigs, and he was this farm's number one knife work chef."

"My knife work was imparted to me by Old Pico."

Jiang Nan simultaneously slaughtered the pig and diligently gave them an explanation: "Miss Weylin, there's some shady business that goes on secretly that you're not clear on. For example, slaves the butcher pigs, they often use their own knife work and secretly stash away some pig meat... Yes, Old Pico studied and researched an extremely fantastic blade technique for the purpose of stealing pig meat: For every pig he slaughtered, he'd stash away a quarter of kilogram of pig meat!

And three months before, on the night of the Tianyuan Festival, I brought pigs to Old Pico on your orders... On that night, I stumbled

across Old Pico's stolen pig meat secret! Originally, I wanted to immediately report it to an overseer to get a reward, but Old Pico said to me..."

Jiang Nan repeatedly shook his head in frustration, "Old Pico actually enticed me! He said, as long as I kept it a secret, then he would pass on his blade technique to me. Miss, you've also seen how exquisite Old Pico's knife work was. Not only would I be able to pilfer pig meat, as long as I learned this blade technique, I had the chance of getting promoted from a pig herder to a pig butcher... This kind of gift was definitely more generous than what the overseer would've given me, so I admit, I didn't resist the temptation. I've done wrong..."

"So you just helped Old Pico protect his secret, and he... passed on his blade technique to you?" Weylin frowned as she stared at Jiang Nan.

"Exactly so!"

Jiang Nan shrugged his shoulders, his face seeming to say, 'what I've said is the truth. Professor Jiang is a model character, and has never deceived anybody'.

"How about Old Pico? Where is he now? Call him out to verify Rodi's words!"

"Miss Weylin, I'm very sorry." Jiang Nan's grieved expression revealed helplessness, "Half a month ago... Old Pico already died!"

Dead without any kind of verification!

Weylin contemplated for a while, then slightly knit her eyebrows, angrily responding: “That’s not right! Since Old Pico had this kind of blade technique, then how come he never demonstrated it before? Why did he keep parading as an ordinary cook?”

Jiang Nan answered without even turning his head: “These kinds of situations are very common. If you don’t believe me, then you can go ask Miss Lola.”

Weylin looked at Lola with displeasure.

Lola hastily looked down, “Miss, I don’t dare to lie to you. These kinds of situations occur very often: many slaves are clearly capable of performing around fifteen tasks worth of labor in a day, but simply demonstrate that they are only able to complete ten... Slaves say that the more capability you demonstrate, then, then the duties you allocate to them are even heavier. In order to rest more... they, they can’t help but hide their abilities.”

“This is the reason why Old Pico didn’t dare to reveal his knife work!” Jiang Nan spoke: “Miss Weylin, if not for Lola forcing me to the extreme, I wouldn’t have revealed my own knife work either.”

“Damned lowlives!”

Weylin pulverized a large rock into fragments in a fit of anger. She had so confidently managed the farm for so many years and possessed plenty of experience, never even thinking that this kind of thing was happening right before her eyes! This... these f***ing bastards!

However, after crushing that rock, Weylin had already basically believed Jiang Nan's lie.

Time passed by in minutes and seconds as Weylin asked a few more questions with Jiang Nan answering them one by one. In the mean time, he also finished butchering the pig with a speed that he could barely tolerate.

"Miss Weylin, slaughtering a pig in half an hour, I've done so."

Jiang Nan carelessly threw away the butcher knife and then, as if doing so subconsciously like a habit, he easily took a few fragments of pig meat and stuffed them into his pocket!

A quarter of a kilogram's worth!

And the remainder of the pig meat had no visible holes or gaps as though nothing had ever been taken.

He had proven his lie that 'Old Pico's blade technique' was for the purpose of pilfering pig meat!

Seeing Jiang Nan's little gesture, Weylin itched to whip him to

death, but she had already thoroughly believed his nonsense!

Therefore, Weylin placed her hands on her hips as she looked at Eddy with contempt, speaking with immense satisfaction: “Eddy, is the knife work of this woman’s slave still passable?”

“Far beyond passable. This slave’s knife work is already no inferior to mine…”

Eddy licked his dry lips, then belted out laughter as he slapped Jiang Nan on the shoulder: “Rodi is it? Come with me, the Knife Work Feast needs experts like you!”

Knife Work Feast?!

Jiang Nan immediately went blank, “Miss Weylin, the meaning of this mister’s words…”

Weylin didn’t even have the slightest intention of answering. She looked at Eddy in satisfaction and gleefully waved her hand, then turned and reprimanded Jiang Nan, “What are you standing there dazed for! Hurry up and get out of my farm with Eddy, you lowlife. Without his permission, you are not permitted to return!”

Lola also mocked Jiang Nan in a peculiarly: “Rodi, don’t think that just because you have good knife work that your opinions matter! You do whatever the Miss allows you to do, what are you questioning it for?!? Don’t forget, you’re simply the lowest of the lowest of slaves, and you only have a duty to obey orders, not the

authority to question things, understand?”

“Alright, I’m a slave, I must unconditionally obey your commands…”

Jiang Nan inhaled a deep breath, “However, Miss Weylin, you must at least give me time to say goodbye to my aunt!”

If he just left now, then when would he have the chance to ask Auntie about the secret of altering the secret manual?!

Furthermore, Jiang Nan had agreed to acquire the map of ‘Mt. Longinus’ for the freak with the hanging eye. If he left with Eddy, then where would he get such a map?

Chapter 015: Totem Arena

Weylin didn't bother giving Jiang Nan any time to bid farewell to his aunt. At 7:35 pm, he finished butchering the pig, and at 7:40 pm, he followed Eddy towards the farm gate.

Additionally, Weylin, Lola, three managers, as well as twenty overseers were set out along with them.

Originally, Eddy had only cared about squabbling with Weylin. Only when it was time to depart did he remember an extremely important matter: besides the Knife Work Feast, Suzanne Farm's lord had also prepared a series of welcoming ceremonies for Yulianne. In order to unify all the divisions, she (the Lord) had requested of all the powers within Sun City to send out representatives to attend a meeting in Sun City's 'Elegant Forest Restaurant'.

At first, Weylin couldn't be bothered to go meet Suzanne Farm's lord and only planned on sending two managers for show. However, she hadn't considered the possibility of Eddy suddenly remembering a matter of paramount importance when they were about to leave.

Eddy studied Jiang Nan's two hands and thought in his heart, Hey, I'm so damn confused. This fellow whose knife work is pretty good is only a slave? As long as he's a slave... he can be bought and sold!

This fellow's knife work is so good, why wouldn't I buy him and

make him into my culinary assistant?!

Thinking up until here, Eddy cordially said to Weylin, “Miss Weylin, I’m a rough person. Don’t you mind those unpleasant words I said just before!” After apologizing, he spoke even more politely and pointed at Jiang Nan, saying: “How about you sell this slave? I can see that he possesses quite a bit of culinary talent, and I’d like to buy him to become my assistant…”

In anyone’s perspective, Eddy’s words didn’t have any sort of issue. On the contrary, he had already accorded Weylin sufficient face. However, those polite words of his seemed to have irritated Weylin’s sorest spot, and rather ignited her bad temper as if lighting a barrel of gunpowder.

“You want to buy Rodi?! He’s not for sale! I definitely won’t sell him! Even if you were to hand Suzanne Farms over to me, I still wouldn’t sell him!”

Saying this, Weylin took out her whip and fiercely said: “Eddy, you son of a b****, if you even think about touching Rodi, as a ‘primary rank 9th level Snow Swallow Totem Warrior’, I’ll duel with you!”

“You, you… to go this far! I, I just want to buy a single slave!”

Getting cursed at in such a manner, Eddy huffily pulled Jiang Nan onto the road.

As for Weylin, she planted her hands on her hips and abruptly said after pondering a bit: “Lola, gather my bags. This woman’s going to personally accompany Eddy to Sun City!”

Lola went blank, “Miss, it’s enough to just send two managers for this issue, you don’t have to…”

Weylin’s gaze was firm, answering as though responding to Lola, yet also seeming as though explaining to herself, “Eddy, this dogsh** son of a b**** has already locked on to Rodi. If I don’t go, then he can deceive Rodi to go with him at any time…. Rodi is mine, nobody should even think of taking him away! Lola, what are you spacing out for? Hurry up and get my bags ready!”

On the other side, after Jiang Nan had seen Weylin’s odd display, he actually reacted with an even stranger response. He squatted underneath a large tree and incessantly knocked his head against it, “Calm down, for the sake of maintaining a model character, I must calm down…”

That same day, at three in the afternoon, a party of people entered Sun City.

And at this time, Jiang Nan had already found out about the past incident and realized how Suzanne Farms had oppressed his house’s young miss. However, as a slave, he didn’t have the least qualification to care about these upper level matters. His mind was still preoccupied with his aunt as well as the map of ‘Mt. Longinus’.

At this point in time, he could no longer ask his aunt about this issue. It was still better for him to take care of this map business...

On one hand, Jiang Nan contemplated in his mind, while on the other, he distractedly drooped his head towards the ground as he rushed to travel.

After the heavy snowfall, Sun City was entirely enveloped in sheet of silvery white. Various roads were all thickly covered with a slurry of muddy snow, making it hard to walk, and the store canopies facing towards the street all hung with icicles. Some door hinges had even frozen over with a layer of ice.

Roughly speaking, the current temperature was at least twenty degrees below zero!

But even in this vile weather, Sun City was still bustling with activity. Pedestrians walked up and down the streets ceaselessly, and every person was animated and excited as though a great festivity had occurred.

Lola looked on curiously and asked: “Miss, recently there’s been no sort of holidays. Why are the people in Sun City behaving as though there’s a festival going on?”

“En? What did you say?”

Weylin’s gaze had been lingering on Jiang Nan for the entire time, and she seemed as though she hadn’t heard Lola’s question.

Instead, Eddy responded to Lola's question from the side: "You guys don't know? In order to welcome Yulianne, this year's 'Totem Arena' has been scheduled earlier in advance."

Totem Arena?!

The Jiang Nan who was already a Ghost Totem Warrior lifted his head, his consciousness tuning in when he heard these words.

Similar to the Olympics in the past world, on the Yuanzhi Continent, the 'Totem Arena' was a competition that served as the main entertainment for the people of this world.

As its name implies, the 'Totem' arena was a dueling arena that only totem masters could participate in.

The origin of the Totem Arena was already quite ancient: it was said that long ago, around a millennium past, a person by the name of 'Tully' was passionately obsessed with fighting competitively with other people and *comparing notes. As such, he invested huge sum of money to host a grand fighting arena. Tully had even spread rumors that whoever seized the championship of the fighting arena would be granted his entire fortune!

Tully's wealth was a terrifyingly astronomical sum, and for the sake of snatching this gigantic amount of money, nearly all the totem masters on the continent came to compete.

Finally, after three months of contending, a person by the name

of ‘Mangu’ had consecutively won 937 matches. He had fought marvelously well and was publicly accounted as the number on expert under the sky at that time!

However, the Mangu who won did not actually take away Tully’s wealth. He instead said, “Through all these matches in the arena this time, I’ve broken through the bottleneck I have been stuck at for twenty years. I’ve successfully advanced to become a ‘superior rank Totem King’! Everybody has also benefited considerably through these clashes. Mr. Tully’s real purpose for hosting the arena is rather to serve as a shortcut for totem masters like me! For this purpose, I am willing to offer all of my rewards to make this Totem Arena become a customary practice. Via the Totem Arena, the strength of Yuanzhi Continent’s totem masters can improve even further!”

Just like that, Mangu at once began auctioning off all of the prizes bestowed on him. After that, he used this generous sum to form something similar to an olympic committee... the ‘Totem Advancement Association’.

The following years after the group’s formation, the ‘Totem Advancement Association’ gathered every few years to organize a Totem Arena. Through those fighting competitions, many totem masters indeed improved and enhanced their strength, breaking through to reach even higher levels.

Up until the present day, the Totem Arena had already become the continent’s publicly recognized legal battle ground. Almost every city had a ‘Totem Advancement Association’ division, and for large cities, there would be spectacular arena fights every day.

As for smaller cities like Sun City, a small-scale Totem Arena would be hosted once per year.

Additionally, there was yet another very, very interesting thing regarding the Totem Arena.

As long as a totem master participated in the fighting arena, then the 'Totem Advancement Association' would record that totem master's name into a book, thus comparing that totem master's strength with other totem masters. This record was equivalent to a 'ranking of strength'... a Totem Ranking!

In the region of Sun City, Sauron was number one on the 'Totem Ranking'. As such, he was publicly acclaimed as Sun City's number one expert!

As for Weylin, she was ranked tenth on Sun City's Totem Ranking, and thus could be considered strong enough to oppress most of the field's experts.

All of this information was what Jiang Nan understood in regards to the Totem Arena as a whole.

.....

In the midst of Jiang Nan's astonishment, an impudent voice resounded from the side of the road, "Yi, Miss Weylin actually came into the city?"

Jiang Nan turned his head to look. Sun City's first ranker on the 'Totem Rank', Sauron, was surrounded by a group of people and had walked over.

Looking where they were heading, it seemed that they were also heading over to 'Elegant Forest Restaurant' to assemble.

There was even a youth walking beside Sauron. The youth's figure was extremely tall, his four limbs slender and lanky with a handsome appearance. However, he hunched over as he walked, his dark green eyes carrying a hint of rapacity within their gloomy appearance, similar to a starved and scavenging wolf!

When this youth's gaze landed on Weylin, Sun City's most beautiful woman, his eyes immediately lit up as he laughed heartily and said: "What a beautiful lady! Sauron, is this young lady's name called Weylin?"

"Correct, this is Miss Weylin of West Farms, a primary rank 9th level Snow Swallow Totem Warrior..."

Sauron glanced at the youth, then looked again at Weylin as he suddenly revealed a ruminating smile and said an additional phrase that clearly contained some sort of provocation, "Miss Weylin is certainly Sun City's most beautiful woman."

Sweeping across the ground like an unsheathed sword, the youth's expression further revealed a lecherous light that caused people's heart to palpitate as he came before Weylin and slightly bowed, "Miss Weylin, this lowly Vic..."

“Get lost, *I’m not in the mood to hear your name!”

Chapter 016: Appointed Fight

Although this youth's tone was appropriately humble, his expression was extremely irritating. On top of the fact that this youth was the friend of Sauron, Weylin's archenemy, she naturally would not treat him well.

Let alone the fact that Weylin opened her mouth and cursed at any person.

The youth slowly and deliberately lifted his head, "Get lost... Did you just tell me to get lost?"

Suddenly, he abruptly flung his head back and looked down on Weylin with his towering height, saying in a dark voice: "I have faith in the power of the wolf! Weylin, you had better clean up that mouth! The price of insulting the Wolf Totem is not something you can bear!"

Wolf Totem?

Weylin smirked and laughed, immediately connecting the dots in regards to this youth's identity, "This woman was still wondering which little doggie was barking~ It turns out that it's Reyne Mountain's wolf cub, Victor!"

Pausing, Weylin lifted her head and stared at Victor furiously, "So this woman cursed you! What can you do about it?!"

Once these words slipped out, not just Lola and the managers, but even Jiang Nan furrowed his eyebrows. Miss Weylin's temper... Ai, she really can't restrain herself a bit?

On the contrary, Eddy was on the side with an expression that said, "I knew early on that Weylin, this woman, would definitely be like this' as he shrugged and laughed coldly.

"Weylin!"

Victor barked angrily and was about to take action to harm her. However, he was not a foppish young master who would make a scene after eating his fill: once he remembered that Weylin was a member of the Rheinhardt Clan and that she represented a faction of power in Sun City, he really did not need to hold a death grudge over just a simple sentence. Victor only laughed coldly, "I can be counted to have experienced Miss Weylin's temper! Today, I still have some business to take care of, so I'll chat with Miss Weylin another day!"

After saying so, he retreated to one side.

This action caused everybody at the scene to silently praise him in their hearts. Although Young Master Victor was of a lecherous nature, he understood his opportunities and the moments he should have some restraint. He was really quite versatile, a terrifying person!

On the other hand, Weylin let out a sigh that said she could no longer be bothered. Victor had already submitted, and if she

continued to curse him, it was no longer insulting Victor himself but rather insulting her own identity and mind.

Therefore, Weylin just glared at Victor, then called out to Jiang Nan and the others to continue walking.

It seemed as though this little disturbance was about to settle...

But right at this moment, Sauron abruptly spoke out as if he wanted to act the mediator: “Aiya, Young Master Victor, Miss Weylin just has this kind of temper. Don’t you be offended! Miss Weylin, you truly should fix that temper of yours a bit.”

Laughing, Sauron continued to speak: “Why is it necessary to start pointing and cursing right when you meet? Even if you two really started fighting, you two couldn’t really get into a scuffle on the road, right? That kind of action would only serve as a joke to those peasants. Both of your identities are noble, so if you want to fight... Hah, how convenient that this year’s Totem Arena has been set early in advance. How about we head to the Totem Arena to fight a bit?”

Weylin stared blankly. It was clear just by looking at Sauron that he was trying to instigate both sides to participate in a match!

Victor was also looking at Sauron with suspicion.

Acting as if he did not see their two gazes, Sauron continued speaking: “Miss Weylin was assigned by the Rheinhardt Clan as its

representative for Sun City. Victor is also a well-known figure of Reyne Mountain's younger generation... Rheinhardt and Reyne Mountain, exactly who is stronger and who is weaker... Tsk tsk, this is really quite an interesting subject!"

What malicious words! With just a few words, Sauron had brought the argument between the two to reflect the opposing strengths of the powers backing the two up. This way, these two people would have to have a contest to determine each other's strength for the sake of their clans' reputations!

As expected, when Victor heard that this argument of theirs had already been escalated to involve the reputations of their clans, he couldn't help but laugh viciously and correct himself: "Not bad. The Totem Arena is a place that will not harm any relationships... Weylin, we no longer have to chat another day. You have a Snow Swallow faith. Does the Swallow dare to challenge the proud Wolf?!"

"Why wouldn't it dare?!"

At this moment, Weylin represented the Rheinhardt Clan and naturally wouldn't back down, "Once the sun sets along the mountains, we'll have a fight to the death on the Totem Arena!"

At Weylin's declaration, West Farm's team of people promptly rushed towards the arena in the northeastern direction.

Jiang Nan naturally went with them.

But not long after Weylin had left, Victor's expression suddenly shifted and he looked sidelong at Sauron with loathing in his eyes. An air of wildness and ferocity billowed out from his body!

In fact, 'Reyne Mountain' was not a faction of power in the territory of Sun City. However, for the sake of seeing Yulianne's charm or vying for a chance to view the 'Tortoiseshell of Destiny', many powers thousands of miles away had sent people to rush over to Sun City.

Victor's circumstances were also like this.

Victor's father had friendly relations with Suzanne Farm's lord, and if he wanted to take care of some business in Sun City, there was an unquestionable link to the assistance from Sun City's central power, Suzanne Farms. As such, Victor went to look for Sauron right after arriving in Sun City.

But what Victor had not thought of was: right as he had found Sauron, Miss Weylin had also arrived, and Sauron unexpectedly still... provoked them to get into a martial competition?!

For the sake of his clan's reputation as well as Weylin's crappy temper, Victor accepted the challenge. However, after reflecting on it in detail after the fact, he grew angrier the more he thought about it... Damn it! He had been used by Sauron as a freely hired thug!

As such, he shouted viciously: "Sauron, I've come this time as a representative of 'Reyne Mountain' to gain Yulianne's favor, not to

help you fight! Why exactly have you incited me and Weylin to fight? Is it on the basis that I don't dare to have a fallout with you, or on the basis that Reyne Mountain is afraid of your Sommer Clan?! The Wolf... fears nothing!"

"Young Master Victor, calm down!"

Sauron responded calmly and leisurely as he explained to Victor with a smiling face: "I'm definitely not trying to ruin the relationship between you and Weylin. It's just that... Ah, Young Master, you also know that my lord has already gathered all the powers within Sun City. However, there are still many who openly submit, but are secretly defiant. They voice their agreement externally, but internally rebel... Of these insubordinate powers, Weylin is the biggest one!" At this, a cold gleam flashed across Sauron's eyes although his face maintained an elegant smile: "That I've asked you, Young Master Victor, to take action, is in preparation to teach Weylin a lesson while demonstrating my clan's power at the same time."

"You bastard! How come you don't take action yourself then? Based on your strength, don't tell me you can't beat Weylin?"

"Correct. I can, in fact, do it myself. But... the fact that I've let the opportunity to fight her go to you is out of consideration for you, Young Master Victor!"

Sauron smiled even more familiarly, "As everybody knows, Weylin is ranked 10th on the Totem Rank in Sun City. In today's fight, if you, Young Master, prevail over Weylin, then that is equivalent to becoming one of Sun City's top ten experts. You will

have the capital to establish yourself in Sun City! For the sake of a ranking within the top ten, don't you agree... that this fight is worth it?!"

The top ten experts...

When he heard this phrase, Victor's eyes lit up, "What you say makes sense!

For the Wolf's honor and dignity, after this fight, I will replace Weylin as one of Sun City's top ten experts!"

.....

The Totem Arena was located in the northeast corner of Sun City and covered an area the size of 52 hectares, but it was only a small-scale arena that was temporarily constructed there.

From the entrance's poster, the stadium mainly had four arenas. Of these four, Arena #2, #3, and #4 were ordinary arenas, and as long as one's strength was at the Totem Warrior stage, they could compete there.

As for Arena #1, it was called the 'Peak Arena' or the 'Experts Arena'. As the names imply, Arena #1 was made especially for experts. Those who wanted to compete... were required to possess the strength of one of the top ten experts in Sun City or more!

Weylin went directly to Arena #1!

However, when Weylin arrived at the arena's entrance, she suddenly discovered that the atmosphere within the group was a bit strange.

Common sense would say that if one's miss was going to go fight in the arena, no matter if their words were sincere or only flattery, the subordinates ought to say a few obligatory but encouraging statements similar to 'Beat him in one go!" or "Miss is formidable!"

However, on the entire way there, Lola, the three managers, and the twenty overseers only hung their head in silence. None of them spoke even one word.

Weylin was a bit curious in her heart, and while ordering Lola to help her register, she said in a displeased manner: "How come none of you are speaking anymore? Are you mute?"

The three managers exchanged glances between them, and the oldest one stepped out with a bitter laugh: "Miss, there are a few words we would like to say, but we are afraid... we are afraid that you won't be very happy."

"If you have fart, then let it out!"

"Ai!" The elderly manager let out a sigh and spoke in a soft voice: "Miss, what Sauron said was not wrong. *Your temper... truly should be fixed!"

The manager lowered his head: “Just then, *you set a duel with Victor just because of a few words, is it worth it! Even if you are a primary rank 9th level Totem Warrior and are confident in being able to beat Victor, you need to think about it! Regardless of whether or not you prevail over Victor, does it benefit you or our farm? On the contrary, you will only offend Reyne Mountain who stands behind Victor and invite a powerful enemy that our farm cannot withstand!” Letting out a sigh, the elderly manager pounded on his chest and urged Weylin: “Miss, I’ve watched over you since you were a child. Even if you flare up at me, I still have to say this—Fix your temper, or else you will bring disaster upon yourself sooner or later!”

Another manager also commented: “Miss, forgive my words, but if you can… please cancel this fight!”

“You! You! You!”

Weylin continuously pointed at each of the three managers’ noses as she spoke in fury: “You all assume that I am a woman who has no brain, that what I just did was an enormous mistake?”

The managers only hid their heads in their chests as they maintained their silence. Clearly, they were trying to demonstrate through their actions, Miss Weylin, in our eyes, *you are truly a fool with a big chest but no brain!

“Ha, haha! *I even did this to satisfy you, yet you all f***ing grumble about me?!”

Clearly understanding everybody's thoughts, Weylin's hands fisted tightly as she laughed uproariously in grief and indignation.

Suddenly, she grabbed Jiang Nan's collar and angrily asked: "Rodi, does a lowly slave like you look at me this way too?"

Chapter 017: Alias: Professor

When she said these words, Weylin's expression was quite complicated. Her large, vivid eyes was one tenth anger, two tenths grievance, and seven tenths... entreaty!

Correct, entreaty! Weylin seemed to be like a child that had been misunderstood and was earnestly looking for someone she could rely on who could understand her. She stared at Jiang Nan imploringly as if waiting for him to say in a loud voice, "Beautiful Miss Weylin, my opinion differs from these fools. There is definitely a reason behind *your actions, truly, I understand you..."

But!

How come she always looked for Jiang Nan, a slave, to hear his thoughts?!

For a time, everybody's gazes flitted uncertainly between Weylin and Jiang Nan.

It was a pity that Jiang Nan failed to meet their expectations: "Weylin, I am a slave, alright. I do not have the qualifications to assess your behavior."

"You damned piece of sh**, is this woman asking you for an honest opinion such a difficult request?!"

Pa!

Weylin drew out her whip and lashed near the top of Jiang Nan's head, then rushed towards the arena without turning back, "Forget it, this woman can't be bothered to explain to you all! The duel will continue as arranged. Whoever wants to watch, follow me. If you don't... then get lost!"

The elderly managers let out a sigh and led everybody to follow behind Weylin.

By this time, Lola had already helped Weylin register, and a number of arena managers hastily rushed over. Once they saw Weylin, they acted as though they had seen a close relative, "Aiya, Miss Weylin is personally fighting! This is truly Sun City's greatest pleasure. Please, this way. Everything has already been arranged for *you. After one hour, the match will officially start!"

Weylin was still sulking and didn't even acknowledge the managers, simply walking directly in.

The managers did not get angry either, and just continued to welcome Lola and the rest with smiling faces.

Their attitudes definitely weren't strange: one must know, at the same time the Totem Arena freely offered their arena... they were also earning money from selling tickets!

Weylin was one of Sun City's top ten fighters, and if any of the

top ten came to fight, spectators would come thronging over. One could say that Weylin was the managers' livelihood, their goddess of wealth!

In support of this kind of attitude, the managers hastily ran to attend to Weylin and bow to her as their faces brimmed with enthusiastic and cordial smiles.

But just as Jiang Nan started passing through, the managers' smiles abruptly melted off their faces!

One manager looked at Jiang Nan's clothes and his expression suddenly changed as he stretched his hand out to block Jiang Nan, coldly saying: "Halt, you cannot go in!"

Jiang Nan stared blankly, "Mister, how come?"

Just as Weylin had not bothered to interact with the managers just then, the manager felt disinclined to acknowledge Jiang Nan. Thud, thud. He knocked on the entrance's info board, then pointed at a paragraph of words on it.

"For customers carrying VIP tickets, please go towards passage #3.... For customers carrying first-class tickets, please walk through passage #5... For customers carrying standard tickets, please walk through the corridor..."

These lines of words were standard guidelines, and they indicated which ways the customers should go depending on their

status. Jiang Nan swept over it with a glance, but truly did not understand how these words held any relationship with him not being allowed in.

“Mister, you should switch to an easier method of explaining so I can understand...”

Jiang Nan shook his head as he said: “Alright, I still don’t get it!”

“A lowly slave like you still doesn’t understand?!”

The manager had not even answered when Lola had already shouted from the side. She pointed at the info board and said loudly: “Look clearly at what the poster says—Customer! People!”

Lola was angry to the point that her face had grown bright red, as if Jiang Nan had shamed her outside in front of other people. She first spoke towards the manager, “This slave of mine does not understand the rules, *you do not ever need to mind him.” She then turned her head and began berating Jiang Nan, “Do you understand now? The Totem Arena is for people to watch. Does a piece of sh** like you count as a person? Slaves and livestock... are prohibited from entering the arena!”

Slaves and livestock...

Jiang Nan’s left hand faintly trembled, and a segment of [Skeletal Poison Blade] nearly pierced outwards.

Slaves and livestock!

Was there anything more humiliating than this?! Slaves and livestock were prohibited from entering. F***, *I'm not even equal to a dog?!

"Alright, I'm a slave. Fine, I don't have the right to enjoy the dignity of a human!"

Jiang Nan calmly chuckled, then bowed and said, "Then, esteemed Miss Lola, I'll just wait for *you here, okay?"

"You shameful thing. Properly wait here!"

Lola harrumphed, then turned to walk into the arena.

But just in the moment Lola turned around, Jiang Nan lowered his head as a sliver of ferocity flashed across his eyes!

This time, Jiang Nan had been truly and thoroughly infuriated!

Slaves and livestock couldn't enter?! For the sake of that tiny bit of dignity remaining in the depths of his heart, Jiang Nan told himself, "I should not receive this kind of humiliation, I'm already a Totem Warrior... F***, *I will definitely enter into the arena and retrieve the dignity that is rightfully mine!"

After he said this, Jiang Nan came to a secluded corner and began

to survey the arena's surroundings.

He wanted to find a way to infiltrate the arena!

Ten-some seconds later, Jiang Nan's eyes lit up. He saw that on the info board, there was yet another line of words on the bottom, "For customers carrying standard tickets, please walk through the corridor... Fighters who are participating in the Totem Arena, please contact a manager. There is a special passage for competitors."

A passage for competitors!

If he anonymously attended the Totem Arena and acquired the identity of a competitor, could it be... that he could enter the arena?

Furthermore, he was already a primary rank Totem Warrior, but he still did not know what level he was ultimately at within the primary rank. As long as he anonymously participated, could he not find a suitable opponent and fight, thus accurately confirming his own level?!

When he thought up to here, Jiang Nan rubbed the bridge of his nose as if he was back in his old world, challenging those experts and scholarly authorities and slightly adjusting those golden-rimmed glasses...

.....

Several minutes later, Jiang Nan dressed himself up into a different appearance: he wore a blackish gray short-sleeved top that was full of patches and an earthen yellow skirt on his lower body. On his head, he wore a cornerless, golden mask, and even that eye-catching long, silvery hair of his had been dyed into a hideous green color!

After that, he looked at his appearance in a sink and didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

Alright, this appearance was indeed a bit ridiculous, but who could understand the bitterness it represented? Jiang Nan was only a slave. Where could he find the money to buy lavish equipment. Just for these things, he had fumbled and dug through a pile of trash with his own two hands in the bitter cold weather of negative twenty degrees!

However, it was fortunate that although his appearance was laughable, it was enough to conceal Jiang Nan's identity.

On the other hand, the slave clothing he had changed out of could not be discarded, so Jiang Nan hid them into the depths of the trash pile.

At 4:30 in the afternoon, there was still half an hour before Weylin's match, and Jiang Nan once again came to the arena's entrance.

It was still those exact same managers, and when they saw Jiang

Nan's strange attire, they all walked inside without a word. Only one stepped out and angrily commanded: "Halt. This is not a place to beg for food. Get lost!"

"Mister, judging by appearances is not very good behavior."

Jiang Nan shook his finger and then knocked on the entrances info board.

Dong, dong!

Just like how the manager had done just before.

But this time, when it was the manager's turn, he did not understand it either, "Did you not hear me? Quickly…"

"Mister, your comprehension ability disappoints me." Jiang Nan's finger slid over the word 'competitor'. At this moment, it seemed as though he had retrieved that pride as a professor in his past world, and he felt as though he was again challenging those specialists and scholarly authorities. He chuckled calmly and said: "Alright. I came to participate in the arena."

"Even you wish to participate in the Totem Arena? Hah…!"

The manager roared with laughter, but just as the laughter escaped his mouth, he forcefully choked it back down!

Following Jiang Nan's finger tip, the inch thick info board... had been thoroughly torn and ripped through!

"I welcome *you to participate in the Totem Arena!"

The manager hastily grew extremely respectful.

Following that, he took out a small, white-skinned booklet from his chest area. One one hand, he wrote on the book, and on the other, he deferentially said: "Esteemed totem master, according to the arena's regulations, I must record your details. Might I ask what your name is? As well as your totem level?"

Looking at Jiang Nan's golden mask, he abruptly understood, "Oh, I apologize. It looks like you wish to anonymously participate in the Totem Arena. This is also permissible, and I will no longer inquire any further into your business. However, in order to make it more convenient to revise the 'Totem Ranking', *you must at least provide an alias that can represent your identity."

After he said this, he placed the small record before Jiang Nan and asked him to write down his alias.

Without even thinking, Jiang Nan wrote down a word in large letters... Professor!

"Professor?"

The manager looked blankly, then dashed into the arena and

yelled out: “Today, the alias of competitor #37 who will enter the arena is… Professor!”

Chapter 018: The Title As One Of The Top Ten Experts

Different from how Weylin could enjoy the privilege of using Arena #1, the guide simply gave Jiang Nan a golden emblem signifying his identity as a competitor, then led him to Arena #3.

Arena #3 mainly hosted ordinary fights that were more of the sparring nature, and people could participate once they became a totem warrior. One could say that experts almost never appeared in this arena, which was quite suitable for Jiang Nan to test his strength.

In other words, Arena #3 was used especially for ‘low-level’ masters.

After Jiang Nan arrived, the competition had already been in session for a long time. A person was currently standing in the arena and looking down disdainfully at the spectators with a cold eye!

This person’s height was a full two meters, with a bald head, bloodshot pupils, a bared top, and militaristic leg guards wrapped around in chains. On his chest which bulged with muscle, three horizontal and four vertical malevolent scars were visible, for a total of seven scars.

After being swept by this man’s eyes, a number of spectators were frightened to the point that they had begun trembling. However, after regaining their composure, they started to cheer

madly.

They were too excited!

A few minutes before Jiang Nan had entered, something extremely fierce and invigorating had occurred in Arena #3.

At that time, a match had just concluded. A totem warrior had prevailed over his opponent and was in the midst of revelling in the crowd's cheers.

At this moment, the supervisor in charge of this match walked into the arena and announced in a clear voice, "Mr. Link from the Sheffield Clan has already obtained six successive victories! I don't need to say much about his strength. Competitors, do any of you wish to challenge Lord Link?"

When a competitor challenged an arena's master, the loser would leave while the winner would remain in the arena. This was the most basic method of competing in the Totem Arena.

Seeing that the competitors below the stage were not very pumped up, the supervisor said enthusiastically: "Ladies and gentlemen, today is the first opening day of the Totem Arena. According to regulations, the arena rewards for the first day are the most valuable!"

Following the supervisor's words, a number of guards pushed in a large cart around the arena. On it was a two meter high black

cage which was draped over with red cloth, and nobody knew what was inside.

"This will be the reward for today's victor!"

The supervisor spoke with a laugh: "Right now, I still don't want to announce what this mysterious good is. However, I pledge with my twenty years worth of experience as an arena supervisor that within these twenty years, I have never before seen such a precious good!" After saying so, he pointed at the arena master, Link, then suddenly spoke a few decibels higher, "Esteemed totem warriors, as long as one of you defeats Link and maintains guard of the arena before the sky darkens, you are today's winner! You, will be able to take away this most mysterious, most valuable reward!"

A mysterious and valuable reward...

Something unknown would always provoke the curiosity of humanity. Beneath the arena, there were still seven competitors, and six of them abruptly stood up!

The supervisor chuckled in satisfaction, "Good! These six competitors, which of you wishes to challenge Lord Link first?"

"I dislike extraneous words. If there's one, then there's just one. All of you come at me!"

Suddenly, a hoarse voice sounded forth.

Startled, the supervisor assumed that it was the arena's Link who said these brazen words. However, if one looked a little closer, listened a little deeper... This wasn't right, this was not the sound of Lord Link's voice!

Right at this moment!

Boom!

A muscular man descended from the sky like an iron tower. Bald with bloodshot eyes, he dropped down next to Link and his massive figure smashing into the arena caused it to faintly tremble. Before anyone could react, five fingers like a steel bar... had already clamped onto Link's neck!

Link was, after all, a veteran totem warrior. Once he saw that the muscular man had seized his throat and exposed his two ribs as an opening, he swiftly lifted his leg and rammed towards the man's underarm with his knee.

Yet just with this, Link felt as though he had rammed into an iron panel. With a 'crack', he actually shattered his on kneecap!

"To me, this degree of strength... is useless!"

The muscular man barked lightly. Twisting his wrist, like a hammer pounding iron, 'BAM', he smashed Link onto the arena floor!

Flesh flew for a time...

Those who stepped onto the totem arena needed to be aware of the possibility of the death, was the current consensus of the other totem masters.

“Good heavens, it’s Hank! Hank actually came to Arena #3!”

At this moment, a sharp-eyed spectator already recognized the identity of this muscular man, and the arena’s supervisor was already flabbergasted to the point that he was speechless.

The supervisor was very aware: this muscular man was named Hank, and had faith in the power of steel. He was a Primary-rank 9th level Steel Totem Warrior.

However, Hank was ranked ninth on the Totem Rank in Sun City, and as such was considered one of Sun City’s top ten experts. Based on reason, this kind of expert would be competing in Arena #1. He definitely would not appear in Arena #3 which was prepared for low level fighters!

Why did Hank come to Arena #3?

At this moment, Hank twisted his neck as continuous sounds of joints cracking rang out. Proudly looking down at the other competitors beneath the stage, he said, “I’ve said it already. All of you come at me! What are you waiting for?”

The supervisor finally came to his senses and said in a strained voice: “Lord Hank, you are one of the top ten experts. Is there a need to bother about Arena #3’s competitors… Right, Miss Weylin is currently at Arena #1. If you are interested…”

“Today I want to be in Arena #3 and try out these puny little fellows!”

Hank swept a frosty glance over the supervisor. As he spoke, his blood red eyes unconsciously swivelled about and looked towards that black cage.

In truth, Hank knew what the ‘mysterious reward’ was, and came to aim for that reward!

Or else, he would not have lowered himself to come to this ‘low-leveled’ Arena #3.

Seeing Hank’s small action, the other competitors also understood his aim. One of them cupped their hands together, “Lord Hank, since *you have taken an interest in this reward, then I’ll do this simple favor. This competition… I forfeit!”

Another also spoke out: “Hah, I know my worth. Lord Hank, I won’t fight over this reward with you!”

In the blink of an eye, the rest of the seven competitors retreated and left the arena one by one, leaving only Hank in Arena #3.

Hank sent a haughty look towards the supervisor.

The supervisor hastily spoke: “Lord Hank, according to the Totem Arena’s regulations, only when the sky has turned dark and no one has defeated *you can *y-you take the reward and go.”

Damn him. Arena #1 was the experts arena. Who in Arena #3 could defeat Hank? It looked like… that reward which would cause any man’s heart to palpitate… would definitely belong to him!

As the supervisor thought this over, he also called people to come and clean up Link’s corpse. Yet right at this moment, an arena guide led Jiang Nan into the arena.

Previously, the guide had been managing some trifling affairs outside the arena so he was not aware of what had happened inside. As such, he simply entered the arena and shouted without even taking a second look: “Competitor #37 entering the arena! Alias: Professor! May the supervisor arrange a match!!!”

There was still another competitor?!

Hank’s back was currently facing the entrance as he greedily fixed his eyes on that black cage, complaining impatiently: “Arrange what? There’s only me left now. If he wants to fight, then fight with me! If not… f*** off!”

The guide tilted his head upwards and suddenly felt as though Hank’s back was a bit familiar. However, he did not spot Hank’s

distinguishing blood-red eyes so he never even thought that one of the top ten experts had actually appeared in Arena #3.

He turned and spoke to Jiang Nan: “Lord Professor, there is only this one competitor left. *You…”

“Since there’s only this one left, well then, I’ll just fight with him.”

Jiang Nan blurted these words out without even thinking. The humiliation even worse than a dog or pig as well as the doubts that had been weighing on his mind about his strength had already burdened his heart for much too long. Regardless of whether he won or lost, Jiang Nan urgently needed a match in which he could fight to his heart’s content!

Furthermore, Jiang Nan had only ever heard of Hank’s name, but never actually seen him. He just considered this iron-tower like muscular man as an ordinary competitor at Arena #3.

Therefore, Jiang Nan walked into the arena with a faint smile on his face and even directed a cupped greeting in politeness to Hank, “This is my first time participating in the Totem Arena. If I lack any manners, please excuse me. Mister… what is your name?”

“Dead people don’t need to know my name!”

Hank’s gaze constantly lingered on that black cage, hating that he couldn’t quickly grab the reward within into his chest. In his

perspective, Jiang Nan's abrupt appearance was undoubtedly provoking his title as one of the top ten experts!

After this loud shout, Hank turned his whole body like a huge windmill and sent an iron fist smashing towards Jiang Nan's face!

"Steel Totem Secret Art, 24th of Iron Roar's Hundred Forms, Massive Windmill!"

A knowledgeable spectator exclaimed in excitement.

Chapter 019: Tearing Bones

For a time, Jiang Nan was a flabbergasted.

He's just going to directly start attacking?!

But... this was really f***ing.... awesome!

Looking at Hank's fists, the two hands covered in Jiang Nan's sleeves swiftly made a seal... Suddenly, he abruptly raised his two hands.

His two hands motioning, one could only see a golden radiance burgeoning in them. The golden light soon began to spread out starting from Jiang Nan's arms, and in the blink of an eye, it had completely suffused throughout his whole body.

This was the Radiance Technique used especially for concealing his ghost aura!

However, from the spectator's point of view, a body covering golden light was precisely the representation of a 'Primary-rank Strength Totem Warrior'. A spectator yelled out loudly: "It's a Strength Totem! Hah, we'll have something fun to watch: one Steel Faith, the other Strength Faith. This time, it'll be a full-blown force-type duel!"

Another spectator shouted: "Professor, go all out against him, all out!"

Jiang Nan didn't disappoint the crowd. He was just in the middle of appraising his opponent's strength.

Aiming at the muscular man's fist, Jiang Nan condensed his 'necromantic energy' onto his right fist. Letting out a deep shout, his fist directly met the muscular man's fist!

Boom!

As if an iron hammer had smashed onto a steel plate, the two people's fists had barely touched when a series of sparks began to shoot out.

Immediately after, two human figures suddenly separated, retreating towards the arena's two sides.

Jiang Nan had taken the initiative to part away first. All he felt was the universe's massive power heading towards him, colliding against him and making him dazed. To keep from giving the opponent a second consecutive chance, he proactively retreated to a corner of the arena.

But Hank did not have such an easy time as Jiang Nan.

Truthfully speaking, Hank's strength exceeded Jiang Nan's by one level at the minimum. However, for the sake of increasing the degree of his offensive power, he had spun and struck his fist out.

For this type of attacking method, if Hank's opponent wasn't equal to Jiang Nan, Hank's fist would have directly pulverized his opponent's head. However, although Jiang Nan's strength could not match him, there was a limited difference. Hence, when Hank and Jiang Nan's fists crashed together, the spinning quality did not stop for a time and unexpectedly caused Hank's legs to stagger and half-kneel onto the ground.

"Delightful, delightful! There's actually a person who can beat Hank into kneeling!"

"Hank, stand up! Keep fighting! You're one of Sun City's top ten experts!"

The spectators continuously hooted and cheered, but they didn't know the real facts. They assumed that Jiang Nan had held the advantage in this first bout.

In truth, Jiang Nan was already seeing stars while his ears rung, to the point that he didn't even hear the audience call out, the title of 'one of the top ten experts'.

This man's strength was truly too powerful!

Jiang Nan fiercely bit the tip of his tongue, forcing his mind to clear up. He spoke to himself, "No can do. I can't fight against this freak using strength. Based on this degree of strength, after ten odd bouts, I'll definitely be beat to the point that I'll vomit blood..."

Just as Jiang Nan was pondering battle tactics, Hank had secretly suffered loss. Flying into rage out of humiliation, he had already leapt up and begun charging towards Jiang Nan with an iron fist.

Hank's strength was incomparably tyrannical, yet his speed was not slow either. With just a moment's thought, Jiang Nan discovered that the iron fist had smashed into his chest.

Boom, boom, boom!

How could Jiang Nan's amateurish capabilities compare with the extensive experience of one of the top ten experts? With one strike, Hank got the upper hand. Repeatedly attacking with his left and right fists, he directed a series of combined fists towards Jiang Nan's upper body.

Unable to dodge, Jiang Nan could only bitterly attempt to resist these for the sake of his life...

.....

After half a minute, Hank had already whipped out 157 fists. Jiang Nan didn't even know how many he had blocked or deflected. What he did know was that he felt a burning and agonizing pain in his chest and forehead and as though his bones were about to shatter.

Actually though, if Jiang Nan had used all of his fighting capabilities and utilized 'Skeletal Poison Blade', 'Dark Steps', and

‘Death Armor’, even if he wasn’t Hank’s match, he still wouldn’t have been beaten into such a sorry state.

However, just look at the distinguishing characteristics of these methods. For example, Skeletal Poison Blade allowed skeletal lances to grow out from Jiang Nan’s entire body. At the same time, it was also accompanied by poison. If Jiang Nan used these methods, even before Hank would’ve won, the arena’s soldiers would have probably already shouted ‘Kill the Ghost Totem’ and chopped him into mincemeat.

The Radiance Technique was a method of ‘sacrificing battle capability’ to keep his identity secret!

Ai, it seems as though his strength was still no good. He was actually beaten into this state by an ordinary competitor in Arena #3....

According to his estimations, he was probably just a Primary-rank 2nd or 3rd level only!

Jiang Nan’s consciousness began to grow fuzzy. Almost entirely out of instinct, he used his last breath and deflected two fists, taking advantage of the opportunity to slap a palm onto Hank’s chest.

This was the first time Jiang Nan aimed for Hank’s body.

A pity that Hank was a Steel Totem Master and that his entire

body was like a steel plate. Not only was Hank not hurt when Jiang Nan's palm landed, his own palm was actually jolted into sharp pain as his bones cracked.

"If you wish to harm my body, your strength... is still not qualified enough!"

Seeing Jiang Nan's powerless resistance, Hank suddenly roared and used one arm to seize Jiang Nan's collar while raising his other fist, "Brat, now... go die!"

After saying so, Hank began to fling Jiang Nan around to shatter him to death just like he did to Link.

And right as Jiang Nan was about to lose consciousness, in the line of thinking as a medical professor, he was still occupied with his own hand's bone.

Alright, so his fourth and fifth finger bones had been shaken to the point of fracture.

Bones...

Once he thought about bones, Jiang Nan's a flash of light flickered in Jiang Nan's head as he abruptly remembered one of his classes in his past world.

In that class, Jiang Nan had been teaching his students how to disassemble a human head's bone, otherwise known as the skull.

He said, “Gentlemen, bones are one of the body’s hardest organs. Some bones are even harder than steel plates. Generally speaking, it is impossible to break apart the structure of the bones by only using human strength.

As Jiang Nan said this, he simultaneously disassembled a skull into parts, “However, although a skull is solid, the sections connecting the bones are fragile. Therefore… as long as you can accurately strike against these sections, you can take any solid bone… and tear it into fragments!”

Couldn’t the contents of this class also be used to prevail over Hank?!

Hank’s body was incomparably domineering. Forget about Jiang Nan’s hand, even a blade probably wouldn’t be able to slash him.

Just like disassembling a human skeleton, Jiang Nan was completely unable to fracture all of Hank’s bones. However… he knew where all the sections connecting Hank’s bones were located, and could tear them apart!

Thinking up till here, Jiang Nan’s eyes fiercely shot open.

Seeing Hank’s right hand grasping onto his collar, Jiang Nan swiftly extended two fingers without the slightest hesitation and pressed on a spot between Hank’s ring and pinkie finger.

And then…

Crack!

Jiang Nan softly poked.

Hank’s finger bones were dislocated.

“Wu!”

Hank let out a stifled yelp. Although only two of his fingers were dislocated, the ten fingers were connected to the heart. The acute pain of one’s finger getting dislocated wasn’t something ordinary people could bear!

Furthermore, Jiang Nan was familiar with the structure of the human body. At the time of dislocation, he had also conveniently pushed on the dislocated bone and torn the nerves of Hank’s two fingers! These two main nerves were connected with the spinal cord, and once torn, Hank’s whole arm could be considered crippled!

“AHHH~~”

Hank’s stifled yelp turned into a wailing and miserable shriek. His right hand could no longer exert force, so he naturally let Jiang Nan go.

But after having gained the upper hand, Jiang Nan wasn’t

merciful. Originally, Hank had raised him into the air, but now his body was falling. Following his body's inertia, crack, crack, crack... Jiang Nan's dissecting speed was unfathomably quick. In an instant, he had torn apart thirty-seven bone-connecting segments!

One could only see Hank's finger become disfigured, then his whole arm distort. Following that... the shoulder, pelvic bone, thigh, all the way down to the kneecap, various bone-connecting sections had become disfigured. Like mud, Hank's entire body slumped to the ground!

Boom!

Following the sound of Hank toppling over, the field had suddenly turned dead silent!

Exactly what had just happened?!

The spectator's eyes couldn't follow Jiang Nan's speed. All they knew was that when Jiang Nan had sunk into dire straits, he had suddenly counterattacked. A frenzy of dazzling hand gestures and Hank had already collapsed.

This man...

Had actually turned the tables, won, and instantly killed one of Sun City's top ten experts, Hank?!

"Alright! It seems I've won!"

Jiang Nan gasped for breath. He was no longer in the mood to care about the crowd's reactions. After straight up enduring Hank's punches, his internal organs burned with piercing pain. It was necessary for him to look for a quiet place to recover.

After he said this, Jiang Nan stepped out of the arena.

When he passed by the supervisor's side, he even laughed and said, "I didn't deal a killing blow. Look for a doctor, and once that mister rests for a few days, he'll be fine. On the other hand..." He asked the question he was most concerned about, "Where approximately in the Primary-rank Totem Warrior levels do I place?"

"The arena's surveyors need some time to assess your level. By tomorrow, at the latest, *you will know your exact level..."

The supervisor answered as though his soul had left the earth. What he had said was only procedural talk. In truth, he was still recalling that series of phantom-like gestures.

In the next moment, the supervisor abruptly came to his senses and hastily called after Jiang Nan, "Lord Professor!"

"En?" Currently, Jiang Nan was agonized to the point that his internal organs felt as though they were on fire. Forcefully suppressing a breath, he hastily said: "Mister, I need to recuperate right now."

“No, no. I don’t wish to disturb *you.” The supervisor looked towards Jiang Nan’s sorry figure then laughed in embarrassment, “I only wanted to say that *you’ve forgotten something that belongs to you…”

At this time, a number of security guards had already pushed the black cage over. Picking up his pocket watch, the supervisor said: “Right now is five o’clock in the evening, and today’s arena competition has concluded. Without a doubt, *you are today’s victor, and this mysterious reward is already yours!”

Chapter 020: Reward (1)

The victor gets a reward?

Jiang Nan's mood immediately brightened. This was a reward he had used his genuine ability to get, a symbol of glory!

However, after sweeping a glance over the black cage, he suddenly sighed helplessly.

This cage was a full two meters tall with a diameter of one meter, not to mention that the reward inside was probably quite large as well. If this reward was just a small toy, Jiang Nan would still be able to secretly bring it back to the farm. However, with such a massive size as this, if Jiang Nan were to bring it back, how would he explain it?

In addition, Sun City was just a small place, and this time's Totem Arena only consisted of fights between primary-rink totem warriors. For this level of competition, the reward definitely wouldn't be too valuable, so giving it up wouldn't be much of a waste either.

Jiang Nan waved his hand, indicating that he didn't need this reward, then departed with his hand grasping his chest.

"*You don't need the reward?"

The supervisor stared blankly, then quickly chased after him and

said in a low voice: “Lord, how about giving this arena some face? Right now, the field has at least three thousand spectators, and if *you just decline under all their gazes... Please forgive me, I’ve spoken a bit bluntly. However, if you decline this reward, how will the crowd think? They’ll think that this arena is stingy and that the reward is too puny! Furthermore...”

Jiang Nan was pained to the point that he saw stars. Abruptly waving his hand, he cut the supervisor off.

“Alright, alright. You’ve already given me more than enough reason, there’s no need to continue. Just call some people and send this to the third block outside the competition field.”

The third block was where Jiang Nan had dug through a pile of garbage and found some equipment, an extremely remote alley.

This was Jiang Nan’s intention: the reward was too excessively big, so he definitely couldn’t take it. However, his injuries were quite serious and he already had no more energy left to tangle with the supervisor. As such, he only wanted to fake taking it, and then... directly dump it into the trash heap.

The supervisor let out a sigh of relief and stopped nagging Jiang Nan.

Yet right as Jiang Nan reached the arena’s exit, the supervisor once again chased after him, “Lord, Lord!”

“Mister, I am an injured person right now! I urgently need treatment!”

Jiang Nan pointed out his mouth which was still leaking blood. Was this manager without end?

“Lord, please don’t misunderstand. I, it’s not that I wish to delay your treatment...” The supervisor didn’t dare to offend the Jiang Nan who had defeated Han. Laughing bitterly, he said: “It’s just that, according to the Totem Arena’s regulations, I am required to ask *you a question right now.”

The supervisor solemnly drew out a small record from his bosom as he said seriously: “Just before, the whole process of *your battle was recorded. By tomorrow at the latest, the arena will be able to evaluate where you stand on the Totem Rank based on the abilities you have demonstrated today... Might I ask, when announcing your rank, would *you like us to publicize your true name?”

“I’ve already answered this question before when I was registering—anonymous, alias: Professor! On the other hand, you can make my totem level known after my ranking.”

Jiang Nan only felt that his body was about to fade into nothingness. Growing more impatient, he glared at the supervisor and said: “Mister, can I leave now? Can I go rescue my own life now?!”

“A thousand apologies. Please, please...”

The supervisor was so frightened that he dropped his head down. In truth, he still wanted to explain to Jiang Nan, Lord, *you probably did not notice, but the opponent *you defeated was actually the Blood-eyed Hank of the top ten experts!

But seeing Jiang Nan's appearance.... Forget it. It's still better to let him go quickly and get himself treated.

Jiang Nan left the arena.

From start to finish, he wasn't the least bit aware of Hank's true identity.

And as the supervisor stared towards Jiang Nan's receding back, his expression revealed a strange light.

Under most circumstances, he wouldn't question an anonymous identity. However, the opponent Jiang Nan had just prevailed over was one of Sun City's top ten experts, Blood-eyed Hank!

Without a doubt, Jiang Nan had already replaced Hank on the Totem Rank and become one of the top ten experts.

Furthermore, the change in the Totem Rank not only represented the glory and shame between two people, but even more symbolized that a character capable of changing the tides had appeared in Sun City! It even signified that the various powers of Sun City would undergo several private and secret negotiations in order to rope this expert in!

In Sun City… the climate was about to change!

Several minutes later, the supervisor returned to the arena. At this moment, Hank had been taken on a stretcher to receive treatment, but the spectators still hadn't scattered.

The supervisor knew what the crowd was waiting for. Walking to the center of the arena ring, he spread his arms apart and said in a lengthy tone: "Ladies and gentlemen! Just before… you all witnessed history unfolding in Sun City!"

"For five years, from the time Miss Weylin became one of the top ten experts, the top ten ranking has never changed since… But today, a new expert has finally appeared! He has defeated Hank and become a new member of the top ten experts!"

The supervisor spoke passionately: "Ladies and gentlemen, I know what you all are waiting for: all this unfamiliar Lord Professor has become one of the city's top ten experts… exactly where is he ranked?!"

"Don't fret!" The supervisor was nearly roaring as he announced: "In Arena #1, Miss Weylin is currently in the middle of challenging Mister Victor. Once the victor is decided, by tomorrow evening at the latest, the arena will publicly declare the new… Top Ten Totem Ranking!"

……

At 5:07 in the evening, Jiang Nan arrived in the small alley located on the third block.

During Sun City's winter, the sky would darken terribly earl. Although it was just past five, the narrow alley was already a layer of pitch black darkness.

At this moment, several farm guards were pushing a large cart to send the cloth-draped black cage to Jiang Nan's side. Once they saw the critical condition of Jiang Nan's injuries, they didn't dare to disturb him. Presenting him with a few bottles of high quality rapid recovery medicine, then turned and left.

"Phew!"

Jiang Nan collapsed decrepitly beside the trash heap. His opponent's strength was really too strong. He had at least three ribs broken and a probable cerebral concussion from this beating.

And this was still an ordinary opponent in Arena #3. If he met an expert belonging to the top ten...

Jiang Nan didn't even dare to imagine it. Stuffing the medicine that the guards gave him into his mouth, he gradually began breathing evenly and felt a bit better.

However, Jiang Nan had directly bore tens of fists and had long since been battered black and blue, his face swelling like a peach

blossom. Although these medicines could mollify his pain, they couldn't get eliminate the blood and inflammations on his face.

He absolutely had to think of a way to cover up his injuries. Or else... once Miss Weylin saw traces of them, she would definitely get to the bottom of it and find out that he cultivated as a ghost totem master.

In the end, what was he to do?

Closing his eyes in contemplation, Jiang Nan suddenly thought of a terribly interesting idea.

He began to move, but right at this moment...

Dong, dong!

The black cage which Jiang Nan hadn't paid the least bit of attention to suddenly rang out with two knocking sounds.

Jiang Nan nearly jumped out of his skin. Could it be that the reward he had already prepared to discard... was an animal?

"Are you a person? Do you understand what I'm saying?" Jiang asked with a hoarse voice.

Dong, dong!

No voice echoed out from within the cage, but it immediately replied with two knocks. Clearly, even if the cage wasn't holding a living person, it was a living being intelligent enough to understand Jiang Nan's speech.

As long as the creature was intelligent, he couldn't throw it away in this dump to wait for death.

Thinking up till here, Jiang Nan once again put on his mask and used his shabby gown to cover up the slave clothes on his body. Once he confirmed that nobody would be able to recognize him, he threw the red cloth on the cage aside.

Surprisingly, inside the cage was a....

Chapter 021: Reward (2)

A woman such as this who was like a fresh water lotus, like precious jade. When she laughed, her eyes emanated a gentle light that cause the hearts of all men in existence to palpitate.

Charming in a plain white dress and carrying an air that evoked pity and tenderness: when the red cloth fell to the ground, this was the type of woman who appeared in the cage.

More accurately, she was still a young girl.

A head of raven black hair along with a plain white frock, she only seemed to be around fifteen or sixteen years old. An iron chain bound her body, and there were even some preventative mechanisms against suicide. She curled up cowering in the corner of the cage and stared in silence at Jiang Nan with a pair of jet black but dim and lifeless eyes. It seemed as though she had already fallen into the lowest point of despair.

There were three objects placed beside her: a pen, a letter, as well as a marker that sent out a fiery light, clearly possessing a temperature that exceeded a hundred degrees.

Jiang Nan grabbed the letter and looked at what was written on it: “Esteemed victor, are *you satisfied with this gift?”

The letter was written full of flattering words, “This girl is one of my arena’s purchases from the black market. She possesses outstanding beauty and is as gentle as water. Since *you have won

this arena, you can own such a superior and attractive female slave as this…”

“Lord, there is a slave marker in the cage. As long as you use the marker to cover any part you desire on this girl, then… this girl will become your lifelong slave!”

“Please rest assured. This slave girl’s family is more than ten thousand miles out. Only after many complications and difficulties did she come to this country. *You possessing her will not attract any repercussions. On the other hand, in order to guarantee the value of this gift, we have never touched her. This girl is still an…. ‘original’ package.”

Alright, so this hot marker was a slave marker, and this girl was the victor’s reward!

Then… what was he to do with this girl?

This was an extremely frustrating question. Take her back to the farm? It couldn’t be done. Jiang Nan himself was a slave, and if he took back a female slave, even if he had a hundred mouths, he shouldn’t dare think to hide the fact that he participated in the arena.

Dump her here and let nature run its course? This was also unacceptable. One just had to look at her, those thin clothes and pitiful state. In this biting cold night filled with flurries of snow, if he left her here and waited for her conclusion, if she hadn’t still starved to death, then she would freeze to death!

As Jiang Nan pondered over this, the girl also stared at him with a curious gaze.

The girl had expected that once the red cloth fell and the man outside saw her beauty, even if he didn't pounce on her like a wolf or tiger, he would at least look at her lasciviously and rush to take her to a room.

Contrary to her expectations, however, not only did this man not revaeal any lustful desire when he saw her appearance, he instead looked at her like a hot potato, vexed and hating that he couldn't just kicked her away...

As such, the girl had an even better impression of the man in front of her. Looking a bit closer, this man was wearing a long gown on top with a short skirt on the bottom. His face even had a cracked and cornerless mask, but looking beyond his mask, it seemed as though this man had been beaten black and blue into a pitifully sorry figure.

This appearance... Pfft. The girl couldn't help but let out a laugh.

However, after just a half second, the girl returned to her detached and cold look. She stuck her hands out of a mechanism and brought the pen to her palm to write something, showing it to Jiang Nan.

"Because you've prevailed over the arena, you've obtained me." The script was exceedingly elegant, but if one read between the

lines, the words exuded an obstinate spirit that would die before submitting. “However, I won’t become your slave. Kill me, or else I beg *you to undo the shackles on my body to allow me to kill myself!!”

After she finished writing, the girl closed her eyes and lifted her head stubbornly as she waited for Jiang Nan’s response.

Jiang Nan let out a sigh. By this time, he had already thought of a way to deal with this girl.

“Alright, I won’t kill you, but I won’t let you be a slave either.”

Jiang Nan dug into the trash heap. Several minutes later, he had excavated two dirty and tattered blankets, a pile of rotten vegetables, as well as a chipped bowl.

Using these things, Jiang Nan turned this girl into a male beggar.

After that, Jiang Nan undid the chains on her body and threw her the rest of his medicine as he shrugged and said: “Miss, take this medicine and follow the road towards the north. You can use this medicine to exchange for money and then go to the posting station to make inquiries on how to get home…”

“Hey, don’t look at me that way. I don’t want to make you look like a beggar either, but Miss, don’t you think your appearance is a bit too conspicuous? If you want to go home, it’s still safer to disguise yourself as a beggar…”

What is he saying?

The girl tilted her head upwards in astonishment as a series of extraordinary emotions flitted across her two jet black eyes. It seemed as though she was saying, “You’re letting me go, and giving me freedom?”

“Isn’t this obvious?” Jiang Nan opened the cage and gestured as he said: “Are you still not going? Miss, just look at my appearance. I’m only a dejected pauper. This is the most I can help you.”

In order to prove his words, Jiang Nan crushed the slave marker and promptly left the alleyway.

The girl stared after the back of Jiang Nan’s figure dazedly. In the end, after half a minute, just as Jiang Nan’s figure was about to disappear, she finally confirmed that this man really wasn’t joking!

He was a genuinely good person!

“Mmrh! Mmrh!”

The girl let out two strange noises. As if she had suddenly thought of something, she hastily wrote some words on one palm, then switched to her left hand and wrote some more on her right palm.

Surprisingly, she was ambidextrous!

She chased after Jiang Nan and then bowed deeply after rushing towards him. Lifting her head, she extended her two fair palms with a smile of excitement.

The left hand said: “Could you tell me your name? You saving me is something I will definitely repay!” On the other hand, it wrote: “My name is Suzu.”

“Miss, you see this mask? Obviously I don’t want to tell you my name.” Jiang Nan looked curiously at the girl’s mouth and asked inquisitively: “How come you… don’t speak?”

The girl sadly lowered her head, then wrote something on her palm that left Jiang Nan speechless.

“I’m mute.”

……

No one noticed when the snow stopped, but it was now the time for lanterns to begin lighting up. A distance from the narrow alley, houses began to light up one by one and illuminate the snowy landscape, make it seem as though everything was so quiet and serene.

As Jiang Nan stared at this girl’s smile, he was speechless for the longest time. Suddenly, he waved his hand, then disappeared from

the girl's sight without even turning his head.

Even Jiang Nan didn't know why he left so quickly. He only felt troubled in his heart, and that he wanted to leave this place quickly.

A plainly unadorned girl of matchless beauty was unexpectedly a....

Ai! Jiang Nan let out an ineffable sigh.

And the girl only continued to stand there in silence as she watched Jiang Nan's back with unblinking eyes. She didn't know Jiang Nan's name, nor did she see his face, but she would definitely diligently and earnestly remember Jiang Nan's... back!

This was Jiang Nan's and Suzu's first meeting.

Perhaps after this farewell, the two people would no longer meet again, or perhaps they might brush shoulders on a street after several decades. However, by that time, they would have already aged with graying hair and simply took the other to be an unfamiliar passerby.

Of course, this situation could also occur: Many years later, a melodramatic minstrel might be standing on the street and speaking with fervor, "In year 2143 of the Flowerstream Era, snow scattered across the sky. A day later, the esteemed Rodi who trekked the entire path of a totem master and began the first

undertaking as a ghost totem master met a woman whose fate was intertwined with his in an unremarkable town…”

Well f***, who knew what the future would bring?

Several minutes later, Jiang Nan threw the matter of Suzu to the back of his head. He still had an even more important matter to tend to.

One must know that Miss Weylin’s match was about to conclude. Before his master walked out of the stadium, Jiang Nan absolutely had to find the perfect excuse to explain why he had been beaten until his ‘face radiated red like a peach blossom’, a monstrous face that even ‘his own mother wouldn’t recognize’.

Chapter 022: Who Can Protect Us?

The plan Jiang Nan came up with was quite unique: there were quite a few local ruffians in Sun City. Jiang Nan pretended to go out on a casual walk, and 'inadvertently' offended two petty hoodlums. After that, he depended on his physical strength to fight with these hoodlums.

Although Jiang Nan was heavily injured, taking care of a few small-time hoodlums was nothing difficult. However, he carefully controlled his actions so that while he was beating these two hoodlums up, he subtly suffered a few fists as well...

Just like this, Jiang Nan's injuries had a foolproof origin!

He could proudly say to anyone, "My injuries? Alright, I got into a fight with a few hoodlums and became like this!"

"@# ! %....."

"@#!%...."

Ten minutes later, several guards of public order escorted Jiang Nan into the stadium. They were about to hand this 'middle-of-the-street brawler and destructor of public order' who had gone looking for trouble to Weylin.

And Jiang Nan simply waited for Weylin to come out in 'distress'. He could already imagine what would happen next.

Weylin would come out, and seeing Jiang Nan's horrible conduct, she would immediately fly into rage, "You damned lowlife, just what have you done?!"

Without any need for Jiang Nan's explanation, the peace-keeping guards would tell Weylin, "Miss, *your slave got into a fight with other people and was beaten to this state."

And amidst Weylin's scolding and whipping, she would roar fiercely: "Who f***ing dares to touch this woman's person? Lola, go round up everybody to go out and search, and come with me to annihilate that group of lowlives!"

Hehe!

Weylin was this kind of person. At home, she would beat and scold anybody, but once a person of her household suffered torment from an outsider... she would forever be the first to stand out!

Jiang Nan was right in the middle of daydreaming in satisfaction when suddenly, the stadium's entrance was struck open as Lola and a few overseers ran out in panic.

"Rodi, you..."

As expected, Lola was startled when she saw Jiang Nan's monstrous state. However, what followed was like the howling of a

madman: “Rodi, quick, go to the eastern side of town! As long as you see a doctor, even if you have to kidnap him, you must bring him over to *me! If anything happens, I’ll take responsibility!”

“Doctor? Miss Lola, does somebody need treatment?”

Lola was near tears, “You damned lowlife, what are you wasting time for? Miss Weylin, she, she’s been heavily injured! She’s almost dying!”

……

In fact, Lola was not the only one to command Jiang Nan. After Miss Weylin had been beaten into a critical state, all the farmhands who had come along also took action. Whether inviting or dragging, ten odd minutes later, all the famous doctors of Sun City had all been brought to the emergency room of the stadium.

And Jiang Nan and the rest simply stood guard outside of the courtyard.

At this time, Jiang Nan found out what had happened during Weylin’s duel from an overseer who he had a pretty good relationship with.

Weylin’s duel had started at five o’clock. Once it began, using her ability as a Primary-rank 9th level Snow Swallow Totem Warrior to take on the form of a swallow, she soared into the sky. In ten-some hits, she beat Victor until he was covered in dirt, without the

slightest intent of holding back!

However, Victor's faith totem was the wolf, and in this critical juncture, the bloodthirsty nature of the wolf exploded forth. Unable to find any substitutes in the arena, Victor unexpectedly tore off two pieces of flesh from his chest and used them as concealed weapons to attack Weylin midair!

In a moment of carelessness, Weylin was struck to the ground.

After that, Victor no longer left any chance for Weylin to fly up again. Transforming into a wolfman, he used his sharp teeth and claws to beat the Weylin who wasn't proficient in fighting into a critical state.

At this moment, spectators who supported Weylin could see that she was destined to lose. Afraid that Weylin would throw her life away if the two continued fighting, they began shouting: "Miss Weylin, concede! You're still young! One or two more years, and you'll definitely be able to get revenge!"

Originally, this was supposed to be encouragement spoken out of good intentions, but what kind of temper did Weylin have?!

"*I won't give the title as one of the top ten experts to Victor! I absolutely will not!"

At once, Weylin jumped up and risked it all. Throwing caution to the wind, she got pierced in the abdomen with a sharp claw for the

sake of getting a chance to pummel Victor's head!

In the end, Victor was beaten until he fell unconscious on the ground, while Weylin was directly sent to the emergency room on a stretcher covered in blood.

After hearing this, Jiang Nan clapped his hand to his forehead helplessly. He didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

At long last, he let out a deep breath and sighed: "To go as far as this... for a mere title?"

Contrary to everyone's expectations, Lola did not pick a fight with Jiang Nan when she heard his complaint. Instead, she nodded like mindedly, "That's right. If at that time, Miss was willing to concede, how much better it would have been. If you lose then you lose, what's the worst that could happen? At most, she was just give the superficial title as one of the top ten to Victor..."

"What do you understand! Being one of the top ten experts of Sun City is not just an empty name!"

An elderly manager interrupted Lola's words. Seeing her confused expression, he answered helplessly, "Lola, right now you're Miss' personal maid, so you have the right to know a few things now.

These years, our farm has been stirring things up in Sun City, making us seem quite impressive. But in truth.... danger lurks on

every side!”

The manager continued to speak: “Internally, the farm’s master, Count West... I’ll say something I shouldn’t say. The Count is simply a hedonistic and useless man who cannot uphold the future of the farm! Externally, countless hidden enemies covet our resources and even think of annexing our farm in their dreams!”

Lola said in surprise: “Mister Manager, our farm is a branch of the Rheinhardt Clan though. Do people still dare to annex our farm?”

“Why wouldn’t they dare?!” Another manager spoke out: “Correct, we are members of the Rheinhardt Clan. From the perspective of common people, we have a strong backing, thus allowing us to use the Rheinhardt Clan’s name to stir up trouble... But Lola, from the perspective of Rhein headquarters, they have at least two thousand farms such as ours. We are only outer members in an enormous group that can be casually abandoned any time!

Hence, once we run into any danger, the clan headquarters usually won’t send any reinforcements.”

The elderly manager let out a sigh, then continued from where the other manager stopped: “Additionally, even if clan headquarters were willing to help us, look at our enemies! Forget about other people, just look at Suzanne Farms. We have the Rheinhardt Clan backing us, but behind Suzanne Farms... stands the Sommer Clan, one of the seven great aristocracies! Their support is not much inferior to ours! Lola, tell me... why. Why is it that even though it is a mess both internally and externally, we

continue to develop and prosper from day to day?”

Lola said proudly: “It is all because of the efforts of Miss Weylin!”

“Correct!” The elderly manager responded enthusiastically: “The reason our farm can prosper till this day can be completely attributed to Miss Weylin! However… exactly what does Miss Weylin rely on-rely on to uphold the future of our farm?”

Lola’s mouth opened and closed. She already understood the manager’s meaning, and said in a low voice: “Miss relies on her combat ability, on her title as one of the top ten experts.”

“Precisely!” The elderly manager said resolutely: “It is precisely because of Miss’ ranking that the smaller powers haven’t dared to provoke us in the past several years. This is why Suzanne Farms must rack their brains on how many resources they will need to expend to forcefully annex our farm!

However, once Miss is no longer one of the top ten experts, our farm’s reputation will scatter to the wind, and enemies as insignificant as cats and dogs… will also dare to casually act against our farm!

Just before, Miss risked it all not for the title, but to protect the honor of our farm!”

After saying so, the manager just let out a deep sigh then went silent.

On the other hand, Lola was so stunned that she had nothing left to say. She was also aware of the severity of this matter!

In today's match, Weylin knocked Victor unconscious. However, if one looked at the results of the fight, one had fainted with light injuries, while the other was so heavily injured that she was near death. In truth, Weylin had been defeated.

Weylin had already lost the title as one of the top ten!

West Farms no longer possessed the protection of one of the top ten experts!

If so, then West Farms had already fallen into disrepute. Early tomorrow morning, a countless number of enemies would flock over to swallow the farm in one gulp!

When Lola realized this, she jumped about in desperation, "Mister Manager, our farm can't lose the protection of one of the top ten experts! Miss... Miss is already no longer one of the top ten experts, so we have to take swift action and look for another one of the top ten experts to protect us!"

"You say this so easily!" The manager answered helplessly: "Now that Sun City has already developed until now, each of the top ten experts have already affiliated themselves with their own respective powers. None of the current ten... will be willing to protect us!"

For a time, everybody had gone silent.

As they continued guarding beside Weylin, no one was aware that Jiang Nan had already defeated Hank, and that the top ten rankings had already been altered.

One of the top ten experts who could protect them, Jiang Nan, was simply crouching next to them.

“Get out of my way, I want to see Miss Weylin!”

Amidst everybody’s silence, several rough noises suddenly resounded from the outside.

“Please wait. Miss Weylin is still in the middle of emergency treatment, and no visitors are permitted!”

“Is that so? Weylin can’t take any visitors... but what if it’s me, Sun City’s number one expert, Sauron, visiting her?”

In the middle of disputing, Sauron took several hired guards of Suzanne Farms and rushed in.

Chapter 023: Intolerable Bullying

Why was Sauron here?

While Weylin and Victor were dueling, Sauron was constantly cheering for Victor. Now that Victor was lightly injured and unconscious, it would make sense for Sauron to tend to Victor instead.

“Lord Sauron, my family’s Miss is heavily injured and cannot take any visitors. If there is anything you would like to say, you can say it to me. Right… Has anything happened with Young Master Victor?”

The elderly manager who taught Lola a lesson went to receive Sauron. He was still worried: perhaps Victor’s injuries were heavier than they seemed, and Sauron had come to take revenge as his friend.

“Young Master Victor doing quite well. One or two more hours, and he’ll be able to wake up.”

After hearing these words, the elderly manager let out a sigh of relief, “Then the reason *you have come here is…”

“I’ve come to extend an invitation to Miss Weylin.”

Sauron dusted off his lapel, “The lord of our family’s farm—Madame Suzanne, is about to arrive in Sun City. Weylin, as a

member of ‘Yulianne’s reception committee’, by reason should… Tsk tsk. If I might ask Miss Weylin to come and take a walk with me to go welcome my family’s farm’s lord!”

What?!

The elderly manager’s face immediately turned ashen. Several loyal and devoted guards even unsheathed the swords at their waists in preparation to fight to the death!

Welcoming Madame Suzanne sounded pleasing in word, but what sort of situation was Weylin in right now?!

Weylin’s abdomen was completely run through by wolf claws, and she was still in a critical state. Sauron’s pushing of Weylin to go receive Madame Suzanne was simply a way of tormenting her to death!

Lola also clenched her fists, “Lord Sauron, *you, *you’re… too unfair!”

“Young lady, you can’t make irresponsible remarks. I, Sauron, as the number one expert on Sun City’s Totem Ranking, have never profited from someone’s misfortune and used force to bully people. I am only doing my duty according to custom.”

Sauron cast a disdainful glance towards Lola, “Madame Suzanne is the president of ‘Yulianne’s Reception Committee’, and therefore has the authority to order Weylin to do anything. If the

Madame has arrived, don't tell me that Miss Weylin should not endure this tiny matter and personally go to receive her? Or is it that... you don't even put my family's madame in your eyes?!"

After saying so, Sauron took a step forward and raised his lanky right arm to place it horizontally across his chest.

After doing so, a beautiful mauve-colored flower sprouted out of his arm. However, although it was lovely, two rows of sharp teeth protruded from the stamen as they opened and closed, seeming as though they wanted to swallow a person whole!

Sauron's meaning was clear: if Weylin did not go with him right now, then he wouldn't mind using his abilities to make it happen!

"Sauron, this old man can't beat you, but there are no cowardly subordinates of Miss Weylin who are afraid of death!"

Indignant at this injustice, one of the guards raised his sword and charged over.

Sauron gave a faint laugh, then softly said five words, "My treasure, time to eat."

These five words seemed to contain a type of strange rhythm: at the first word, the carnivorous flower on Sauron's arm began to move around; at the second word, the flower abruptly expanded and shot out towards the guard's head. At the third word, the flower opened its maw of sharp teeth.... By the time the fifth word

had left Sauron's mouth, the guard had already been torn to shreds and vanished into Sauron's arm!

"Tsk tsk...."

Sauron seemed to have just gorged himself full as he licked his lips, "A pretty good taste. West Farm fellows, now... can I take Miss Weylin with me?"

"Sauron, this old man's going to go all out!" The rest of the ten odd guards also rushed forth.

"All of you halt!"

The elderly manager suddenly let out a loud shout. Fixing a rigid gaze on Sauron, he tightened his fists with extreme unreconciliation, "Let the doctor stop the emergency treatment. Rodi, go get the carriage ready. We... will ask that Miss Weylin goes on a short walk with Lord Sauron!"

"Mister Manager..."

Lola and the rest of them stared at the manager, dumbstruck.

The elderly manager's lips quivered as glistening tears rolled about on the rims of his eyes. His aged eyes were nearly streaming with bitter tears.

He had already guessed Sauron's objective: Suzanne Farm wanted to take advantage of Weylin's heavy injuries and thoroughly beat her down, seizing the opportunity to swallow West Farms.

However, so what if he already guessed this? Even if the rest of the guards charged over and put their lives on the line, Sauron could eliminate them all just as he did before, then pompously take Weylin far away.

At least this way, he could somewhat compromise and protect the lives of his farm men out of consideration for Weylin.

这样，还**不如委曲求全，保住自家人的姓命来照**顾维兰。

(*TL: I generally get what the author's trying to say, but don't particularly get this sentence itself, so raws are up there for you guys.)

"Did you not hear me? When Miss Weylin is not here, I am your boss! Quickly do as I say!"

The other managers also understood the elderly manager's way of thinking, and helplessly began doing as they were told.

When a wall is about to collapse, everybody will shove it over. Without the protection of one of the top ten experts, they had degraded to the point where anyone could trample over them. They weren't even equal to pigs or dogs anymore.

(*TL: hitting a person who's down)

The top ten experts...

If only one of the top ten experts could appear in their farm... how good would it be!

.....

Elegant Forest Restaurant was located one kilometer to the north of the arena. At normal speed, a carriage could get there in around five minutes.

However, under Sauron's meticulous dawdling, Jiang Nan only arrived at the most extravagant restaurant of Sun City after driving the carriage for a full twenty minutes!

The unconscious Weylin had been bumped and jolted on the carriage for twenty minutes.

"Phew~~"

Stopping the carriage at the restaurant's entrance, Jiang Nan took advantage of the opportunity to size up the restaurant while waiting for Sauron's further instructions.

On the verge of President Suzanne's arrival, the restaurant's front entrance was already brightly lit with lanterns and decorations. A two-meter wide red carpet was also rolled out fifty meters from the entrance to the corner of the road.

On the other hand, two elite guards stood on either side of the road, while a sign was placed on the main entrance of the restaurant, saying: “Respectful Salutations to President Suzanne.” Below the sign, a number of representatives from various powers who had arrived earlier were all whispering to each other as they waited for Madame Suzanne.

At this moment, one of the female representatives who was on good terms with Weylin came over and asked curiously: “Rodi, Elder Sister Weylin is heavily injured and needs rest. Why have you guys…”

“Correct, Weylin needs rest, but custom is custom!”

Jiang Nan was just about to answer when he heard Sauron laughing from the side: “I also want to let Miss Weylin rest, but Madame Suzanne is the president of the reception committee, the temporary chief of Sun City’s various great powers. If the Madame arrives, then no matter how unwell Weylin is, she must attend the reception. This is customary. In regards to the customs of our Suzanne Farm, do you… have any objections?”

“Sauron, you….”

The female representative wanted to say, ‘Of course I have objections!’, when someone suddenly tugged lightly on her clothes and said in a low voice: “Better to keep your words to a minimum. Victor wants to take advantage of this chance to pressure Weylin. Who would dare to stand up for her? Their end would most likely

be even crueler than Weylin's!"

After hearing these words, the female representative fumed as she glared at Sauron, then corrected herself: "Of course I have no objections. You're the number one expert of Sun City, so do whatever you want."

"Aiya, from your words, how come it seems like you're saying that I use my power to bully others?"

Sauron wagged his finger, then unfurled his arms towards the crowd, "Ladies and gentlemen, if none of you have any objections towards Weylin's attendance, then I welcome the representatives to gather in welcome of Madame Suzanne. Right now, if all of you could separate into two lines and await Madame's arrival."

The various representatives stood on each side of the red carpet.

Time passed in minutes and seconds, when suddenly, Victor charged out from the restaurant.

His appearance was quite wretched: bandages seeping blood were wrapped around his chest, his face was deathly pale, and his hair was disheveled. However, an air of arrogance belonging uniquely to the wolf clan still appeared between his two eyebrows.

Sauron hastily went to meet him, "Aiya, Little Brother Victor, you've awaken? Slow down, slow down. I know you're eager to welcome my family's Madame, but your injuries are still quite

serious. You need much rest."

"Who says I came to welcome Suzanne?"

Victor's words left Sauron flabbergasted and speechless. He spoke arrogantly: "I came here to await the new 'Top Ten Ranking'!"

Sauron replied in astonishment: "Victor, my boy, according to convention, the ranking will most likely only come out tomorrow. It's better that you still..."

"Who says tomorrow evening?!" Victor raised his head in excitement and let out a wolf's howl, "Using the name of my father, I made a request to the arena that once I prevailed over Weylin, they would bring the new top ten ranking to me before midnight... Hmph, within half an hour, the new top ten ranking will definitely appear before me!"

Half an hour? In just half an hour, the new 'Top Ten Ranking' would be announced?!

The crowd squirmed in excitement!

Chapter 024: Top Ten Ranking (1)

“Haha, I was careless, I was careless.”

Sauron suddenly let out a resonating laugh, “It turns out that my boy Victor will advance into the top ten of Sun City in just half an hour! This is a matter worth celebrating! Come, behind the horizontal banner welcoming the Madame, add another sentence: Celebrating Young Master Victor for being crowned one of the top ten experts of Sun City!”

Under Sauron’s flattery, Victor’s pale face immediately lightened with smiles.

However, everybody quickly realized that those two as well as an unconscious Weylin were still not conscious of a fact even more important than Weylin getting defeated!

Just as Victor defeated Weylin, Blood-eyed Hank of the top ten experts was also defeated! Victor was still not necessarily one of the top ten experts!

The various representatives from each power all knew of this news, but seeing how domineering Sauron was, they all chose to keep their mouths shut and watch this joke in tacit agreement.

On the other hand, members of Suzanne Farms wanted to notify Sauron, to the point that one of the overseers had already stepped out.

But right at this moment! “Hereditary Countess and the direct second daughter of the Sommer Clan in the Rheim Empire, Suzanne Farm’s Lord, Madame Suzanne, has arrived!”

An extravagant, gold-gilded carriage sped over from a distance. Driving the carriage was a golden armored warrior, while on both sides guarded four teams of warriors in cyan armor – elite soldiers!

At once, everybody present bowed in welcome, and the overseer who had stepped out reluctantly shut his mouth and returned to join the reception.

“We welcome Madame’s arrival to Sun City.”

Sauron swiftly strode over to the carriage’s side and surreptitiously explained all that he knew about Weylin’s duel under the cover of the many soldiers.

“Madame, the situation is like this: Weylin is heavily injured, and West Farms is well within *your grasp now.”

“Sauron, you’re too vicious. You actually instigated Victor to deal with Weylin….” The person within the carriage giggled, “However. A great man has to be ruthless–this is my faithful Sauron!”

“Many thanks to *you for your praise, beautiful Madame Suzanne.” Sauron also gave a light chuckle, “On the other hand,

I've also taken the initiative to congratulate Victor on being crowned as one of the top ten experts at the same time as your reception. Please take a look...."

"You've done very well!"

By this time, the carriage had already arrived at the entrance of the restaurant and the voice of the person within had also grown louder. She purposely directed a few words towards Victor: "Young Master Victor is the young lord of Reyne Mountain, the only son of Wolf King Sophus. That such a distinguished character can rank into the top ten of Sun City is very laudable. Congratulations! I propose to cancel the welcoming feast prepared for me. Today, we will only celebrate the coronation ceremony of Young Master Victor as one of the top ten experts!"

When these words left her mouth, Victor's cheeks instantly turned ruddier.

The person in the carriage spoke once again: "Sauron, invite Young Master Victor to step into the carriage. We will receive the cheering together."

Victor's ruddy complexion flushed as he climbed into the carriage in excitement.

How capable!

The various representatives were secretly astonished. Suzanne,

this widow, only used a few words to curry the favor of Reyne Mountain's young lord. It seems as though for a period of time, Suzanne Farms and Reyne Mountain will be standing on the same side.

Under the crowd's cheers, the carriage directly entered the inner courtyard of the restaurant.

However, what was interesting was that: Suzanne never stepped out of the carriage. In order to show off her authority, she allowed the carriage to directly wheel into the inner courtyard of the restaurant.

This also led to a most direct consequence: Jiang Nan did not see Suzanne's appearance.

……

"Gentlemen, the reception has already concluded. Please come with me into the restaurant."

After the carriage disappeared, a servant from Suzanne Farms came to stand before Jiang Nan and waved his hand, gesturing for him to send Weylin into the restaurant.

Jiang Nan raised his horsewhip, preparing to enter through the restaurant's main gate.

But the servant's face suddenly distorted as he said in anger, "Is

this a place where you guys can walk? The main gate is in the middle of welcoming Madame Suzanne. If you want to go in, then come with me through the backdoor."

Backdoor....

Jiang Nan swiveled his head to look at the elderly manager within the group, only to find the manager's face ashen as he nodded towards him, "Rodi, who told us to be weaker than other people? We'll just go through the backdoor then!"

The servant snorted in glee. Arriving in the inner courtyard of the restaurant, he casually pointed to a horse shed, "Gentlemen, there are a more guests than usual today, so there are not enough guest rooms in the restaurant. As such, we will just trouble you all to put up with this 'horse shed' as a room."

"Horse shed?! You actually dare to let our house's Miss sleep in a horse shed?!"

Everybody from West Farms all flared up, and the elderly manager could no longer tolerate it as he cursed in rage: "You disgraceful person! Even though we may have degraded, we still are, after all, members of the Rheinhardt clan! On top of that, my house's Miss is the present Clan Supervisor's direct granddaughter! You, you have the audacity to dare insult the descendant of the First Totem Millennium Aristocracy?!"

"Mister, I also have no choice!" The servant said in a strange manner, "The restaurant truly has no more guest rooms left! Not

to mention Miss Weylin, even if the Rheinhardt Clan's Supervisor Lord Rondor came.... he would still have to sleep in the horse shed!"

"If this woman's grandfather came, a lowlife like you would seriously dare to let him sleep in a horse shed?!"

Weylin's wrathful voice suddenly rang out from within the carriage.

Weylin had already woken up!

She struggled to push aside the curtain of the carriage. Seeing Jiang Nan driving the carriage, she leaned on his shoulder without the slightest scruple, "Rodi, help support this woman to go teach that lowlife a lesson!"

"Miss, *your injuries! You can't move, lie down quickly!"

"This woman is still incapable of dying!"

Under Jiang Nan's support, Weylin arrived before the servant. For the sake of emergency treatment, the whip she constantly carried at her side had already been taken away. Unable to find it, she randomly snatched up the horsewhip in Jiang Nan's hand. Pa! Pa! Pa! She directed twenty-something lashes towards the servant's head, "You damned lowlife! Even if this woman is injured to the point of no return, I'm still not someone a lowlife like you can bully! Brothers, seize this fellow!"

Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh!

The overseers of West Farms all whipped out their weapons.

“This Elegant Forest Restaurant is Suzanne’s estate, correct?” Weylin roared: “Then wreck it! Wreck it until Suzanne exchanges rooms for us!”

What a tyrannical temper! Following Weylin’s awakening, the group of people from West Farms all seemed to have suddenly grown a spine. They suddenly transformed into other people: murderous and unafraid of death!

As Weylin led her group forward, Sauron’s voice suddenly arose from the distance.

“Yulianne’s Reception Committee, all members immediately gather to convene an emergency conference!”

Weylin went blank, “Motherfu**er, has something major happened?”

It truly was something major!

While Weylin was beating people up, a post horse had arrived before the restaurant.

The horseman raised a golden yellow scroll up high that was three feet long with two thick arms, on which hung sharp thorny ornaments on either side.

Sun City's Totem Ranking had three records: the third record being an ordinary bronze color which recorded unremarkable amateur totem warriors; the second record being a mild silver color that listed famous experts.

On the third record, which was what the horseman was currently raising, it was golden yellow, and it recorded the top ten experts of Sun City!

The Top Ten Ranking had been released!

The rider leapt down from his mount at the entrance to the restaurant, raising the announcement up high as he declared loudly: "Totem Advancement Association, Sun City Branch, announces to the entire city: match evaluations concluded last night, and Sun City's top ten experts'…. ranking has changed!"

Chapter 025: Totem Ranking (2)

The Top Ten Ranking had been released!

For a time, the various representatives could not be bothered to welcome Madame Suzanne, and instead rushed towards the restaurant's main gate.

However, Sauron simply knocked lightly on Madame Suzanne's carriage in a relaxed manner, laughing: "Madame, the Top Ten Ranking has been released."

"En, I already heard." Likewise, Madame Suzanne was not the slightest bit flustered. Waving her hand, she spoke indifferently: "For the sake of manners, go listen for a bit."

"Alright. Hearing the same details every year is really a bit boring..."

Sauron walked out towards the main gate of the restaurant.

Immediately, everybody, regardless of whether they hated or revered him, all respectfully stepped out of the way to make a path for him.

Even the horse rider was gazing at Sauron with a worshipping look in his eyes!

“The new term’s Top Ten Ranking is as follows…”

After first rushing over to Sauron to give a bow of greeting, the rider raised the Top Ten Ranking up high under everyone’s gazes, “Sun City’s number one expert: intermediate-rank 6th level Carnivorous Flower Totem Warrior of Suzanne Farms, Sauron!”

Sauron gave a slight bow. This was the capital he possessed to make everybody move out of the way!

After directing a smile towards Sauron, the rider continued: “Second is intermediate-rank 3rd level Cloud Totem Warrior of the Sheffield Clan, Lord Merlin!”

“Third is intermediate-rank 2nd level Wind Totem Warrior of the Sheffield Clan, Lord Gibson!”

The Sheffield Clan. To the various representatives present, this name was not unfamiliar. Do you still remember the scene that occurred before Jiang Nan entered the arena? Hank pummeled an unlucky fellow by the name of ‘Link’, and Link was a member of the Sheffield Clan.

At the same time, the Sheffield Clan was the only clan who did not become a member of Yulianne’s Reception Committee, and also the only clan who still had not suffered the power of Sauron.

“Sauron, Merlin, and Gibson are all intermediate-rank totem warriors who comprise the top three of the Totem Ranking. One

could say that they are all popular with the general public. Next are the primary-rank totem warriors: Sun City's ranked fourth expert...."

After inciting everybody's applause, the rider was about to continue announcing, but right at that moment, "Less nonsense already! Exactly what rank am I?!"

On the side, Victor was already bursting with impatience. Leaping out from within the carriage, his beard and hair flew in all directions as he rushed towards the rider.

"This gentleman, I must announce according to regulations. These are the rules of the Totem Advancement Association...."

"Screw those f***ing regulations!" Victor abruptly grabbed onto the rider's collar, a claw protruding from his finger, "A wolf will not be patient with you. Exactly what rank am I?"

"This...."

The rider glanced at Victor's urgent expression as well as that protruding claw, "Alright, I will help you check. May I ask what your name is?"

"Victor, the Victor who defeated Weylin yesterday!"

The rider's facial expression suddenly grew incredibly awkward.

Victor stared blankly as he said in desperation, “Quickly say it! Exactly what rank am I!”

“This....Mister Victor, if *you could just wait a bit. After a few minutes, the ranking for those outside of the top ten experts will be sent over....”

The rider did his best to make his tone sound agreeable, but Victor’s expression still continued to grow even worse. No longer bothering about speaking tactfully, the rider shut his eyes, “Alright, I will just directly say it. *You.... are not ranked in the top ten.”

“What?!”

With a ‘pop’, Victor’s body suddenly grew two feet as he morphed into a massive wolf man and raised the rider up high, “That’s not possible! Yesterday, I already defeated Weylin! I’ve already taken Weylin’s place!”

“It’s true, *you did indeed defeat Miss Weylin.”

Hanging in the air, the rider quickened his words, “If there were no other unexpected incidents, according to the power you displayed during *your duel, you should have replaced Weylin as the tenth expert on the Totem Ranking. But.... at the same time your duel was going on, an anonymous competitor defeated Hank of the top ten! As a result, as a result he advanced to become one of the top ten experts and pushed Hank, who was originally rank

nine, to rank ten, and simultaneously squeezed you out of the Top Ten Ranking!

Mister Victor, right now *you are probably ranked at.... eleventh place!”

Eleventh place....

This was a hugely embarrassing position!

If one was talking about the lower rankings, to be able to be ranked number eleven in a city of several hundred thousand people was considered to be a pretty good achievement. However, if one had to talk about the higher rankings.... Alright then, he was still lacking compared to the top ten experts!

For a time, Victor went into a daze.

Only after a long while did he roar out in difficulty, “Say it, what alias does that anonymous competitor have? What rank is he?!”

“I was just about to talk about him. *You, could *you first put me down?”

Victor loosened his claws, and after the rider fell to the ground, he immediately tidied his clothes and said seriously: “Sun City’s Top Ten Ranking, rank fourth is primary-rank 8th level Strength Totem Warrior of anonymous origin. Alias.... Professor!”

“Primary-rank 8th level?!”

Victor’s expression grew quite unsightly, “Shameful, you definitely saw wrong! I am already a primary-rank 9th level Wolf Totem Warrior. There’s no way I was pushed out of the Totem Ranking by an 8th level weakling.”

“I did not see wrong. Lord Professor is indeed only a primary-rank 8th level totem warrior.”

The rider continued to speak: “However, Lord Victor, although Lord Professor is only a primary-rank 8th level warrior and lower than you by one level, he demonstrated superior fighting techniques in yesterday’s match against Hank as well as an incomparably swift attack speed. After watching his match, the various members of the Totem Advancement Association all agreed on this unanimously: although the Professor’s level is not high enough, his tactics and speed most definitely qualify him to take fourth rank!”

The Professor’s tactics were naturally referring to when Jiang Nan disassembled thirty-seven of Hank’s joints in a flash when he was falling to the ground.

Based on this kind of tactic, it really did make him eligible to be ranked number four.

However, Jiang Nan could only take fourth place: the top three were all intermediate-rank totem warriors, and he still did not

have the qualifications to challenge intermediate-rank experts.

The rider continued to explain Jiang Nan's ranking, but besides Victor, nobody else was listening anymore....

In a corner beneath anyone's attention, the smile disappeared from Sauron's face. He quietly slipped beside Madame Suzanne's carriage, "Madame, *you have heard it all."

"En, I heard it all. A new expert of the top ten has appeared in Sun City. Furthermore, he is ranked fourth...."

The tone of the person in the carriage was very serious, "Fourth place. Before you, Sauron, that person still isn't worth mentioning. However, we must consider a different situation....

Sauron, suppose that, suppose that this Lord Professor is our enemy, but he does not oppose head on. Instead, he ambushes our various resource locations and attacks ordinary overseers in the dark. How big of a loss do you think he can bring us?"

"Based on the strength Professor used to defeat Hank, if he was to mount sneak attacks in the dark, ignoring my own role.... before night's end, he could wreck our five resource locations without anybody knowing as well as kill more than two hundred of our men, including our troops, overseers, and robust slaves easily!"

"Then.... on our farm, how many resource locations and soldiers are there?"

“We have forty-seven resource locations and two thousand soldiers in total.”

“Right, we have forty-seven resource locations and two thousand soldiers....” The tone of the person in the carriage abruptly went frosty, “This newly appeared expert of Sun City could destroy one tenth of our strength before the night’s end! Furthermore, this expert isn’t even under our control, nor do we even know his name!

Sauron, cancel the feast and convene an emergency meeting!” The person stepped out from the carriage with a grave and solemn face, “The topic of discussion.... how to treat this Mister Professor!”

Chapter 026: What, What, What Generous Conditions

“As you command, Madame!” Sauron immediately answered with an enthusiastic shout, telling all the various representatives to hastily convene for an emergency meeting.

At this time, Weylin was still destroying things while Jiang Nan helped to support her. However, when she heard Sauron’s voice, “Something major definitely happened. Rodi, help this woman to go attend the meeting!”

“Mis….”

Looking at Weylin’s bandaged body, he wanted to persuade Weylin to cancel that notion, but Weylin’s face had already turned color, “Did you not hear what this woman said? Rodi, is a lowlife like you laughing that I’ve been heavily injured, so you dare not to obey me?”

Weylin shot a glance towards the other farm members in the distance, and then used a very hushed and quiet voice to say something that should absolutely never be said to slaves, “Rodi, I beg you. I don’t care whether you still hate me, but please help me over to the meeting room okay?”

“Alright, you are the master and I am the slave. I must unconditionally obey your orders.”

Jiang Nan helped support Weylin as she walked to the site of the meeting.

Lola and the three managers also hastily followed along with them.

The conference room was set up on the second floor of the restaurant in a large hall. On the outer edges of the hall, Suzanne Farm members were already standing guard, while an enormous round table capable of seating 150 people was situated in the center of the hall.

When Jiang Nan walked into the conference room, Madame Suzanne and the other various representatives had already taken their seats at the round table. Seeing Weylin come in, Madame Suzanne said, “Aiyah, Younger Sister Weylin, you’ve already awakened? Quick, quick, sit next to Elder Sister, and let Elder Sister check your injuries.”

“Beat it, this woman doesn’t need your false concern.”

Weylin defiantly sat opposite of Suzanne.

“Aigh, Younger Sister Weylin, your temper, really….”

Madame Suzanne shook her head in vexation. Today, she was attired in formal, lavender-colored apparel of an aristocrat, her bearing graceful. Every single one of her actions effectively demonstrated the air of a great aristocrat in Sun City.

However, it was a pity that Suzanne had even gone as far as wearing a gauze veil to cover her face to add to her dignity.

“Alright, now is not the time to discuss private affairs. Since you despise Elder Sister, then please take a seat opposite me.”

After Suzanne played down Weylin’s actions to get rid of the awkwardness, she knocked on the table to indicate that the meeting had officially begun, “The topic of today’s meeting is something I am sure everybody is already aware of: Sun City’s Top Ten Ranking has changed, and an anonymous Professor who is a primary-rank 8th level Strength Totem Warrior has defeated Hank, thereby becoming Sun City’s ranked fourth expert!”

What?!

Weylin had no clue about the ranking changing, so when she heard the first half of Suzanne’s words, she assumed that Suzanne was ridiculing her for losing to Victor. However, when she heard the last half….

She abruptly turned her head around, “Rodi, what is this lowlife Suzanne saying?”

“Miss, she said that someone named Professor defeated Hank and became…. Sun City’s…. f***ing fourth ranked expert?!”

Jiang Nan’s tone turned extremely strange.

Professor defeated Hank....

The opponent he defeated yesterday was actually Hank!

Based on Jiang Nan's expectations, if his performance in the bitter battle he won in the 'amateur' Arena #3 was able to land him in the top one hundred, that was already pretty good. Additionally, he assumed that his exact level was at most around primary-rank 2nd or 3rd level.

But.... Suzanne actually said that he possessed the fighting strength of a primary-rank 8th level totem warrior! Moreover, he had even pushed into the Top Ten Ranking?!

Calm down, calm down for the sake of maintaining this model image!

Jiang Nan immediately resumed his 'even if the heavens collapse, I will continue eating my food as usual' look.

Weylin, on the other hand, did not take notice of Jiang Nan's minute change. Instead, she stared at Madame Suzanne dubiously.

"I have already collected some data pertaining to Professor. If everyone could take a look."

Suzanne wouldn't bother taking notice of a slave's reaction

either, and simply hinted to the servant to distribute a stack of folders while she herself pointed at a white form, “This is the Professor’s application form for the arena. Although he only wrote down the word ‘Professor’ on it, it is already enough to clarify many issues.”

“What can one word clarify?” A representative sneered in disdain.

“Mister Cabo, it appears that you do not understand true aristocratic script!” Suzanne called the representative’s name out, “Please take a look at the calligraphic style and structure of the word ‘Professor’. I can tell you with utmost certainty that this kind of script is called ‘Rheim Script’, a sort of script used only by those of the imperial household of our Rheim Empire. For those that can write out this sort of script, even if they are not members of the imperial household, they are still major personages noble to a degree that we cannot even fathom!”

Rheim Script?

Jiang Nan looked skeptically at the word ‘professor’, which he wrote. This was the first time hearing that the script he used was actually symbolic of a major personage.

In fact, Jiang Nan’s speaking and writing were all taught to him by Auntie Alisa. That Alisa could teach him aristocratic script.... Could it be that she used to be a major personage, noble to a completely unfathomable degree?

……

By this time, Madame Suzanne had already begun speaking again, “First understand the origins of the Professor’s script, and then consider the appearance in which he came: at that time, the Professor was wearing a golden mask with a corner broken off, a raggedy robe, and a calico skirt…. In brief, the Professor’s appearance can be summarized in eight words: shabby, ragged clothing, and depressingly poor and destitute! A major personage who can print in Rheim Script, yet poor to the extent that he cannot even buy a set of proper equipment…. At this point, can we not already deduce the origins of this Professor?”

Her tone rose even higher, “Lord Professor is a person without any power backing him up! Depressingly poor and destitute, he is a fallen noble aristocrat!”

Everybody nodded to express their agreement with this conclusion.

“Since everybody agrees with my conclusion, then…. how should we treat Lord Professor?”

Madame Suzanne’s laughter rang out, “In my perspective, the Professor possesses strength, but is economically hard-pressed. We can take advantage of this fact to rope the Professor in by using a large sum of money and make him work for us, thereby making him one of our members! Does everybody agree?”

“Agreed!”

The representatives' answers resounded loud and clear. As the ranked fourth expert of Sun City, who would not want to use an expert like the Professor for their own gain? Who wouldn't want the Professor to help them establish a great territory?!

"Alright! For the sake of utilizing this Professor, I, Suzanne Sommer, command with the identity of President as follows:"

Suzanne's expression was solemn as she stood up, "First, immediately issue a fully-manned announcement inviting Lord Professor to come to Elegant Forest Restaurant to meet us!

Second, announce with my personal guarantee that once the Professor is willing to meet with us, Yulianne's Reception Committee will provide all the things he requires in Sun City at his convenience!

Third, everybody await orders at the restaurant! Without my permission, no one may leave! Once the Professor appears, I ask that everybody welcomes Lord Professor with the grandest courtesy! The above mentioned concludes my orders!"

After she finished speaking, Suzanne suddenly lowered her voice, "Everybody, all these commands as mentioned previously are to be given to outsiders to see on an official announcement, but between us.... Fufu, if any of you meet the Professor in private, there's no harm in telling him this: just say that Madame Suzanne appreciates his strength, and so long as he is willing to work for our farm, I, Suzanne, don't have much, but several tens of

thousands of gold coins, several tens of property estates, and hundreds of beautiful women are at his disposal!”

What generous conditions....

Jiang Nan’s heart beat involuntarily accelerated. He really wished to step out and tell Suzanne, “Madame, I am that Professor! Just hand those benefits over to me!”

Chapter 027: The Humiliation Of Ceding Land

However, Jiang Nan immediately suppressed this foolish thought. He was quite aware that his power stemmed from ghost totems, and once he personally admitted his identity as Professor, what awaited him would not be gold coins and beautiful women, but a ceaseless pursuit to kill him!

If he wanted to continue living, under no circumstances could he admit to being the Professor.

Even the matter of ‘Rheim Script’ could possibly expose him, so he could not use it at all.

By now, West Farm’s elderly manager had seen that the discussion had concluded and hastily said: “Madame Suzanne, what ought to be said has already been said. We will definitely carry out *your orders as you wish. Now…. can we be dismissed? Our house’s Miss needs rest.”

“Of course you all can disperse now. How can I possibly delay Younger Sister Weylin from resting?”

Suzanne suddenly laid her hand on her chest, “Aiyah, wait a moment. I suddenly remembered an extremely important matter. If Miss Weylin could stay behind to make a decision, as well as the rest of you to act as witnesses for me.”

Weylin was so heavily injured that she was dizzy, “Suzanne, what kind of sinister plan does a lowlife like you have now?”

“Aiyah, Younger Sister Weylin. Can you not fix that temper of yours? Besides, I’m not looking for you to set some sinister plan in motion. Rather, it is something that has to do with receiving Yulianne.”

Yulianne...

The room suddenly sunk into absolute silence.

Suzanne took her time to stroll towards Weylin’s side, “Younger Sister Weylin, in regards to the matter of receiving Yulianne, I have a small proposal. If *you could please consider it carefully.

According to the information sent from Yanjing, Yulianne will arrive in Sun City in around twenty odd days.” Madame Suzanne spread her hand open and began counting, “For the sake of receiving Yulianne, in terms of the clothing, food, living, or travelling arrangements.... clothing, food, and travelling can be easily taken care of. In fact, based on our wealth, we can take care of these things very well. However, for the living arrangement.... Younger Sister Weylin, for the sake of allowing Yulianne to dwell happily in Sun City, I’ve prepared to construct a temporary residence for Yulianne within twenty days according to the scale of His Majesty the Emperor’s temporary imperial palace!”

Twenty days?!

Weylin slightly knitted her eyebrows, “Are you dreaming?”

“Whether or not that is so is not your concern. However, Younger Sister Weylin, Yulianne’s identity is definitely not ordinary. Therefore, her temporary residence must be built in the best environment located in Sun City, don’t you agree?

And as for the location in Sun City that has the best environment, it is naturally ‘Mount Longinus’.”

Madame Suzanne’s gaze fixed onto Weylin’s eyes, “However, by coincidence, Mount Longinus is located on your family’s territory. Younger Sister Weylin, for the sake of welcoming Yulianne, I politely ask that you temporarily set aside an area one hundred kilometers in circumference that encircles Mount Longinus.... and rent it to me!”

“Rent?!”

Weylin ignored her heavy injuries and immediately shot to her feet, “What a good idea, leasing! Suzanne, you lowlife! You’re really quite good at speaking! Why don’t you just f***ing say it straight out: you’ve taken a fancy to my family’s Mount Longinus, and you wish for me to cede it to you!”

“Aiyah! Younger Sister Weylin, why do your words sound so unpleasant?” Suzanne spoke with a smile: “I only wish to rent it, rent it! Younger Sister Weylin, you wouldn’t be as petty as to obstinately refuse to just lend the land to me, would you?”

Weylin smacked the table and stood up, wishing to say, “This woman is just that petty, nor does this woman wish to lend!”

But right at this moment, thunk! Thunk! Sauron’s fingers knocked against the table, “Miss Weylin, if *you could please carefully consider the proposal of my family’s Madame.”

Sauron said coolly: “The objective of welcoming Yulianne overrules all other matters. If Miss Weylin is unwilling to rent Mount Longinus out, don’t tell me…. that you wish to impede the receival of Yulianne? Do you want Yulianne to be dissatisfied? Do you want His Majesty the Emperor to blame us?” Nailing the severe accusation in, he said, “I, as Sun City’s number one expert, do not wish to see you commit such a heavy crime!”

If you’re not willing to cede your territory, then *I’ll just kill you on behalf of the authorities!

The entire room sank into a death-like silence.

Everybody understood that Suzanne Farms wished to take advantage of Weylin’s heavy injures to swallow up the resources of West Farms.

But what did it matter even if they did understand? Sun City’s Top Ten Ranking had just been recently announced, and Sauron had now dominated first place for ten consecutive years! Who would dare to defy him at this time, or dare to step out on Weylin’s behalf?!

“Father, your daughter is unfilial. She is unable to protect the estate that *you have passed down....”

Weylin suddenly kowtowed towards the south, the place where her father’s tomb was located.

The managers of West Farms immediately understood what the Miss was going to do and howled desperately: “Miss, we cannot cede the land!”

“If I don’t cede it, then don’t tell me that this woman will just stare wide-eyed as you guys are completely slaughtered by Sauron?!”

Weylin bit her lip and angrily squeezed out a few words, “Suzanne, within three days, Mount Longinus’ map will definitely be sent to you!”

After she said this, Weylin disregarded Jiang Nan’s support and bore her own injured body as she departed from the conference room. As she left, bright red blood began seeping out of the bandages wrapped around her stomach, staining the red carpet the entire way.

Every representative looked distantly at Weylin’s receding figure. Several people were filled with indignation at this injustice, while some people’s facial expressions faintly changed. There were even some who stared at Suzanne with strange gazes.... with no one aware of what they were thinking.

On the other hand, Suzanne abruptly fell into silence as she waved her hands with limp enthusiasm, “Everybody is dismissed. Sauron, you stay.”

……

After everybody had dispersed, Sauron stood at Madame Suzanne’s back, “Madame, are *you not happy?”

Suzanne touched a drop of Weylin’s blood that fell on the ground, then spoke as though she was not looking for an answer, “Sauron, what do you think of Weylin, this person? Based on your judgment as Sun City’s number one expert.”

“In my perspective, Weylin is a youth with astonishing potential.”

Sauron’s expression also grew solemn, “Five years ago, the fourteen-year-old Weylin consecutively defeated four great experts in one day, rising into the ranks of Sun City’s Top Ten Ranking. This kind of talent is rarely seen! And in these past five years, although Weylin has been occupied with managing the farm and has neglected her training, I still see a bright future ahead of her—at twenty-five years of age, Weylin’s strength will be enough to give me a headache!”

“That’s right. On the path of totems, Weylin is young and has potential. Sooner or later there will come a day that she will possess the strongest power in Sun City.”

Madame Suzanne nodded, “Then…. do you know how I regard Weylin? Based on my identity as an aristocrat and the farm lord.”

“Madame’s meaning is….”

“In my perspective, Weylin is only a standard manager. Perhaps her head is capable of managing a farm, but it is still not enough to clash head-on with me.” Suzanne abruptly slammed her hand onto the table, “But it is only now that I discover, I’ve judged Weylin wrongly!

Just now, I humiliated Weylin in front of 103 representatives, pushing her to surrender and cede the land to me. How great of an insult and disgrace this is, and how unwilling she was! However, when you look at Weylin’s reaction, she unexpectedly bore it!” Suzanne spoke eerily: “Weylin is only nineteen years old. Nineteen years old, yet she understands what it means to bear patiently, the mindset that as long as green hills exist, there will always be wood to burn…. If she were to be given a few years time, until she is twenty-five years old, where her strength is no longer inferior to yours and her head is capable of challenging me, in Sun City…. who will be able to keep Weylin in Check?!”

(*TL: as long as there’s life, there’s hope)

Pah!

Madame Suzanne flicked off the fresh blood from her fingertip, “I cannot give Weylin the chance to grow. Weylin…. must die!”

Chapter 028: Weylin...

“Madame, then I’ll go and kill Weylin right now.” A cold gleam flashed through Sauron’s eyes.

“No, you cannot personally take action.” Madame Suzanne clenched her fist in unreconciliation, “Did you not see the various expressions of those representatives just now? It is dangerous to incur the wrath of the masses. If we publicly harm Weylin at this time, we will thoroughly infuriate the various representatives and attract the combined revolt of 103 powers.”

“Then we....”

“We can borrow a knife to kill a person.”

Madame Suzanne pointed towards a map of Sun City that was hanging on the conference room’s wall, “For the sake of receiving Yulianne this time, I’ve gathered all the various powers within Sun City. However, because of their conceit due to having seized second and third place on the Totem Ranking, the Sheffield Clan publicly refused our invitation. Sauron, are you willing to just let the Sheffield Clan go just like that?”

“Madame, *your meaning is....”

“We can kill a bird with two stones: the first step being that we utilize the Sheffield Clan to get rid of Weylin.”

Madame Suzanne spoke with a smile: “The Sheffield Clan has long since desired to swallow up Weylin’s territory. They will definitely take advantage of Weylin’s injuries to seize West Farms. As long as we send Weylin into the mouth of the tiger, or the Sheffield Clan’s hands in this case.... The Sheffield Clan will take the initiative to help us chew Weylin to death!

As for how to send Weylin into the mouth of the tiger....”

Madame Suzanne looked at the scenery outside the window, “Sauron, Weylin is very dissatisfied with her living situation, correct? Just change her residence to the Sixth Block and find some people to leak out her location to the Sheffield Clan.”

“Madame, *you are too vicious.”

“Vicious? Alright, I don’t even mind being a bit more vicious! The second installment of my plan: Sauron, keep a strict watch over the Sheffield Clan’s movements. Once they take action to murder Weylin, immediately mobilize the troops and await my orders.”

Suzanne spoke with a cold laugh: “After the various representatives see that the ‘Sheffield Clan has murdered Weylin’, they will undoubtedly grow indignant at such an injustice. We can step out at this moment and ally with their forces in the name of ‘avenging Weylin’ to attack the Sheffield Clan, thoroughly annihilating this thorn in our side!”

.....

The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind. With each aspect of the plan closely interlinked, it focused on targeting West Farms and the Sheffield Clan, these two great powers. Madame Suzanne's plan could be said to be vicious to the extreme.

And at this time, Weylin was still not aware that she was about to face the relentless killing pursuit of the Sheffield Clan because she was still occupied with quelling the rage of her own clan members.

"Miss, how could *you cede the land?! We brothers have accompanied you for so many years and have never shied away from any kind of danger, but never have we suffered such an intolerable blow!"

Once they departed from the conference room, the overseers of West Farms roared impatiently.

Even the elderly manager who had always kept his calm was now desperate, "Miss, we understand *your predicament, and we are also aware that this was done because there was no other alternative, but.... West Farms is the estate left behind by *your father! We can die in battle, can die from risking it all until we have only one force, one soldier left, but we.... we cannot just vainly present Old Master's life and blood to others!"

"You! You guys!"

Weylin pointed at her own clan members' noses, wanting to fly into a round of scolding, but her critical injuries made it so that

her words became fresh blood that spurted with a ‘Pu’ sound at Jiang Nan’s face.

Everybody was so shocked that they hastily rushed up to treat her.

“F*** off, I don’t need you guys to save me! Don’t you guys have quite a spine? Then scold! Continue scolding at this woman if you have the guts!”

Weylin’s anger quelled somewhat, “A group of blind dogs who can only kick their benefactor in the teeth! This woman has strained her heart for your sake, but you all, can none of you understand this woman’s real intent?”

“Miss, *your meaning is….”

Weylin didn’t feel like explaining in detail, “I won’t bother telling you guys. Screw off! Beat it and go do your work! Lola, take my key back to West Farms to go get Mount Longinus’ map. You three managers, take the overseers to make preparations to cede the land….”

Weylin let out a string of orders and dispatched all the people in one go, but just as Jiang Nan was about to leave, she suddenly rushed towards him and waved her hand, “Rodi, you…. can you stay behind and keep me company?”

Jiang Nan went blank, “Miss….”

“Shut up!”

Weylin raised her hand, which was the position she often assumed to whip Jiang Nan, but this time…. Weylin’s hand simply rested on Jiang Nan’s shoulder.

Her expression was miserable as she leaned against Jiang Nan’s body, “Rodi, seeing my performance just before, are you thinking that this woman has gone insane, that she can no longer be reasoned with?”

“Speaking truthfully?”

Weylin nodded.

“Alright!” Jiang Nan still maintained that expression of his which said that ‘even if the sky collapses, as long as the sun is still out, I’ll continue sunbathing’, “Truthfully speaking…. Miss, I am a slave. I do not have the qualifications to speak to *you of your actions as an equal. Oh, but if you want to ask me how to slaughter pigs, I can give you a very good suggestion.”

“……What kind of truthful answer is this?”

Two clear streams of tears suddenly rolled down Weylin’s delicate and pretty face, “I just want a sincere word from you…. is it that hard?”

“Calm down, Miss Weylin. I definitely cannot undertake the offense of ‘hating *you’.”

“Forget it. It’s good if you hate me, and what does it matter if you don’t, but I still want to say a few things….”

Weylin was like a child that had been wronged and urgently needed something or someone to depend on and relay her real thoughts to, “Seeing my actions the past several days, the managers and the overseers are definitely thinking: this woman has truly gone mad…. However, they cannot understand the current situation of Sun City, nor will they ever be able to understand my method of conduct!

Sun City has developed to this day to the point that it has become the site of confrontation between me and Suzanne. I want Suzanne’s land, and Suzanne also desires mine.

Suzanne possesses an expert like Sauron, whose strength far surpasses mine, but I possess a force of three thousand people, and don’t necessarily fear Suzanne. We have struggled in deadlock like this for a whole two years.

However, in just these past several days, Overseer Ceci has taken away two thousand of this strong labor force, breaking this balance….”

Weylin smiled bitterly: “Madame Suzanne isn’t an idiot. She will definitely take advantage of this opportunity to annex our farm! I am not an idiot either: I immediately realized that relying on the

farm's strength wouldn't be enough to hold up against Madame Suzanne, which is why it was necessary for me to find a powerful supporter as quickly as possible.

But f*** it all!"

Weylin began to curse in anger, "This woman sent out distress calls to twenty-some friends, but can you guess how that group of lowlives who call my name so familiarly reacted? They said that Madame Suzanne was far too strong, and that they didn't dare to risk ruining their clans to help me!"

"Calm down, Miss Weylin." Jiang Nan shook his head helplessly, "Such is human nature."

"I understand. I don't blame these friends either; they have their own difficulties...." Weylin spoke bitterly: "But since I can't get any assistance from these friends, after thinking for a while, I, I can only plead for backup from clan headquarters."

Clan headquarters?

Jiang Nan had heard of the farm's relationship with headquarters, "Miss, based on my knowledge, clan headquarters normally won't care about our life or death."

"Correct, they 'normally' won't care about us. However, what if I create an 'unusual' circumstance?"

Weylin revealed an expression of determination, “Rodi, while my father was an illegitimate child in the clan, I am still considered a directly related granddaughter of the clan. If I am pushed to the point that I lose absolute all face, or am even killed by someone, do you think…. clan headquarters will avenge me?!”

Jiang Nan was thoroughly frightened, “So you….”

“So I went on a furious rampage right from the time I entered the city. I deliberately lost to Victor in the duel, allowing my body to get heavily injured! I showed Suzanne that I could bear patiently and submitted in ceding our land, forcing her to fear me, to kill me!”

Weylin sobbed soundlessly, “As long as I’m dead, clan headquarters will dispatch people to protect the farm. My father’s life and blood spent for a lifetime…. can also be saved.

Suzanne would definitely never think that I would use my own life to scheme against her!”

Jiang Nan was unable to speak for a long time.

Weylin leaned into Jiang Nan’s arms, “How come you’re not speaking anymore. Are you scolding in your heart that I’m an idiot?”

“No. I was thinking that we aren’t at the end of the line yet. The newly appeared ‘Professor’ still does not have any ties to anybody,

and perhaps....”

Jiang Nan wanted to say, “Perhaps the Professor can provide us with some unexpected assistance.” But right before the words could leave his mouth, “Miss, Miss!”

A farm manager ran over with a joyful face, “Miss, I just finished quarreling with a servant of Suzanne Farms! They’ve agreed to change living areas for *you, and the new living area is located in the most quiet, most suitable place for your recuperation.... the Sixth Block.”

“En, then let’s go to the Sixth Block.”

Weylin’s beautiful eyes revealed a zealous look....

Chapter 029: The Beginning Of Déjà Vu

At noon, Weylin moved into a single-story courtyard house located on the Sixth Block.

Jiang Nan continued to stay beside Weylin, taking care of her. However, he continued to maintain that calm look of his, seeming as though he had already forgotten what Weylin told him, yet also seeming as though he did not forget. In any case, it appeared that he did not care the least bit about Weylin's death talk.

Jiang Nan was not actually cold-blooded though. His apathy stemmed from the fact that he could never forget the grudge he held against Weylin's family.

Auntie Alisa's two legs were cut off by Weylin's elder brother!

Although Weylin was barely nine years old when Alisa was harmed, and despite the fact that the anger towards the elder brother's sin should not be taken out on the younger sister, Weylin…. Weylin was, after all, West's younger sister by blood!

Whenever he saw Weylin, Jiang Nan would think back to his Aunt's monstrous face and two legs, and then he would feel as though an enormous chasm stood between him and Weylin, an enormous chasm that he would forever be unable to cross over!

However….

Jiang Nan could not explain why, but the sudden urge to protect Weylin arose in his heart.

He stood in the courtyard, sighing in the face of his urge, “Ai….”

“Rodi, stop sighing in sorrow there. Hurry up and follow me.”

Eddy rushed out from within the courtyard with a bundle packed entirely of kitchen knives on his back, a hurried expression on his face as he pushed Jiang Nan into a carriage.

“Mister Eddy, what are you….”

Jiang Nan wished to decline, but Eddy glared at him with round eyes, “You smelly brat! Don’t tell me you’ve forgotten your task? Hurry up and come with me. The preparation for the Knife Work Feast is not yet over!”

Knife Work Feast….

Jiang Nan laughed apologetically. He really had forgotten about this matter, “Okay, I didn’t actually forget about my task, but Mister Eddy…. You’ve also seen Miss Weylin’s appearance. It’s truly inconvenient for me to leave this place.”

“You’re just a slave. What are you caring about Weylin for? Hurry up and follow me.”

Eddy suddenly lowered his voice, “You smell brat! I appreciate your knife skills, which is why I’m warning you now: Weylin has offended too many people. Perhaps…. somebody might come tonight to assassinate her! If you don’t want to get involved, then hurry up and follow me.”

Assassinate?!

Jiang Nan looked back at Weylin’s room and then pushed off Eddy’s two hands, “Mister Eddy, I am Miss Weylin’s slave! Now that you’ve told me the word assassination…. Alright, how can I just leave with you?!”

“Hey, you brat….”

Eddy wanted to persuade him more, but at this moment, a voice rang out from within the courtyard, “Rodi, this woman commands you to leave with Eddy!”

Weylin leaned against the window, “Even if a person comes to assassinate me, what can a slave like you do? Even if *I’m lying down on the bed, I’m still one of the top ten experts of Sun City, not a person who needs your protection!”

After she said this, Weylin sent people to escort Jiang Nan onto the carriage, and even shut the window with a ‘thud’.

Beyond the window, the elderly manager of the farm was currently staring at Weylin with worry and gloom in his eyes,

“Miss, it is now in particular that we need manpower, but *you let Rodi go….”

“Me letting Rodi go is because I don’t want him to stay behind and accompany me to death! Yet not only Rodi, all of you must leave this dangerous place as well.”

Weylin wanted to say this, but when the words were about to leave her mouth, they transformed into a furious roar, “What this woman does is still not something that needs your reprimand! Screw off! All of you get the f*** out!”

“Miss, we….”

“Did you not hear me? F*** off!” Weylin pointed at the door, “Have the preparations for ceding Mount Longinus been made? If not, then quickly go into the city and do so! Listen, if you haven’t taken care of everything within three days…. this woman is going to break your useless legs!”

Ai, Miss really can’t be reasoned with anymore….

The elderly manager resentfully brought the rest of the people out of the courtyard.

……

While sitting in Eddy’s carriage, Jiang Nan continued to worry about Weylin. This foolish girl actually staked her own life to

protect the farm.... was it worth it?!

Jiang Nan truly could not comprehend Weylin's mindset. In his perspective, territory, gold coins, and power were all material things that definitely weren't worth exchanging one's life for.

"Smelly brat, we've arrived!"

Eddy lightly patted Jiang Nan out of his thoughts, dragging him and jumping out of the carriage.

They had already arrived in the outskirts of Sun City, and before them was a vast pasture of grass. From the southernmost area to the north, it continued to extend infinitely towards the sky-blue horizon.

This grazing pasture was called 'Rheim Pasture', an asset of the imperial family in Rheim Empire, who occupied an exceedingly great status within Sun City.

Within the pasture, 197 knife work specialists had already congregated, and they were team members which Eddy had called over.

"Assemble, assemble!"

Eddy began to shout at the top of his lungs right after getting off the carriage, and after gathering all the knife work professionals at the gate to the pasture, he pointed towards Jiang Nan, "Everybody,

I've brought to you another companion yet again: this youngster is called Rodi, and is a slave of West Farms. Everybody acquaint yourselves with him because you guys are going to be teammates from now on!"

Slave?! A skinny, middle-aged man's facial expression abruptly distorted, "Captain Eddy, what is the meaning of this?!"

He pointed at Jiang Nan, "You looking for a slave to cooperate with us is simply insulting our identities!"

A stout old man also began waving his two hands, "Is it not more than shaming our identities?! Eddy, I respect you as one of Wade Empire's top four knife work chefs, but I myself was once the chef of a country's royal family! Looking for a slave to become one of my teammates, hmph! Do you want to force me to withdraw from this knife work team?"

"Hey, Malfoy, Mallun, are you the two of you, father and son, not convinced?"

Eddy berated them: "*I've long since told you! My team disregards background and looks completely at strength! Although Rodi is only a slave, his knife work is better than any of you here! I appreciate him, so not only do I want him to join the knife work team, I also want to put him in charge of the Knife Work Feast as vice-captain! Anybody who refuses to accept this, stand out!"

"I refuse to accept this!"

“Eddy, do you still have the face and dignity of an aristocrat?”

Thirtysome knife work specialists all stood out and began arguing with Eddy.

Jiang Nan, on the other hand, touched the bridge of his nose as he suddenly let out a nostalgic smile.

He was too familiar with the scene occurring before him: a long time ago, when he was still an anatomy professor, there were many experts and authorities like the knife work specialists before him who protested his coming.

In this situation, Jiang Nan always believed that the only way to calm such a storm…. was to show off one’s strength and shut the mouths of these so-called experts!

“Calm down, gentlemen, please calm down!”

Jiang Nan walked to the front of Eddy and obstructed the knife work specialists’ view, “Alright, everybody is dissatisfied with my identity as a slave, but…. our goal in coming here is not for your happiness and pleasure either!

I’ve come for the sake of the Knife Work Feast! If everybody wishes for me to leave this place, that’s fine. However, if everybody could please give proof: prove that after I leave, you all have the ability to take my place! Prove that after you’ve lost me, you can still maintain the standard of the Knife Work Feast!”

“You damned lowlife, what did you say?!” The stout, old man by the name of ‘Mallun’ flew into rage.

Chapter 030: An Absolutely Strange Outcome

"Mister Mallun, I've already said it very clearly."

Jiang Nan shrugged his shoulders, "Alright. If there is something impeding your comprehension ability, then I'll say it to you a different way: I'm saying that strength decides your position in Mister Eddy's team. If you all wish to cast me out, then please demonstrate a strength that will make me leave willingly!

If you don't have this kind of strength, then please genuinely accept me as vice-captain."

"Ha, haha!" Mallun acted as though he had heard the most ridiculous joke on the planet, "Did everybody hear that? This slave is challenging us? Challenging us?

Lowlife, who do you think I am?!" Mallun's son, the skinny, middle-aged man, 'Malfoy', also laughed out loud, "You wish to challenge us, but do you know our identities? Here, at least thirty something of us are famous chefs. On top of that, my father, Mr. Mallun, is an aristocrat, an imperial chef of the empire's imperial household! You challenging us.... Is simply insulting our identities!"

Malfoy called over a team of overseers in the pasture, "This slave actually dares to challenge a noble! Hang him up and beat him, don't even stop until you beat him to death!"

There was actually nothing wrong with Malfoy's words. After all, this was not Earth, a place where Jiang Nan could freely challenge anyone; this was the Yuanzhi Continent!

On the Yuanzhi Continent, a slave challenging an aristocrat was a major offense that was unpardonable! The《Imperial Slave Law》expressly stipulated: any slave who dares to provoke an aristocrat on the basis of any means will be considered to be slandering the Empire's aristocratic authority! They are to be hung up and beaten till death!

Several overseers with whips in their hands charged over!

Jiang Nan simply glanced askance at the overseers. In the face of this father-son duo provocation, he did not choose to swallow his anger this time! This was because this was not West Farms. Here, nobody could use the brand of slave to threaten Jiang Nan!

"Gentlemen, violence is not very good conduct. Oh, it truly isn't!"

Jiang Nan did not use any totem strength, but rather relied solely on the agility of his body. He passed through the swarm of overseers and abruptly arrived before Malfoy, lightly tapping Malfoy's shoulder as if teaching the students like he had done before in the past world.

But just this light tap....

“Ahhh!”

Malfoy let out a miserable shriek because Jiang Nan had already dislocated his shoulder blade!

Jiang Nan turned his head and faced the crowd of people who were beginning to get restless, “Gentlemen, do you wish to continue? Alright. I’m a slave, but I am not your slave! Oh, I don’t mind letting you guys lie on a sickbed to recuperate for several days.”

“Rodi, you lowlife!” Mallun looked anxiously at his son’s injury, roaring: “Overseers of the pasture, what are you standing there in a daze for?! Charge! Get....”

“All of you f***ing stop!”

Suddenly, Eddy seized two huge kitchen knives from his bundle and raised it up high, “I, am the person in charge here! Without my permission, who f***ing dares to act blindly!”

Mallun also raised his kitchen knife, “Eddy, Rodi injured my son! You dare....”

“You shut your f***ing mouth!”

The tip of Eddy’s blade pointed at the Malfoy who wished to

speak, “I’ll say it once more! My team only looks at strength, not status or identity! My decision will not change, and from this point on, Rodi is your vice-captain! Whoever isn’t satisfied.... take a hike! If *I have an expert like Rodi here, I don’t mind driving away some useless garbage!”

After listening halfway, Mallun and Malfoy, the father-son duo, had already planned on walking off. However, after hearing the phrase ‘useless garbage’, they immediately screeched to a stop.

Wouldn’t walking off dejectedly be admitting that they themselves were ‘useless garbage’?

They glared resentfully at Jiang Nan, so infuriated that they couldn’t even speak.

Eddy grinned widely, “Nobody objects? Ai, this is good enough. What slaves or not slaves. Everybody is a chef, so why bother nitpicking with identity?

Alright, so Rodi is going to be your vice-captain~ *I am going to go gather up some more knife work specialists now. When I am not here, Rodi will act on my behalf to handle the matters here. Mallun, tell Rodi what he should do.”

After he said this, Eddy turned and leapt onto the carriage. However, he soon facepalmed, “Aiyah! I nearly forgot. If I leave, Rodi that young lad won’t be able to suppress the crowd!”

Thinking till here, Eddy stood on top of the carriage and waved towards the overseers, “Brothers, while I am not here, many thanks for your trouble! You will all listen to Rodi, and if anyone dares to challenge Rodi’s position as vice-captain like Mallun…. You guys help me beat them the f*** up!!”

“As you say….” The overseers answered reluctantly.

Seeing this scene, Jiang Nan’s impression of Eddy grew much better. Sending Eddy off with his eyes, he turned his head towards the knife workers whose faces held no trace of good intent, “Gentlemen, okay, I am the vice-captain….”

“Someone help! First bring my son to the doctor’s!”

Mallun suddenly cut off Jiang Nan’s words by telling people to take his son, Malfoy, away on a stretcher, and then rushed towards ten odd knife workers, gesturing, “All of you, come over! I have something to say!”

These ten odd knife work specialists were all Mallun’s disciples and simply ignored Jiang Nan’s existence, following Mallun towards the shade of a large tree, “Teacher, do *you have any instruction for us?”

“All of you, look at Jiang Nan. He injured my son, your elder brother. Can you accept this?”

Mallun viciously glared at Jiang Nan in the distance. However,

Jiang Nan simply stood there smiling as if he didn't exist, his face seeming to say, 'Do you exist? Okay, you don't exist'.

"Of course we don't accept this!" The knife work specialists answered gloomily.

"You guys don't accept this, and I can't swallow my anger either!" Mallun gritted his teeth as he spoke: "In terms of knife work, and experience, I am not equal to Eddy, so I have no objections in regards to Eddy being captain. However, Eddy has really gone too far! He actually found a slave to become our vice-captain, and this slave even injured my son! Don't tell me a slave is nobler than we are! Am I not more suited to be vice-captain than Rodi?"

His tone softened, "Of course, me talking like this isn't to dispute the shallow title of vice-captain. I am just unreconciled with the fact that Eddy gave the seat of vice-captain to a slave...."

Mallun stroked his large beard, "You are all my disciples, so I'll just say it to you directly: I wish for you all to treat Rodi as a mere figurehead: from this point on, no matter what Rodi says or tells you to do, just act as if you didn't hear it! We must let Rodi know that the role of vice-captain is not so easily fulfilled!"

"Teacher, *your method is pretty good, but Rodi is in charge of all the pasture's overseers! If we don't listen, he'll command the overseers to...."

"Idiot! Did you not see the overseers' attitude? They are also

unwilling to assist a slave! Just do as I say; the overseers definitely won't make any trouble for you."

……

Just as Mallun instructed, the ten odd knife work specialists began to ignore all of Jiang Nan's actions: when Jiang Nan told them to introduce themselves, they just laughed it off and said they had more important work to do, troubling *him to just go look for someone else.

And when Jiang Nan asked them nicely to inform him of the specific details concerning the knife work feast, they just smirked, "Since Vice-captain doesn't know this, okay, we don't know either…."

Under the guidance of these several knife work specialists, the others also realized that Jiang Nan was just a mere figurehead whose words held no actual substance and began to ignore his orders.

When evening came, Rheim Pasture had sunk into a strange state: Jiang Nan slaughtered pigs alone in the pasture. Nobody provoked him, but he could not find a way to provoke anyone either.

Because not even one person bothered to pay attention to him.

However, Jiang Nan really enjoyed this kind of situation!

He kept worrying about Weylin in his heart, and recalling that foolish girl's expression that showed a determination to die, he could not help but desire returning to the Sixth Block to have a look.

The situation at the pasture luckily gave him this kind of opportunity.

When night fell, Jiang Nan stealthily returned to Sun City. His Professor's garb had already long been thrown into the garbage dump, so he could not find any of the equipment he had used to conceal his identity. As such, he randomly just a few pieces of cloth to mask his face.

He then stood guard for an entire night outside of Weylin's residence.

That night, all was at peace.

Early the second day, Jiang Nan returned to Rheim Pasture while nobody paid any mind in regards to his doings during the night.

The second day and the third day, Jiang Nan repeated the things that he felt were meaningless.

Until the fourth day....

At dusk, Jiang Nan wanted to head out like he had been doing the nights before to guard Weylin, but Eddy had returned with twenty new knife work specialist recruits to the pasture.

When Eddy saw that Mallun was simply ignoring Jiang Nan, he immediately pointed at Mallun's noise and unleashed a barrage of scolding.

This round of scolding lasted for an entire half hour.

And while Eddy was berating people and holding Rodi up in the process, two black figures.... were already lying in wait outside Weylin's window!

Chapter 031: Lady Weylin's Vexation

Weylin still wasn't aware that she had been targeted by assassins. Right now, she was vexed, exceedingly vexed!

Weylin's vexation stemmed from Victor.

The day Jiang Nan had been rushed to Rheim Pasture, Victor had suddenly come looking for Weylin not long after he left.

He knocked on the window from the outside and said, "M-Miss Weylin, could I speak to *you for a bit?"

At that time, Weylin had been lying on the bed in recuperation. Assuming that Victor had come to annoy her, she seized a dresser and threw it over, "You want to continue fighting? This woman will accompany you till the end!"

Crash!

The dresser smashed through the window, allowing Weylin to see Victor's appearance outside.

He wore the black, formal attire of an aristocrat and stood up with his back ramrod straight, revealing a bouquet of ninety-nine light red roses, while in his other hand, he carried a container of medicines especially for healing. In his proud eyes, one could see that it brimmed with the bashfulness of an underripe youth.

The roses had been crushed by the dresser.

Weylin went blank, “You?”

“Miss Weylin, I, I wish to ask for your hand in marriage!”

Victor’s face carried a shy look that seemed to say, “Forget crushing my roses, even if you crush my face, I’ll still pursue you!”

He really had come to propose: Victor’s faith was the power of the wolf, and his concept of choosing a bride was the same as the wolf species – he revered the strong.

Victor had always hoped to find a wife whose strength was evenly matched with his, but it had to be said that Victor really was a rarely seen talent. Unmarried women who were capable of fighting on even terms with him were far too few, and even after bitterly searching for five years, Victor had still not found a woman worthy of his admiration.

But just two days before, Weylin had beaten him up until he was black and blue in the arena. Although Victor had barely ‘prevailed’ over Weylin, an unrestrainable thought bloomed in his heart, “A wolf ought to take a woman like Weylin for his wife!”

If you can fight, then you ought to get married to me; this was Victor’s concept of love.

Victor openly revealed everything in his heart straight away and

then stared into Weylin's eyes, "Weylin, are you willing to become my woman?"

"Become your woman your mom!" Weylin heaved a second dresser towards Victor's face.

For the sake of expressing his sincerity, Victor directly bore the brunt of the dresser, "Weylin, I understand that when a wolf is choosing a spouse, he must always undergo tests. I will prove to you that I can pass your tests!"

For the next several days, Victor would set aside some time everyday without fail to express his love towards Weylin, while the scars on his face grew more and more, and even more, and even more....

Today was already the third day, and as Weylin watched the time, she estimated that there would still be a few minutes before Victor appeared before her.

As expected, two minutes later, Victor's voice floated over from the outside, "Miss Weylin, can I come in?"

.....

While Weylin boiled in irritation, the two black figures waiting in ambush in the vicinity were also annoyed.

They were the assassins dispatched by the 'Sheffield Clan'.

One of them was named ‘Rick’ while the other was named ‘Reggie’.

Reggie and Rick were twins whose faiths stemmed from the power of the ‘Gemini Constellation’. They were both primary-rank 7th level Star Totem Warriors who shared nineteenth place on the Totem Ranking.

When the Sheffield Clan obtained news of Weylin’s dwelling place just before, they acted according to Madame Suzanne’s expectations and decided to assassinate Weylin, hence the immediate dispatch of the Gemini.

However….

Right when they wanted to take action, Victor had arrived!

“Big Bro, are we still going to move?”

Reggie pulled Rick’s body to hide on top of a large tree. His narrow eyes flashed with a sinister light, “Seeing how Victor looks, once we take action, we’ll definitely face the combined counterattack from both of them.”

Rick pondered for a bit, “Move! Weylin and Victor are both injured; they definitely aren’t our opponents! However, Victor’s identity is not ordinary, so we have to do this a bit cleaner. We absolutely cannot reveal our identities.

As another precaution, I'll stay here monitoring them while you quickly go and ask for reinforcements from Elder Merlin. Just ask the Elder to dispatch at least fifty elite assassins over in order to ensure the assassination of Victor and Weylin in the shortest time possible."

Merlin was precisely ranked second on Sun City's Top Ten Ranking, an intermediate-rank 3rd level Cloud Totem Warrior.

After responding, Reggie turned and left.

Meanwhile, Weylin had already opened the room's door, although there weren't any traces of the anger from the previous days, "Victor, what is a lowlife like you coming here for?"

"Of course I came here to propose to you." Seeing as how Weylin did not fly into a flurry of curses, Victor assumed that she had already been moved by his sincerity, "By not beating me up today, are you prepared to accept my proposal? This wolf admires your decision!"

In truth, the reason why Weylin did not blow her top was because she had a new plan: she was prepared to reveal some of her true thoughts to Victor.

Weylin wanted to say, "Accept your proposal?! Bullcrap! Victor, just f***ing screw off as far as you can. Truthfully speaking, there is already a person in my heart! Although that brat's identity is quite low, and although he can't even withstand one finger from

you, I've already taken a fancy to him! Get your f***ing ass out of here!"

It was a pity that Victor did not give Weylin a chance to say this due to his desperate words, "Weylin, since you've accepted my proposal, I can tell you a colossal piece of good news."

Good news?

Weylin went blank, and the words that were just about to leave her mouth were swallowed back up.

"Truthfully speaking, I've already written about you to my father. Within twenty days, my father, his honor Sofus the Wolf King of Reyne Mountain, will personally come to see you."

Victor's facial expression was as though he had just seen a female wolf submit to him, "You also know of my father's strength. In that old man's eyes, the so-called experts in Sun City are simply nobodies that aren't even considered mainstream. Once that old man arrives in Sun City, Weylin, you and I as husband and wife can completely dominate Suzanne Farms and annex the entire territory of Sun City. Furthermore, we can even...."

(*TL: respectful way of saying it in Chinese 老人家. I know old man doesn't sound respectful, but the raws are)

"Lowlife, are you done speaking?"

Weylin disrupted Victor's fantasy. She truly could not restrain

herself from wanting to relay the true thoughts in her heart anymore. However, right at this moment, whoosh, whoosh, whoosh!

The sound of things violently tearing through the air rang out.

Reggie had already brought over reinforcements, and the fifty elite assassins hidden in the large tree in the vicinity let loose a rain of arrows that covered the sky in Weylin and Victor's direction.

"You guys actually dare to provoke this wolf's woman?! Awoooo~~~"

Victor raised his head and howled to the sky as his body abruptly expanded under the illumination of the three moons. In the blink of an eye, he had already become a savage wolf man even taller than the courtyard walls.

At the same time, his howl conjured up an energy wave that condensed into a seemingly tangible cyclone. Crack, crack! It ground the numerous arrows into bits in Victor and Weylin's place.

Reyne Mountain's Wolf Clan secret skill, Twenty-Seventh Form of the Wolf Howl, Cyclone Blade!

However, the Gemini had already moved out under the cover of the volley of arrows. They shot towards Victor in a pincer attack

from the left and from the right. Their pace seemed to break apart as every step resulted in their figures shrinking by a certain portion.

By the time they had rushed into the courtyard, their figures had already transformed into two points of starlight. Like a pair of needle-like steel daggers, they pierced into Victor's ribcage without a sound.

"Awooo!!!"

Victor's injuries had not yet healed, so his reactions were too slow by half a beat. With a miserable scream of wrath and indignation, he toppled to the floor.

The Gemini immediately pounced towards Weylin. In regards to the heavily injured Victor, they disdained to continue facing him, "Victor has an inherited secret art for protecting his body. Stab him a few more times in my place."

After he said this, Reggie was about to take action to kill Weylin!

However....

Weylin's expression made him feel as though the atmosphere was a bit odd.

Weylin was actually smiling!

Could it be that she still had some hidden tricks up her sleeve?

Reggie wasn't aware that Weylin thirsted for death, so he halted his steps, "Big Bro, wait a minute. Look at Weylin's expression!"

Rick looked at Weylin's expression and went blank.

"Why are you stopping? This woman's just standing here. If you have the guts, then come kill me!"

Weylin dashed towards them with her arms spread apart.

The Gemini shared a glance, their expressions solemn, "Big Bro, Weylin definitely has something up her sleeve.... Take over the formation for me. I'll go probe her out!"

"Alright! Be especially careful!"

Seeing how the Gemini were so cautious, Weylin let out a laugh of contempt.

Then, she saw Reggie pull out what seemed like a beam of starlight as he slashed towards her throat.

Was she finally about to die?

Weylin looked up and let out a sigh of relief, but right at this moment, “Mister, is it fun to bully a woman?!”

A slender figure appeared before Weylin like lightning. Midair, he moved swiftly and fiercely as he used his left hand to push away Reggie’s sharp claw. His right hand then exploded onto Reggie’s chest in a fluid movement!

Bang!

Reggie flew outwards, collided into a tall wall which broke into pieces, then smashed heavily onto the ground, forming a crater that was half a foot deep!

What tyrannical strength….

Strength Totem! At least a primary-rank 8th level Strength Totem!

A rumor abruptly appeared in the mind of Rick who had taken charge of the formation, “Primary-rank 8th level Strength Totem…. Professor, you’re the Professor?!”

Chapter 032: Decision

That's right, Jiang Nan had arrived!

He had been held up by Eddy at the pasture for half an hour, and it wasn't until five minutes before that he finally found an excuse to excuse himself.

By coincidence, Jiang Nan had arrived right as Reggie was about to assassinate Weylin. However, Weylin's clear determination to die ignited a violent fury in his heart, so he activated the Radiance Technique and then punched out a heavy fist towards Reggie.

Even Jiang Nan didn't know why he was so furious, but there was one thing that he was very clear on. Right now, he was enraged, extremely enraged!

More so in particular when he saw Victor in his proposal attire lying on the ground! The rage in his heart had already become an unrestrainable urge!

Jiang Nan's fist knocked Reggie to the ground, and then used its lingering momentum to punch towards Rick's head. As Jiang Nan's body spun around, his two fists also swivelled like two wings of a windmill, smashing towards Rick's face.

This motion was precisely an imitation of the move Hank used, Iron Roar's Twenty-Fourth Stance, Massive Windmill!

Although Jiang Nan did not understand the essence of this skill and had just temporarily imitated it on a whim, after activating the Radiance Technique, his primary-rank 8th level necromantic energy was not something Rick could withstand.

Rick was only a primary-rank 7th level Star Totem Warrior who didn't dare to fight head-on against Jiang Nan. Transforming into a beam of starlight, he wanted to fly to the side and land a sneak attack on the middle of Jiang Nan's back.

But right as Rick flew to the side, he suddenly recalled the evaluation given towards Jiang Nan on the Totem Ranking, "Professor, although he is only at the 8th level, his actual fighting technique is the absolute greatest in Sun City! With his incomparable striking speed and his matchless attack rhythm, if one does not have an overpowering advantage in strength, one must avoid close combat by all means!"

He had to avoid close combat with the Professor!

Reggie fiercely sucked in a breath and forcefully stopped his body from dashing forward.

However, between experts, victory could be decided within a breath's time. The hesitation Reggie displayed was more than enough time for Jiang Nan to seize an opportunity!

"Mister, you need to be a bit more focused."

From his fighting experience with Hank, Jiang Nan had a deep understanding that the speed at which he dislocated bones had an enormous advantage in actual battle. He extended two fingers out and lightly grasped onto the starlight which Rick had turned into.

When Rick's body halted, his body involuntarily reverted back to his human form, and right at that moment, Jiang Nan followed the patterns of his transformation and clack! Clack! He dislocated all the joints in Rick's two arms.

Thud!

As if he was disposing of garbage, Jiang Nan threw Rick beside Reggie.

He then swept his gaze over the fifty assassins still hiding in ambush, "Gentlemen, do you still wish to continue?"

Two moves....

With just two moves, he disabled the Gemini who held rank nineteen?!

Sun City's ranked fourth expert was truly deserving of his reputation!!

The assassins sank into a brief moment of disorder and panic.

At this time, Reggie, who had been knocked flying by Jiang Nan's fist, had already climbed to his feet. His right hand faintly shook as his head sank with dizziness, "Stop, everybody stop! Listen to me!"

The assassins let out a sigh of relief as though a burden had been lifted off their shoulders.

Reggie supported his twin big brother whose body was half limp and took a clear look at Jiang Nan for the first time.

Jiang Nan was still dressed in the disguise he had used the past few days: a shabby, sackcloth robe, a pair of worn out, cotton shoes, as well as several strips of rags to hide his face.

The widely spread rumors that referred to the Professor as a fallen aristocrat were, as expected, true.

Reggie confirmed Jiang Nan's identity, "Lord Professor, this is a personal grudge between us and Weylin. *You are only an outsider aristocrat. Is there a need for you to stick out your head for Weylin and get muddled up into this?

Help us out, okay? Let us take away Weylin and early tomorrow morning, we'll willingly present *you with a gift of gratitude fitting to *your identity!"

"Not a bad deal, but...." Jiang Nan circled around the Weylin whose face was full of astonishment, deliberately speaking in a throaty and hoarse voice, "What if I refuse?"

“Lord Professor, I must warn *you that your decision is unwise!” Reggie didn’t want to give up this opportunity to assassinate Weylin. Seeing that his attractive proposal had no effect, his face went icy as he spoke menacingly: “I admit, you are more than capable of protecting Weylin from our hands tonight. However, our attempts at assassinating Weylin will not cease here! Even if you protect Weylin tonight, what about tomorrow? Can you guard Weylin at her side for an entire lifetime? Professor, your actions are completely meaningless!”

“Oh, your words do make a bit of sense. However…. who says that I can’t guard Weylin at her side for an entire lifetime?!”

Jiang Nan’s tone suddenly heightened as he dashed towards Weylin and gave a slight bow, “Miss Weylin, I sincerely request with the title of Professor to apply to join West Farms. Are *you…. interested in recruiting me?”

Weylin stared with her eyes wide in stupefaction, “You, you….”

“Miss, *you have not heard wrongly. I am currently applying to join your farm.” Jiang Nan spread his arms apart helplessly, “You’ve also seen my appearance. Okay, I am a foreign aristocrat who has fallen into dire straits. I need some work to support myself.”

He actually wanted to join her farm?!

Sun City’s ranked fourth expert was actually willing to lean on a

near hopeless farm?!

Weylin didn't dare to believe that this kind of fortune had befallen her, but she was even more unwilling to give up this golden opportunity from the heavens, "Lord Professor, I sincerely request with my name as Weylin for *your services as West Farms' chief associate!"

Jiang Nan smiled.

Then, he turned around to face the Gemini, "Gentlemen, you've heard it all. Now, give me your answer. Will you decide to.... leave unaccompanied, or have me drive you away?"

"Professor, you will regret the decision you made today!"

.....

Reggie brought his people and left Weylin's courtyard.

Not long after they left, Weylin's expression turned from shock to perplexity, which further turned into an iciness that kept people at a distance of a thousand miles away.

She was suspecting the Professor's choice: thinking a bit deeper about it, the Professor was a person whose strength was ranked fourth in all of Sun City. Suzanne and the others had also provided exceedingly attractive proposals to lure him in.

However....

The Professor actually chose the her who was nearly at the end of her rope?!

There was definitely some sort of unspeakable aim behind this behavior!

Weylin skeptically gave Jiang Nan a measuring look, “The enemy has already left. Can you speak truthfully now? Exactly what are you aiming for in joining my farm?”

“Is this question of yours that important? Miss Weylin, I helped you force those assassins into retreat, and your farm possesses the backing of one of the top ten experts once more. With this kind of outcome, is there a need for you to question my goals?” Jiang Nan patted Weylin’s shoulder, “If you really need an answer.... Okay, just take it as me meddling in other people’s business. On the other hand, please speak a bit more courteously. I am not your slave, but rather on equal terms with you, am I not?”

“Just being meddlesome? Hmph, do you expect *me to believe your false nonsense?!”

Weylin snorted harshly, but she no longer had the courage to continue interrogating him.

She was afraid that if she continued to ask questions, the

Professor would just abandon her!

Weylin was very clear about the current situation: the Professor was Sun City's fourth ranked expert. With his cooperation, on defense, she could still preserve the lifeblood of her father even under Suzanne's forceful tactics. Offensively, she could silently wait for her injuries to fully heal, then team up with the Professor to subdue all the various powers in Sun City. Furthermore, whether she went on the defensive or offensive, there was no need whatsoever for her to put her life on the line to protect the farm.

In the face of such generous benefits, even if Weylin knew that the Professor harbored questionable intent, she still couldn't bear to let him go.

"Alright, this woman always keeps her word! From this day forward, you are West Farm's chief marshal!"

Weylin waved her fist about as she spoke, then pointed towards the ragged strips on Jiang Nan's face, "You've already joined my farm. Are you still not going to take that mask off?"

"Miss Weylin, you ought to learn to respect the secrets of others." Jiang Nan touched the strips on his face, "Just take a look. That I've dressed myself up like this shows that I definitely have my own troubles. I am not preparing to tell you of my identity, nor am I preparing to take off my mask. If you force me.... Alright, I don't mind leaving this place or even fighting with you."

After he said this, Jiang Nan turned to leave.

“Halt!” Weylin stopped Jiang Nan, “This woman respects your private affairs! Starting today, I won’t ask you about your background or try to look at your appearance! This should be enough, right?!”

Jiang Nan chuckled.

Weylin, on the other hand, glared at the Victor who was on the side while seething, “However, since you’ve already joined my farm anyhow, how about you first help me take care of some trash?”

Jiang Nan eyes followed Weylin’s gaze to also land on Victor, “Do you want me to kill him?”

“Correct, kill him!” This was what Weylin wanted to say, “Since that lowlife I’ve taken a fancy to doesn’t have the ability to kill Victor, this woman will just help him get rid of this love rival in his place!”

Chapter 033: The Professor Must Die

However, she quickly recalled Victor's previous words: Victor's father was about to arrive in Sun City, and killing Victor now would only serve to bring enormous trouble.

As such, Weylin corrected herself and said, "Who said this woman wanted to kill him?! Just help me throw him out of here. The further the better! The best would be that you throw him so far that he can't come back!"

Jiang Nan suddenly felt a sense of relief wash through his entire body, "Alright, as *you wish!"

He heaved Victor up, but right at this moment, "Miss, Miss!"

West Farms' overseers charged in in a heart-rending sight. Their eyes had all gone bloodshot and they were gripping their weapons so hard that green veins protruded from their skin, making them seem like a pack of tigers gone berserk.

Three days before, Weylin had driven the managers and overseers to the farm. However, their hearts weren't able to rest assured concerning Weylin's safety, so besides not going too far, they also kept sending people to gather news of Weylin from outside her courtyard.

Just before, the manager in charge of gleaning some news saw Victor's intent to propose as well as the first half of the Gemini's assassination attempt.

And then he made the most wise decision.

On one side, the manager prayed that Victor would be able to hold on for a time. On the other, he began assembling the overseers at the quickest speed possible, and then led the party charging into the courtyard.

“Miss Weylin, it seems my presence is no longer necessary.”

Jiang Nan didn’t feel like meeting the people who would often beat and scold him. Carrying Victor, he left the courtyard from a different direction, “If you wish to contact me, fire red and purple flares, and then I’ll promptly rush over.”

The elderly manager darted a glance towards Jiang Nan’s receding figure, “Miss, this person is….”

Weylin watched Jiang Nan’s back with some disappointment and laughed self-deprecatingly, “Him? He’s a lowlife who refers to himself as ‘Professor’.”

“Professor…. Sun City’s ranked fourth expert?!”

The managers abruptly fell into a daze.

After Weylin narrated what had happened just before to them, their faces became radiant with delight, “Miss, no matter what sort

of scheme the Professor has in mind, our farm now has hope!”

“That’s right! Now that Sun City’s fourth ranked expert has joined our ranks, who the f*** cares about any scheme? As long as he is willing to do his utmost in helping us contend…. W-we can deal with any f***ing person!”

“Don’t be happy so easily!” The elderly manager’s face was very calm and collected, “Although the Professor has allied with us, temporarily making our enemies have misgivings about acting against us, please remember that the Professor is only ranked fourth. On the other hand, our enemy…. is Sauron!”

Sauron….

Everybody suddenly grew silent.

The elderly manager also felt that his words were a bit too serious, “Alright! Right now isn’t the time to fret in anxiety. No matter what, we once again have the protection of one of the top ten experts, as well as a bargaining chip to negotiate with Suzanne!”

He gave a slight bow in Weylin’s direction and said with a face full of spirit, “Miss, Lola has already returned home to get the map. However, the situation right now has changed. Do we…. still have to cede Mount Longinus?!”

“Cede my ass!” Weylin calculated the time, “Lola will soon return

from getting the map. When she returns, *I will take the map and go negotiate with Suzanne. I want to see whether that lowlife still dares to swallow up my Mount Longinus!”

The managers all burst out in hearty laughter.

Having one of the top ten experts backing them once more made them feel genuinely carefree.

And right on top of a water tower not far away….

Sauron also chuckled, “Tsk, tsk. With the support of the Professor, Weylin is no longer going to hand over Mount Longinus.”

……

Back when their plan was decided back in the conference room, Madame Suzanne requested Sauron to keep a strict surveillance over the Sheffield’s clan every movement. As a result, Sauron had kept monitoring the Gemini.

He had also seen the entire course of the Gemini’s assassination attempt on Weylin.

However, this had to be clarified: Sauron was, after all, ten odd meters away on top of the water tower, so he wasn’t able to hear what Weylin was saying. He could only make some deductions about the reality of the situation by observing Weylin’s behavior.

On the other hand, before the Gemini's attempted assassination, they had been more than several meters away, so they did not hear the conversation that had occurred in the courtyard either.

As a consequence....

Neither Sauron nor the Gemini knew of an exceedingly important piece of news: Reyne Mountain's King, Sofus, was about to arrive in Sun City!

Besides Sauron was a black figure that was likewise skinny and possessed extraordinarily long arms, "I never imagined that the Professor would ally himself with West Farms. Ai, Madame's plan to kill two birds with one stone temporarily cannot be carried out!"

This black figure was an expert of Suzanne Farms, as well as Sauron's personal assistant. As he spoke, he suddenly began mincing his words, "Lord Sauron, just before, how come *you.... How come *you didn't kill the Professor?

The Professor has already allied himself with West Farms and become our sworn enemy. Since he left while carrying Victor, *you could have totally ended him on the road! But you, how come you gave up this chance?"

Sauron picked his nails as he answered coolly, "The Professor already does not have many days left to live. Do I need to off an enemy who's bound to die?"

The Professor must die?!

The assistant was stunned.

“Do you still not understand?” Sauron shook his head in disappointment, “If you don’t understand, then just come with me. I’ll take you to watch a good show, and after watching, you’ll understand.”

At night, Weylin’s courtyard was full of joyous activity, but Sauron was like a demonic viper who silently slithered out of Sun City under the cover of the night.

He came to a valley in the outskirts of Sun City.

In the furthest depths of the valley was a small wooden cottage.

And the Gemini were currently kneeling in front of the wooden cottage!

At this time, Reggie was currently in the middle of giving an account of their assassination attempt, his face full of shame, “Elder Merlin, Elder Gibson, your subordinate is incompetent! The Professor suddenly appeared and saved Weylin. W-We were not the Professor’s match! Please punish us as *you see fit!”

Merlin and Gibson were Sun City’s ranked second and ranked third experts, respectively. Once they teamed up, they became a Weather Totem who even Sauron would not dare to deal with

carelessly!

A faintly discernible voice floated out from within the small wooden cottage, “Your incompetence does not condemn you. Arise!”

A middle-aged woman with dimly silver long hair pushed open the wooden door while wearing a plain white gown.

This woman was precisely Merlin of the wind, and she took a look at the Rick whose upper half of the body was completely paralyzed, “How long did it take the Professor to inflict this kind of serious injury on Rick?”

Reggie’s face faintly flushed, “This…. Elder Merlin, at that time, I had been knocked to the ground by the Professor, s-so I didn’t see clearly.”

Rick was already in so much pain that he was near unable to speak. He opened his mouth with difficulty, “Elder, I cannot say it accurately either, but it definitely did not exceed two or three seconds.”

“Two or three seconds? Gibson, did you hear that? In just two to three seconds, the Professor disabled Rick!”

“Of course I heard it. With his incomparable fighting technique and his matchless attack rhythm, the Professor is not an easy opponent!”

A burly middle-aged man rushed out, “Merlin, we’ve already hidden here for two years! My hands are unbearably itchy, and there seldom appears a good opponent like the Professor. You stay here, and I’ll go kill him!”

This burly man was named Gibson. He assumed that the Professor was simply a ‘primary-rank’ totem warrior, so he himself would be more than enough to deal with the Professor.

To his surprise, Merlin gave a faint smile, “It’s still better for us to go together. Although the Professor isn’t worth our combined attack, there seldom comes a worthy opponent. On the Professor’s body…. we can test out our new attack!”

New attack?! Reggie lifted his head in pleasant surprise, “Elders, you have already fully succeeded in training your new attack move?”

Chapter 034: A 'Self-Initiated' Challenge

Behind a rock located a distance away, Sauron's assistant also asked him a similar question, "Lord Sauron, what does the Weather pair mean by new attack?"

Although the distance between them and the Weather Totem duo was a bit far, by relying on the echoes that resounded through the valley, they were still able to pick out the Weather duo's words.

Sauron's smile contained a certain degree of secrecy, "Do you still remember two years ago? The Weather duo teamed up to fight against me at Mount Longinus, but I beat them so thoroughly that one of them vomited blood on the spot, while the other was bedridden for half a year. This grudge has continuously been on both of their minds!

These two years, their hiding in this place is all for the sake of researching a new attack to deal with me!"

Sauron rubbed his arm, a carnivorous flower already sprouting out as he spoke with surging battle intent, "It seems that they've successfully researched this new attack of theirs. Well, it's also good. I'll just use the Professor to take a look at their accomplishments and see exactly how powerful their newly researched attack is!"

He paused for a bit, "My dear mister, now do you understand what I mean when I say the Professor is bound to die?"

The Professor must die was naturally referring to the fact that he would not be able to escape the Weather Totem duo's killing pursuit, "Yes, I understand. Now, should we....

Should we immediately return and report this to Madame Suzanne?"

"There's no hurry." Sauron's finger wagged, "Keep listening and see what kind of method the Weather duo is planning to employ to deal with the Professor."

By coincidence, the Weather pair directed the conversation to this topic as well, and Gibson laughed heartily, "That's also good. We'll just use the Professor to test our new attack then. Merlin, when we fight with the Professor, what method do you plan on using? Assassinating him or openly challenging him?"

Merlin laughed mysteriously, "If we assassinate him, then our identities are no longer part of the equation. If we openly challenge him, we are Sun City's ranked second and third experts! Taking the initiative to challenge the ranked fourth expert would degrade our identities. My method is.... for the Professor to challenge us of his own accord!"

"Make the Professor challenge us out of his own accord?" Gibson sneered: "Old hag, have you gone off your rocker? No matter how reckless the Professor is, he will definitely know that he is not a match for us. How could he take the initiative to provoke us?"

"Just know that I have a way! Reggie, in the midst of your

assassination attempt, you didn't expose your identity, did you?"

"Correct!"

"Wonderful! Reggie, immediately send someone to impersonate the Professor and write a 'public declaration' of challenge to Elder Gibson. Use the Professor's tone saying this: the Professor is unwilling to simply occupy fourth place on the Totem Ranking, and he wishes to challenge the third ranked Gibson in the Totem Arena!"

Merlin's expression was a bit sinister, "Experts all have their own dignity. When the Professor sees this publicly declared letter of challenge, even if he knows that he's been plotted against, he will most definitely still accept the challenge. Once the Professor accepts the challenge and steps into the Totem Arena.... Gibson, just request that they conduct a 'sealed-off' match, and then we'll both take action and kill him using our new attack move!"

Gibson fixed his eyes on Merlin for a few seconds, and then suddenly roared into laughter, "Merlin, I've realized for the first time that you are actually pretty f***ing vicious!"

Merlin also laughed.

Not far away, Sauron was also smiling as he continuously shook his head, "In the two years we haven't seen each other, Merlin has actually gained some brains and knows how to use her head to kill people now. Tsk, tsk. Only this kind of opponent is interesting."

Seeing that the Sheffield Clan's people had already started moving, he knew that he wouldn't be able to glean any more information, "Alright, we already know everything that we should know. Let's go. We'll return to report this to the Madame."

……

Several minutes later, Sauron arrived at Madame Suzanne's room in the Elegant Forest Restaurant.

When Madame Suzanne heard that the Professor had allied himself with West Farms, she was speechless for a long while. After that, she let out a sigh of extreme frustration, "Sauron, the Professor is already our enemy…. Damn it! I proposed such appealing conditions to him, but he, he actually ignored them and went to go lean on the hopeless Weylin!"

Madame Suzanne was so angry that she smashed a flower vase.

"Calm down, Madame. The Weather duo has already started moving. There is no need for *you to get a headache for a 'Professor bound to die'."

Sauron's eyes were completely void of expression, "It's better for *you to calm down. Just think about what we can do during the duel and what benefits we can obtain when the Weather duo confronts the Professor."

"Ai. Honestly speaking, I already don't know what else to do…."

Madame Suzanne smiled bitterly: “The Professor’s alliance with Weylin has already stirred the waters of Sun City, and we can only calculate step by step now. Sauron, keep strict watch over the Weather duo’s movements. If there are any sudden occurrences, there’s no need to ask me for instructions. You are permitted to do as you see fit.”

“As you say, I will watch the Weather duo twenty-four hours a day. On the other hand…. Madame, Weylin has already gotten her hands on the Professor. She will most likely come looking for you very soon to negotiate and cancel the proposal regarding the cession of Mount Longinus. Are *you planning to….”

“Weylin is no longer the same as before. If she wishes to cancel the proposal of ceding Mount Longinus, I really have no choice but to relent!”

Madame Suzanne’s words were demoralizing, but a faint smile of disdain had appeared on her face, “However, me being unable to do anything about Weylin does not mean that I’m unable to find a way to get my hands on West Farms! I still have one more card hidden up my sleeve! Mount Longinus will definitely become mine!”

……

As Sauron and Madame Suzanne discussed, Jiang Nan had already arrived in the main district of Sun City in the vicinity of a hospital.

This hospital housed some of the best doctors in Sun City, and as long as Jiang Nan sent Victor in, he would be finished with the task that Weylin had assigned him.

However, at this moment, the Victor who was on his shoulders suddenly let out an unconscious groan.

“Awoo....”

Victor was still in the appearance of a wolf, so the groan he let out was naturally that of a wolf’s voice.

A human wolf....

Jiang Nan’s fingers suddenly began trembling.

An unrestrainable thought bubbled up in his mind: he had dissected wolves and humans before, but he had never once dissected a human wolf.

If he could dissect Victor and study the structural composition of a human wolf....

Alright, this was an extremely enticing thought.

Jiang Nan’s fingers began shaking faster and faster until they pulled out the dissecting cane. Clack! They pressed the mechanism

and pulled out the scalpel.

However, right at this instant, he suddenly grew aware of something, “Calm down, calm down! For the sake of maintaining a model character, I must possess the most minimum of medical ethics. It’s not that I cannot dissect him, but I must first seek the thoughts of the person in question. Furthermore, the fact that I carried Victor away isn’t any kind of secret, and if Victor suddenly disappeared…. Okay, I would also be in huge trouble! Oh, it still isn’t the best opportunity to dissect Victor!” Thinking up till here, Jiang Nan shook his head in regret. He placed Victor before the hospital’s entrance and then knocked heavily on the door. “Gentlemen, there is a Wolf Totem Warrior out here who needs emergency treatment!”

What Jiang Nan didn’t know, however, was how fortunate this sudden torrent of thoughts were: one must know that Victor’s father was about to arrive in Sun City, and whoever killed Victor in at this time was simply treating his life and the lives of all his relatives as a joke.

Creak~ An apprentice of the hospital opened the door and looked at the Victor who had collapsed on the ground, “Good heavens! It’s actually a Wolf Totem Warrior, and it seems he needs emergency treatment. However, I very much apologize. We….”

He wanted to say, “My deepest apologies. My master is currently in the middle of rescuing a VIP who is in critical condition. He has no time to help this wolf gentleman.”

Chapter 035: Hank's Final Words

It was a pity that Jiang Nan didn't give him a chance to speak. He fled extremely quickly from the apprentice's eyesight, "Mister, this wolf man's two ribs are heavily injured, so I'll have to trouble you. Okay, he has a lot of money so he definitely won't renege on his debt."

"Hey, I'm not done talking yet!"

However, Jiang Nan had already vanished without a trace.

The apprentice shook his head helplessly, and after taking a look at Victor's appearance, he hesitated.

Should he save him?

If he decided to save him, his master had already instructed him that he was about to give emergency treatment throughout the night to the VIP, and even if the skies collapsed to the ground, he was not to disturb him.

But if he didn't save him.... As a medical apprentice, how could he just overlook the shadow of death?!

In the midst of the apprentice's indecisiveness, Victor had already temporarily woken up from the sound of heavy knocking.

Huh?

This was....

Victor found that he was in an unfamiliar place, and all he felt was a stabbing pain from two of his ribs and a blinding dizziness in his head, as though he was about to meet his maker.

However, he wasn't in any situation to worry about the state of his injuries, "Miss Weylin, are you still okay? Are you still alive? Answer me!"

"Mister, there's no Miss Weylin here. It's still better that y-you follow me inside!"

Between a choice to 'abide with his master's command' and a 'compassionate heart', the apprentice chose the latter. He was just about to support Victor up, but Victor pushed him away, "Get out of my way! I must go and rescue Weylin!"

Rescue? When the apprentice heard this, he was nearly startled out of his skin, "My lord, has your friend met with danger? I understand your feelings, but your body.... It's still better for you to quickly come with me to get your treatment!"

He pointed towards the corner of an alley, "Do you see that? That is the patrol station for peacekeeping and maintaining order. Tell me where your friend is located. I'll ask the city guards to rescue him."

Victor touched the ceaselessly bleeding wound on his body and then sighed, “That’s also acceptable. Go look for the city guards and tell them to go to Weylin’s courthouse, which is located on the Sixth Block. I can just go look for a doctor myself.”

The apprentice hastily ran.

On staggering legs, Victor made his way to the entrance of the emergency treatment room. At this moment, he felt as though a black mist began to suffuse in a layer over his eyes, and his hands and feet had also begun shaking uncontrollably.

Not good!

The state of his injuries was getting worse and worse. He needed emergency treatment right away!

After thinking till here, Victor violently kicked open the entrance to the emergency room and roared, “All the doctors here, listen to me! Give up all of your patients and first save me!”

“Hmph, how cocky!”

One must know that there was already a VIP patient in the emergency room, and when the doctor heard Victor’s unreasonable and overbearing words, his first reaction was to scold him.

Victor had also caught sight of the patient's appearance, and although he didn't recognize the person before him, when he saw how the man's body was like a steel tower and those blood-red irises, he recalled Sauron's introduction of Sun City's experts....

"Hank! You're Blood-Eyed Hank?!"

This patient was precisely the Hank who Jiang Nan had defeated.

In the Totem Arena, Jiang Nan did not land any killing blow on Hank, but he had neglected to realize one extremely important issue.

On the Yuanzhi Continent, doctors were not allowed to dissect human corpses.

And if one could not dissect the human body, one would not be able to truly understand its structure. As a result, the medical care could not develop to a truly advanced degree, particular in regards to orthopedics.

In simpler terms, doctors here were unable to treat complicated injuries pertaining to orthopedics.

After defeating Hank, Jiang Nan had even assumed that he would have fully recovered after recuperating for several days.

However, in actuality, Hank could not find any doctor who could truly treat him. His injuries grew worse and worse, which in turn

led to additional medical complications.

Hank lied on the sick bed, his entire body swollen and the joints of his limbs suffused with a terrifying layer of purplish green. The finger joints which had been dislocated by Jiang Nan had already rotted, and his two feet were also festering.

He wouldn't be able to live for much longer.

However, Hank continued to uphold the dignity of one of the top ten experts. He struck out a fist in Victor's direction, "Brat, since you know my title, come! If you wish to snatch away my doctor, you must kill me first!"

Victor had always believed that wolves were to esteem the strong, and his tone eased up, "So it turns out that it was Lord Hank. I did not know you were here. Looking at your appearance.... I can wait for you. Doctor, please prioritize Lord Hank's treatment!"

He pointed to his own chest, "My name is Victor, Victor of Reyne Mountain!"

Reyne Mountain?! Hank's expression changed to reveal veneration, "So it turns out that it is the Young Master of Reyne Mountain! Doctor, how about you treat Young Master Victor first."

"Treat me first? Lord Hank, your body...."

“Young Master Victor, no more of your nonsense. You also need emergency treatment!”

Hank spoke with a bitter smile: “You’ve already seen my appearance. I’ll probably die here very soon, so why not live it more refreshingly? I’ll live a few days less and give up Sun City’s greatest doctor to you. I deeply respect Reyne Mountain’s Wolf King, and to be able to interact with his only son before death…. is worth it!”

Victor was so moved that he could not get any words out of his mouth for a long while. Pounding his chest, he said, “A wolf will not receive a favor from another for no reason. I promise you, if you die, I will help you fulfill your final wishes!”

Hank did not think that Victor was such a frank person, and abruptly opened his eyes wide, “If you are willing to help me, I happen to have some unfinished business!

Young Master Victor, I am sure *you are already aware of how I was injured: Arena #3 was presenting a woman as a reward. Because I desired her, I fell victim to the Professor’s evil scheme.”

Hank’s eyes were already brimming with regret, “I don’t wish to hide the truth. I have a senior who is about to arrive in Sun City, and I wanted to snatch away the woman to offer her up to this senior of mine.

It is a pity that I am no longer able to await him….

Young Master Victor!” Hank declared in a resonant voice: “If, after several days, *you see a person who possesses the same blood-red irises as I do, that person is my senior! Please.... *cough cough.... please....”

He began to cough violently.

Victor hastily said: “No need to say anymore, I understand it all! I will locate your senior and ask him to kill the Professor and avenge you!”

“No, not for my vengeance! I have no regrets about the life and death circumstances that occur in the Totem Arena. My skills did not match up to another, so even in death, I cannot blame anyone.”

Hank was like an oil lamp was nearly out of fuel, “It’s just that, just that I have no relative nor kin in Sun City. I ask Young Master Victor that *you temporarily safeguard my corpse, and then, and then hand it over to my senior....

However, you must remember! After my death, you absolutely must not tidy up my appearance. However way I die is how you should safeguard my corpse! Rotting is fine and reeking is fine, but you absolutely must let my senior see my current appearance!

Especially my bones, the bones that were dislocated by the Professor.... That man with blood-red irises must personally see my bones!”

Hank roared out the unfinished business that had been contained in his heart. Suddenly, he felt as though he no longer had any attachments, and his life force began to rapidly drain away.

Very soon, Hank forever closed his eyes.

On the other hand, Victor stared at Hank's corpse in astonishment, unable to speak for the longest time. He could not fathom the meaning behind Hank's final words.

Delivering the remains to his senior was easily understandable because Hank probably wanted to return to his roots, to be buried in his family's ancestral tomb.

But....

Why did he not permit Victor to fix up his appearance? The major issue was that the person had died, but Hank would actually rather his death be of miserable and wretched appearance? He even wanted his own senior to see his bones! Could it be.... that the Professor's dislocation of Hank's bones contained some major secret?

Victor could no longer continue pondering. His head was swamped with waves and waves of nausea, and this was his final thought before fainting, "A wolf must abide by his promises! Hank, I will definitely fulfill your final wishes."

Book 02: Knife Specialist Yulianne

Chapter 036: Feast Of Carnage, Countdown To Yulianne's Arrival

At nine o'clock at night, Jiang Nan returned to Rheim Pasture.

At this time, Eddy had already left the pasture because he still wanted to continue looking for knife work specialists.

After Mallun and his son were severely berated by Eddy, not only did they not correct themselves, they even vented the pent up rage on Jiang Nan.

They publicly assembled all the remaining knife workers to ostracize Jiang Nan and even allied with all the overseers of the pasture. Having been driven to a remote horse shed on the pasture, all the treatment Jiang Nan received was even worse than what he had suffered at West Farms.

However, Jiang Nan really enjoyed this environment, where he was 'estranged from the world'.

He enjoyed this kind of lifestyle: during the daytime, he slaughtered pigs to his heart's content and then took advantage of those pigs to practice his secret ghost manual. When night fell, he stealthily went to stand outside Weylin's courthouse. On one side, he would appreciate the moon, while on the other, he would secretly guard Weylin.

His only regret was this: he had never fulfilled the conditions of

that Ghost totem master, and hadn't yet gotten his hands on Mount Longinus' map.

However, Jiang Nan also knew that this matter was something that could not be done rashly. Although he could directly ask for the map from Weylin, the sudden request of a slave to see the farm's business secrets would inevitably lead to suspicion on Weylin's part.

Jiang Nan was waiting, waiting for the right time.

Amidst his regret, it had already been five days since the assassination attempt.

More accurately, it was year 2143 of the Flowerstream Era, December 16.

This evening, Jiang nan was just about to go keep watch over Weylin and exit his horse shed when a voice rang out, "Gather up, gather up!"

He heard Eddy's loud voice, "Brothers, I have good news for you: through my efforts, three hundred knife work specialists have already assembled! Immediately gather in the vacant land in front of the gate and I'll introduce the new team members to you."

Jiang Nan smacked his hand to his forehead in vexation, then changed out of his disguise and went to the vacant area in front of the pasture gate.

Mallun and the other knife workers had already arrived, and they were currently in the middle of sizing the team members besides Eddy up.

The new team members were forty muscular men with sinister faces.

They formed a square formation and were all dressed in short gowns of red and black. Two sharp knives hung from their back, one long one short, and their palms were extraordinarily withered, as though they were pieces of tree bark that hadn't been watered in half a year.

An extremely burly man was currently assisting Eddy in maintaining order. Likewise, he also wore a red and black short gown and was a whole two meters tall. However, his hands were even more withered than the others, and he had a pair of rarely seen blood-red pupils.

Correct, blood-red pupils!

When he saw this burly man, Jiang Nan immediately recalled the Hank whom he had defeated.

When Eddy saw that the knife work specialists had more or less fully assembled, he patted the red-eyed burly man on the shoulder, "Everybody, this is a new team member whom I invited from elsewhere. He is my old friend, and his name is Talik! Do you all see the forty people by Talik's side? They are all his subordinates,

as well as our new team members! As for Talik and his subordinates' identities...."

His tone grew vague, "Their identities are a bit unique, and it's not really convenient for me to say, so.... I just won't mention it, I won't mention it! Haha! The only thing everybody needs to remember is that his name is called 'Talik'!"

Won't mention it?

When Mallun heard Eddy's words, he grew suspicious and fiercely glared at Jiang Nan, "Captain Eddy, please state Talik's identity clearly! Since you're being so ambiguous, don't tell me that Talik is a lowly slave?! Eddy, you bringing the slave Rodi here is already quite enough. If you bring forty more slaves.... Hmph, I'll go have a talk with Madame Suzanne. By allowing a large group of slaves participate in the knife work feast, you clearly want to disobey Madame Suzanne's orders, and you're obviously...."

Pa!

Talik snatched onto one of Mallun's elbows. Without any seemingly complicated movements, he lightly tugged, and Mallun squealed miserably like a stuck pig.

He then smoothly pressed down, easily driving half of Mallun's body into the grassy ground. His voice was like a steel knife scraping against bone, "You are the first person who's ever dared to mention me on the same level as a slave, so I condemn you with the punishment of 'knee crushing'!"

Mallun was no longer uttering any sort of sound, and his knees were already shattered by Talik!

The knife workers were so gobsmacked that they couldn't speak.

"Bastard, you damned bastard!" Mallun's sun Malfoy suddenly howled. After Jiang Nan injured him several days before, even now, he still had not fully recovered. He didn't dare to provoke the fiendish Talik, so he just targeted Eddy, "Eddy, hurry up and tell Talik to let my father go! My father is an imperial chef and aristocrat. I, I'm going to go report to the judicial hall that you, you dare to harm an aristocrat!"

"Judicial Hall?" Eddy smirked in disdain, "Malfoy, your own father was the one who courted death. What are you bothering me about it for?! If you have the guts, then go lodge a complaint with Judicial Hall! I'm not afraid to tell you that even the highest court of law in the empire wouldn't dare to handle a judicial case concerning Lord Talik!"

He glanced towards Talik, and seeing that Talik didn't object, he continued speaking, "Hmph! I originally didn't want to reveal Talik's identity because I was afraid that it would scare you and make it so that you wouldn't dare to remain in this knife work team, but since Mallun is blind, fine! I'll tell you Talik's identity!

Talik is only his official name in in the empire's highest court of law. However, don't worry if you haven't heard of it because he has a universal nickname that is known throughout the continent

—Man Slaughterer!”

Man Slaughterer!

The knife worker specialists’ faces suddenly drained of all color.

If, on the Yuanzhi Continent, one used the ‘degree of understanding of the human body’ as a standard and extrapolated it into a ranking, the first would undoubtedly be a ghost totem master.

The second would be an ‘executioner’.

This was because while executioners carried out torturous methods such as ‘death by a thousand cuts’, ‘flaying’, or ‘eye-gouging’, they were legally permitted to take apart any convict’s corpse.

Furthermore, in order to carry out torture even more effectively, executioners had their own educational set of curriculum. Those who studied execution would begin studying how to disassemble the parts of the human body more efficiently, more quickly, and more ruthlessly starting at five years of age.

One could say that being an executioner was a profession on the continent that was the most ruthless, cold-blooded, and most understanding of the human body.

Talik was precisely an executioner.

Furthermore, he was the empire's most notorious executioner.

Talik was the vice-captain of the execution squad, the highest level of law within the empire, and was specially in charge of putting down the empire's major felons. The empire's Judicial Hall even had records in writing that Talik became an executioner at seven years old, and that in thirty years, he had personally executed more than 19,300 criminals!

This figure contained no trace of overstatement: for example, after the rebellion that occurred five years past in Yanjing quelled, Talik was in charge of executing the captives of the rebel army. He burned and waterlogged, personally executing eight thousand people in just one night.

And it was exactly that night in which Talik received his extremely bloody title.... Man Slaughterer!

What must be clarified is this: while Talik was the most brilliant executioner, for the sake of carrying out his torture more effectively, he had already researched the structural composition of the human body to an 'exceedingly great' degree.

.....

As the knife workers all stood around in a daze, all the rumors and legends pertaining to Talik flashed through Jiang Nan's head, and then he looked at Talik with a gaze brimming with interest.

Okay, since Talik also played around with dissection, he could also be considered as half of one of his coworkers.

The forty newly arrived people were all executioners! The reason why their two hands were all shrivelled up was because they were constantly soaked in fresh blood from year to year, and they lacked a means of properly protecting their hands.

However....

In regards to the reason why Eddy invited these executioners here, could it be that he wanted them to become a member of the knife work team?

A knife work specialist also inquired the same thing, “Eddy, why have you invited a group of executioners? What we are going to conduct here is a ‘chef’s knife work feast’. As to why you want them to join us, don’t tell me that these cold-blooded creatures who are only capable of killing people are more skilled than us in knife work?”

“This....”

Eddy suddenly dashed towards the knife work specialists and bowed deeply, his face full of shame, “There are still ten odd days before Yulianne arrives. Whatever, I won’t hide it from you!

In this period of time, you all have asked me numerous times

about the concrete details concerning the knife work feast. However, I never answered you....

In fact, it is because I did not dare to tell you!" Eddy's face was a bit pale, "This is the definite content of the knife work feast: before Yulianne, we are to use our knife work to slaughter.... slaughter three hundred living people!"

Chapter 037: Ghost Totem Criminals

Slaughter living people?!

The knife work specialists immediately went into an uproar, “Eddy, we are chefs, not executioners! I refuse to slaughter living people!”

“Eddy, do you want to f***ing hold a great slaughter fest?!”

“You lunatic, lunatic! You’re a f***ing lunatic! Slaughtering three hundred living people, are you f***ing human Eddy?!”

Eddy hastily explained himself, “Gentlemen, gentlemen! Please listen to me. Slaughtering living people was not decided of my own accord. I was only following the orders of Madame Suzanne!”

“If Suzanne wants you to kill people, you kill them. If she tells you to kill yourself, are you going to commit suicide?!”

“Wait a minute, I’ve just f***ing realized!” A knife work specialist raised his arms high up into the air, “Everybody, please listen to me!

Eddy letting us slaughter living people is basically trying to drive us to death! Have you all forgotten the ‘Ghost Massacre Decree’? Any person suspected of dissecting a human corpse will have their three of their generations killed! We are not executioners, and we don’t have the authority to lawfully dissect people. Once we take

part in Eddy's little play.... I'm afraid that before the performance is even over, we'll probably already be considered as Ghost Totems and put to death!

Eddy, I don't wish to be driven to death by you! I withdraw from this knife work team!"

This knife work specialist angrily threw down his kitchen knife and then turned in left. However, at this moment, Talik suddenly stuck his hand out and blocked him, "Halt."

"What do you want to do? This place is not your prison. You have no authority to block me."

The knife work specialist flew into rage and then relied on the fact that he was also somewhat capable of fighting to throw a fist towards Talik's face.

Crack! When his fist smashed onto Talik's nose bridge, contrary to everyone's expectations, Talik's nose was completely unharmed. Instead, the bones within the knife worker's own hand broke.

This....

Jiang Nan was truly too familiar with this move. With a body like steel along with bones that countershock the enemy, this was precisely Hank's 'Iron Roar'.

What astonished Jiang Nan even more was what happened after!

After Talik jolted the bones in the knife worker's fist to pieces, his body suddenly swivelled as his two fists heavily struck out, the knife work specialist fainting dead on the spot from the blow.

Twenty-Fourth Form of the Iron Roar's Hundred Forms, Massive Windmill!

Could it be that Talik was a fellow apprentice to Hank, or rather, Hank's senior?

Jiang Nan had constantly been in an environment that isolated him from the world, so he wasn't aware that Hank had already died. Seeing how Talik was possibly Hank's relative, his face immediately turned into an expression that said, 'alright, yet another good opponent'.

At this moment, Eddy had already lifted his head up, letting out a huge roar, "Nobody move! Nobody move! Let me finish speaking!

Gentlemen, I still have two more things I must tell you all! Please listen to them before deciding whether you want to leave or not. The first is that I have already gotten approval from the empire's highest court of law to let you all dissect living people. Lord Talik is in possession of this declaration of approval! During the duration of the knife work feast, you all possess the authority to dissect lawfully!"

Seeing that the knife workers' faces slightly loosened up, Eddy let out a sigh of relief, "The second matter is this: the living people we are about to slaughter are not innocent, but rather the criminals in

prison facing the death penalty! They are a group of sons of b****es whose crimes even death cannot alleviate!”

The knife work specialists once more blew up in fury, “Even if they are prisoners on death row, we still can’t accept it! Eddy, we are chefs, not executioners! Killing people…. Good heavens, exactly how are you going to make us do this! Humans aren’t fattened pigs or oxen!”

Eddy waved his hands hurriedly, “Don’t worry, I haven’t finished speaking yet! The death row prisoners we are going to kill are not normal death row prisoners. The people we are going to kill are possessors of the Bridge of Ghosts…. ‘Ghost Totem criminals’!”

Ghost Totem criminals?! Following Eddy’s words, an extremely bizarre atmosphere began to spread throughout the entire pasture.

With excitement, fanaticism, and emotion, a large number of the knife work specialists all burst out into laughter, “Eddy, you bastard! You should have told us earlier that we were killing ‘Ghost Totem criminals’!”

“If who we are killing are Ghost Totem criminals, then I’m not leaving! Eddy, you definitely have to give me a good spot so I can slaughter more!”

This….

Jiang Nan truly could not understand why the mood changed so

abruptly among the knife workers. They clearly refused to slaughter living people, but once they heard that the living people they were going to kill were ghost totems....

All of them actually accepted it?!

Could it be that in their eyes, ghost totems weren't even considered fellow humans?

Jiang Nan had guessed correctly! In actuality, after suppressing ghost totems for thousands of hundreds of years, there was already a universal belief on the continent.

In regards to ghost totems, kind-hearted people considered that ghost totems were despicable lowlives. They were the inferior sub-species of humanity, and the more that died, the better.

On the other hand, the majority of people believed that there was no way that ghost totems were human. They were only inferior organisms draped in human skin like gnomes, slugs, and slimes, and they would not hold back the least bit when killing them.

The knife workers on scene all shared the same universal view: they did not consider ghost totems as their own fellow human comrades. In their perspective, slaughtering ghost totems was equivalent to slaughtering pigs and sheep.

And clearly, Eddy was the more kind-hearted type of person, seeing how he smiled bitterly: "Ai, so it turns out that you guys are

the kinds of people who ‘don’t consider ghost totems as human’. If I knew that you all were like this earlier, why the hell would I have worried!

Alright. Since you’ve all agreed to slaughter these ghost totem lowlives, continue listening: Talik has already helped us choose three hundred ghost totem lowlives from prison, and they will be sent over in five days!

Of these three hundred ghost totem lowlives, around one hundred of them were ghost totem masters whose abilities were destroyed after being taken captive. The other two hundred are normal people who have been found to possess the Bridge of Ghosts, but have not yet become a ghost totem master….”

Eddy continued introducing the situation regarding the ‘ghost totem criminals’, but Jiang Nan no longer had the heart to continue listening.

An indescribable taste filled his heart: slaughtering ghost totems had actually become the continent’s grandest and most majestic way of carrying out welcoming ceremonies….

In addition, listening to the words Eddy used when talking about ghost totems, Jiang Nan realized that Eddy had never talked in such a rude manner even when addressing him, a slave. However, once Eddy mentioned the topic about ghost totems, a whole string of ‘lowlives’ and ‘ghost totem lowlives’ would come flying out of his mouth?!

Jiang Nan smirked. He didn't know why ghost totems had been reduced to such a level, but he was very clear that the ghost totem criminals that were soon to be slaughtered were simply a group of innocent and pitiful people, a group of comrades.

Correct, comrades! Jiang Nan had also begun walking his path as a ghost totem master already, so he was completely identical to those three hundred other ghost totem criminals!

A thought blossomed in Jiang Nan's mind for the second time: if it was possible, what if he helped this world run a bit smoother?

At this moment, this idea of his was so strong. Because Jiang Nan already possessed strength, he had already retrieved a bit of his self-confidence, and could now change a few things that did not satisfy him!

As Jiang Nan contemplated in his mind, Eddy finished with the aftermath of his explanation.

Mallun's two legs had already been crippled by Talik, and Malfoy had also been injured by Jiang Nan several days before. The two of them were no longer eligible to continue staying in the pasture. Calling a horse cart, the father-son duo were taken away from Rheim Pasture.

However, before they left, Malfoy glared viciously at Jiang Nan and Talik. From the looks of it, this enmity had been carved deep in his heart.

On the other hand, Eddy even called some people to set up a ten meter tall sign.

The sign was silver, and a line of golden characters were written on it:

Days until Yulianne's arrival.... Countdown: 15 days!

When Jiang Nan saw the sign, his heart trembled. There would only be fifteen more days before Yulianne arrived, and those three hundred ghost totem criminals had only fifteen more days left to live!

Jiang Nan was not willing to personally kill these ghost totems and went towards Eddy, "Mister Eddy!"

Eddy was currently in the middle of debriefing Talik on the situation of the pasture, "Haha, you've come, my boy! Talik, let me introduce you to a friend: this youngster is named Rodi. Don't just judge him by the fact that he is a slave because this boy's knife skills are extremely quick! I bet that if he was able to go study for a time at the 'Imperial Culinary Institute', he could definitely replace Yulianne's position to become the continent's fastest knife work chef."

When Talik heard that Jiang Nan was a slave, his sinister face immediately exuded disdain.

However!

When Eddy mentioned the words ‘Imperial Culinary Institute’, the disdain on his face abruptly transformed into reverence and incomparable fear!

Chapter 038: Battle During Drifting Snow, A Mysterious Written Challenge (1)

Talik suddenly grabbed onto Eddy's shoulder: "Eddy, you believe that this slave has the qualifications to enter the Imperial Culinary Institute?"

"He definitely has the qualifications!"

Eddy let out a sigh, "Truthfully speaking, I originally wanted to buy this slave and then recommend him to the Imperial Culinary Institute, but Weylin was f***ing dead set against selling. Ai, seriously. What a son of a b****!"

They followed along this tangent and began chatting about matters related to the Imperial Culinary Institute. It was only after three minutes passed that Eddy suddenly realized that Jiang Nan was still next to him.

He smacked the back of his head, "Aiyah! I was only thinking about chatting. Rodi, what are you looking for me for?"

Jiang Nan answered with a face that expressed 'so you've finally noticed me', "Mister Eddy, you already have more than enough knife workers in hand, so I am no longer important. Okay, I'm prepared to resign from my job as Vice Captain and apply to return to Miss Weylin's side."

"You want to leave?! That won't do! That definitely won't do!"

Eddy grabbed onto Jiang Nan's shoulders, "It's true that *I have a sufficient amount of knife work specialists, but experts like you must stay to help anchor the knife work team: I was just about to entrust the most important round of the Knife Work Feast to you!"

"But.... what if I absolutely must go?"

Eddy had a very good impression of Jiang Nan, and he did not want to make things difficult for him, "Boy, if you truly don't dare to kill someone, then.... I'll add you to the substitute team! However, you can't leave the pasture. Furthermore, if any of the official members of the Knife Work Feast make a mistake, you must fix it for me! On the other hand, Talik will teach you techniques to dissect a human body tomorrow night. You must attend the class, or else if a mistake happens, how will a substitute like you handle it?"

Go learn anatomy?!

Anatomy professor Jiang Nan's eyes went blank. However, he wanted to take advantage of this opportunity to get an understanding of the continent's anatomy standards, "Alright, I'll accept your conditions. I will definitely attend Mister Talik's class."

Bang, bang!

As Jiang Nan spoke, the northwestern sky suddenly lit up with two signal flares, one red and one purple. It was precisely Weylin's signal for seeking Jiang Nan.

Weylin was about to take care of some business!

Jiang Nan randomly found an excuse to excuse himself and then went to the horse shed to disguise himself as the Professor, taking advantage of the night to infiltrate Sun City.

Not long after Jiang Nan left, Talik also put aside some trivial matters, “Eddy, I’ll hand the situation over to you now. I’m going to go into the city.”

Eddy wished to keep Talik behind, “What would you go into the city for? *I still have a whole mountain of matters to take care of. This won’t do. On account of our long standing friendship, you must stay behind and help me!”

A hint of affection suddenly flashed across Talik’s eyes and he laughed, “Eddy, I still have a nephew in Sun City related by blood to me, and I haven’t seen him for ten years already.”

“You want to go visit your relative?! Hah, I don’t dare keep you here then. However, it seems that your nephew does not want to live anymore. He should have taken the initiative to come welcome you.”

Talik answered in puzzlement as well, “That is also true. He clearly knows I’m arriving in Sun City today, but he actually didn’t come to receive me.... Forget it, I’ll personally go to look for him.”

……

Bringing along a stomach full of anxiety, Talik entered Sun City and randomly grabbed a passerby on the road, “Where does Sun City’s ninth ranked expert Hank live?”

This merchant just so happened to be in the middle of counting his money and answered with a huffy tone, “Hank? He’s still the ninth ranked expert? Exactly how many years ago was that. Hank died a long time ago!”

Hank already died?!

In reality, the night Hank died, the doctor had already released the news of his death. It was only the Talik who had just arrived and the Jiang Nan who was isolated from the world’s matters who were not aware of his death.

Talik’s blood-red eyes suddenly seemed as though they were truly leaking with blood. He seized the merchant’s neck and hoisted him up, “Where is Hank’s corpse? Has anybody touched my nephew’s corpse?!”

Talik was the senior Hank spoke of.

The merchant was so frightened that all the color drained from his face. He answered frantically, “Please, please don’t hurt me! I’ll tell you!

Hank died eight days ago! At that time, he had participated in the Totem Arena....”

“Shut up! I don’t want to hear why Hank died, nor do I want to know who killed him!”

Talik demanded fiercely: “You only need to tell me where Hank’s dead body is. Has anybody touched his corpse?!”

The merchant was dumbstruck. His blood-related nephew died, but the uncle does not even care about the reason or the perpetrator. All he actually thought about was the whereabouts of the dead body....

What a cold-blooded person!

The merchant hastily answered: “I, I am not too sure either. However, the news of Hank’s death was spread from ‘Hauss Hospital’. Y-You can go make an inquiry at Hauss Hospital.”

“Say it! What is the address of Hauss Hospital?!”

“Follow straight along this road until you get to the Fifth Block. It will be on the third alley on the left.”

Tossing the merchant to the ground, Talik dashed towards the Fifth Block without turning his head.

After arriving before the doors of Hauss Hospital, he frenziedly tore apart the iron doors of the hospital, “Tell me! Who spread the news of Hank’s death?”

Victor just so happened to be exercising in the courtyard. After five days of recuperation, his injuries already began to turn for the better.

When Victor heard Talik’s overbearing words, he shot to his feat. However, the next moment, he caught sight of Talik’s blood-red pupils, “You…. You are Hank’s senior?!” He laughed as though a burden had been lifted off his shoulders, “I’ve already waited five days for you. You’ve finally come!”

……

While Victor and Talik got acquainted, Jiang Nan had already arrived at Weylin’s courthouse on the Sixth Block.

There was nobody outside the courthouse, and Jiang Nan pushed open Weylin’s room’s door, “Alright, Miss Weylin. You are looking for me?”

Weylin did not answer.

She sat before a circular table. Beside her were the three managers of the farm whose hands were tightly clutching a bright yellow notice.

What surprised Jiang Nan was that Lola was standing next to Weylin. She had already brought the map of Mount Longinus.

At this time, Lola was staring at Jiang Nan in adoration with a gaze full of worship.

However, Jiang Nan did not even look directly at Lola. He was even thinking viciously in his heart, This young lady! Sooner or later, I'll catch an opportunity to straighten you out!

Everybody was silent for an entire half a minute.

At long last, it was still Jiang Nan who shrugged, "Miss Weylin, you were the one who called me but you're not even saying anything.... Alright, what major event has happened?"

"A major event! A major event that has shaken the entirety of Sun City!" Weylin finally opened her mouth as she spoke in a spitting rage, "Professor, you've done such a big thing behind my back! This woman can't help but praise you. You have some damned strong guts!"

Lola hastily began massaging Weylin's shoulders, "Miss, calm down, calm down! Although it's true that Lord Professor is quite audacious, but he, he's still very heroic!"

Jiang Nan listened on, unable to make heads or tails of anything, "Ladies and gentlemen, it isn't a good habit to keep people guessing. Oh, who can tell me exactly what happened?"

“You still dare to ask me?” Weylin pointed towards Lola’s nose and said, “This maid of mine just came back from outside the city. As she passed through the roads, she discovered a notice that was publicly announced to the entire city, which we have here. Look at it yourself!”

Weylin threw the notice towards Jiang Nan. Receiving it, Jiang Nan looked at the words written atop it in Rheim Script, “I, the ‘Professor’ do so sincerely….”

The Professor?!

Jiang Nan immediately realized that someone had impersonated him to write that public, city-wide notice.

In actuality, this notice was a written challenge, “I, the ‘Professor’ do so sincerely relay to Lord ‘Gibson’: on the night of falling snow, you are invited to come to the Totem Arena to decide the top three of the Totem Ranking!”

Weylin smacked the table and spat out, “Do you understand now? On the night of the Drifting Snow Festival ten days from now, you actually want to challenge Sun City’s third ranked expert —Gibson!

Professor, are you tired of living? You are only a ‘primary rank’ Strength Totem Warrior, while Gibson is an ‘intermediate rank’ Wind Totem Warrior! Challenging an intermediate rank at primary rank, are you looking for death?!”

Chapter 039: Battle During Drifting Snow, A Mysterious Written Challenge (2)

The true matter of the situation was clear: this written challenge was written by the Sheffield Clan in impersonation of Jiang Nan. The plan to 'use the Professor as a test subject for their new attack' had already been put into motion.

However, Jiang Nan was not aware of these things. He spread his hands out, palms up, "I didn't write this letter, okay? Okay, I've been plotted against!"

Weylin was startled, "You didn't write this?"

"Of course it wasn't me. Miss Weylin, although the time we've known each other hasn't been very long, just think about my tone of voice!" Jiang Nan pointed towards the written challenge and said in a chiding manner: "It's true that this is the Rheim Script that I use, but once you look at the word style, is this my tone of voice? Moreover, Gibson is an 'intermediate rank' Wind Totem, while I am a 'primary rank' Strength totem. As *you say, we differ by an entire rank! Does it look like I've lost all reason? Do I look like I'm so tired of living that I'm challenging an intermediate rank expert?"

Jiang Nan couldn't help himself from patting Weylin's shoulder. This was exactly how he had lectured students in his past life, "Miss Weylin, you must think a little more. What you see is not necessarily the true fact of the matter."

Pa!

Weylin slapped Jiang Nan's arm away, "Frankly speaking, *I am still not at the level where I need you to lecture me. However, you really didn't write this letter?"

"Is there a need for me to deceive you?"

Weylin smiled bitterly, "Since you didn't write it, then it is definitely.... F***! There are people scheming against you, scheming against West Farms!"

After she finished speaking, the two of them sank into silence.

They were both considering the situation. There was a person who wished to incite a death match between the Professor and Gibson. In addition, upon further thought regarding the Professor's level, this instigator's goal was clearly to kill the Professor by borrowing Gibson's hand.

But....

Exactly who was the instigator?!

Lola had also reached this conclusion, "Miss, who would frame us? Is it Madame Suzanne?" She gazed worshipfully at Jiang Nan, "Hmph, it's definitely because Madame Suzanne is jealous of Lord Professor's alliance with us. She wants to use Gibson to kill our Professor."

Weylin's brows knitted together, "It's true that Suzanne is the most likely suspect, but.... *I truly have too many enemies. It may not be her, it really may not be her...."

The elderly manager's face also scrunched up in concern, "Miss, the issue of the instigator's identity can be investigated slowly. The most important thing right now is how we should respond to this written challenge.

This written challenge has already been distributed throughout the entire city. If we were to say that this letter was a forgery.... I'm afraid West Farms' prestige would topple to the ground. On top of that, Lord Professor probably would not be able to show his face around Sun City anymore.

However, if we were to admit that this letter was in fact written by the Professor.... the Professor will have to accept the challenge and go fight a death match!

Ai, there's no room to advance or retreat!"

For a time, everybody's eyes hovered on Jiang Nan.

Weylin spoke, "Professor, you are a victim of this impersonation. *I will respect your decision in regards to whether you want to announce the letter as a forgery or go fight Gibson. Everything rests upon you!"

“Alright, I’ll make the decision….”

Jiang Nan picked up the writing utensil and added an additional paragraph of words on the backside of the notice, “My decision is to trouble Miss Weylin to distribute this supplementary explanation to the entire city. Oh, it needs to be sent out immediately.”

The Professor added a supplementary explanation?

Oh, it seemed that he was not willing to challenge Gibson, so he personally wrote an announcement to explain the reality of the situation.

A hint of disappointment flashed across Weylin’s face, but she also knew that the Professor’s choice to retreat was, in fact, the wisest decision. After all, the disparity in rank was clear.

“Lola, immediately distribute the Professor’s explanation to the entire city.”

A crestfallen look also appeared on Lola’s face as she accepted the explanatory announcement, “Lord Professor, I understand *your decision. Miss also often says that as long as green mountains remain, there will always be wood to burn…. Eh?!’

When Lola saw the content of the announcement, she couldn’t keep herself from reading it aloud, “Professor’s supplementary explanation is actually…. The Totem Arena is a place for spectator

entertainment. Why must people derive pleasure from a battle that is between us? After thinking the whole night, I would like to relay this Lord Gibson: on the night of Drifting Snow, on the peak of Mount Longinus, come partake in a match between gentlemen! No complaints whether one of us lives or dies!”

The Professor simply changed the location of the fight. He, he actually agreed to the challenge?!

……

Correct! Jiang Nan accepted the challenge, but it wasn’t with a muddled mind that he made this decision.

The situation was exactly how the elderly manager had described it, and he was in a dilemma. If Jiang Nan went to fight, he would most likely suffer defeat. However, if he avoided it….

He wasn’t willing to avoid it! If he fled, his newly acquired fame as Professor would be immediately set aflame. Furthermore, Jiang Nan had had enough of the miserable life that was a slave. He was very aware that once he shrunk away from the challenge, he would not merely lose his identity as Professor, but also the only recently recovered…. self-confidence and dignity!

Additionally, Gibson was an ‘intermediate rank 2nd level Wind Totem Warrior’. He only exceeded Jiang Nan’s current ‘primary rank 8th level’ by one rank. Such a gap was something Jiang Nan had confidence in challenging!

Dark Steps, Death Armor, and Skeletal Poison Blade. These ghost art skills were things Jiang Nan had never utilized before! And these were the root of Jiang Nan's self-confidence!

However, the Ghost Mystique Arts were a secret art that could not be seen by other people. Therefore, Jiang Nan changed the location of the duel to 'Mount Longinus'.

Mount Longinus was Weylin's estate, so Jiang Nan could ask Weylin to close off the dueling stage. Once Jiang Nan was not Gibson's opponent and Gibson desired to take his life....

Then!

I apologize, Gibson. I can only greet you with the Ghost Mystique Arts!

Besides this, Jiang Nan had another small scheme in mind: by changing the location of the duel to Mount Longinus, he could proudly and openly request for the map of Mount Longinus on the basis of wanting to 'familiarize himself with the dueling terrain'.

Weylin shot up to her feet, "Professor, are you really going to accept the challenge?!"

Lola's eyes also stared widely, but it was a gaze brimming with concern and adoration, "Professor, y-you must think it through! Things where you try to show off like a hero.... No, no, no, what Lola is saying is that *you are a hero!"

Jiang Nan gawked with a face that said, ‘Eh? You guys have finally gotten over the shock? Alright, I can finally get out of bed’. He opened his eyes dazedly, “Oh, I’ve already written it very clearly. I’m accepting the challenge, but I changed the location of the duel to Mount Longinus.

On the other hand, I need Mount Longinus to be closed off during the duel. Besides me and Gibson, no person is permitted up the mountain! Alright, this isn’t a request, but a requirement, requirement! Weylin, do you understand?”

Weylin nodded dubmly, “I understand. On the night of Drifting Snow, *I can guarantee that nobody will disturb your match, but….”

“The situation is already like this! What buts are there to say!”

Jiang Nan cut off Weylin and then continued speaking: “Besides closing off Mount Longinus, I have an additional condition: in order to familiarize myself with the stage’s terrain, I want a detailed map of Mount Longinus!”

“There’s no problem with this. I’ll quickly hand the map over to you…. Damn it, wait a moment!”

Weylin seemed to have recalled something as she slapped her thigh: “*I nearly forgot! The reason I called you here was not only because of the challenge. Suzanne still has her eyes set on my Mount Longinus!”

“Oh? Could it be that you are preparing to….”

“Correct! *I am currently preparing to take the map of Mount Longinus to have a ‘chat’ with Suzanne!” Weylin laughed aloud, “Professor, your request to duel on Mount Longinus has coincidentally provided me with an additional bargaining chip. However, these chips are still far from enough…. Are you interested in helping me take care of something to increase our negotiatory bargaining chips?”

Jiang Nan’s eyebrows flew up, “Is this a command or a request?”

“This….” Weylin wanted to say that it was a command, but she lowered her head and directed a bow towards Jiang Nan: “Is a request!”

Ehhh!!!

So there comes a day, Weylin, that you actually f***ing plead me!

A small part of the reason Jiang Nan chose to join West Farms was because he enjoyed seeing the person who often mistreated him in the past to plead with him, bowing and fawning to gain favor with him.

Alright, this was the aspiration of a person with low status, but…. What a sin! A sin!

Here is a little secret: don't ever assume that Jiang Nan is some noble and moral anatomy professor! No person would enjoy corpses and organs from birth, nor would any person consider anatomy more important than life by nature.... Do you know exactly what Jiang Nan did before becoming an anatomy professor and a person of model character?!

When Jiang Nan thought about his past, Jiang Nan's curved with an indiscernible, evil smile. He suddenly felt that after recovering a bit of his self-confidence and dignity, his past self.... seemed to have begun awakening!

Jiang Nan's forefinger lifted Weylin's chin up, "My dear Miss Weylin, a bow should not exceed five seconds. This is the most basic of etiquette.... Alright. Exactly what do you want this brother of yours to do to that lady Suzanne?!"

Chapter 040: The Rising And Falling Of Bargaining Chips

That lady?!

(*TL: I neglected to mention that Jiang Nan refers to Suzanne at the end of chapter 39 as 娘们. There's not really an English counterpart, but it's basically a derogatory term towards adult women that expresses contempt.)

This term of address that leapt from the Professor's mouth startled Weylin into stupefaction.

Fortunately, Weylin had only met with the Professor twice, so she just assumed that this behavior of his was his natural disposition. And right after this instant in which Jiang Nan lost his composure, he resumed his original disposition of a model character.

"Suzanne has three shops located on Third Main Street...."

Weylin slapped away Jiang Nan's hand and grabbed the elderly manager's pocket watch, taking a glance, "It is seven o'clock right now. Professor, I will begin negotiations with Suzanne at ten minutes after seven. As for you, starting at 7:20, you will follow along the Third Block to carry out some destruction. When you see a sign that says Suzanne, smash it! Although there is a good amount of guards in the shops, they are definitely not your opponents! Furthermore, I will help you hold up Sauron, so just thrash everything to your heart's content. The more things destroyed the better, and the more violently done, the better!"

(*TL: Weylin previously refers to Third Block 第三街区 as Third Main Street 第三大街, which is why I used different wording.)

“Oh, so you will be negotiating, while I’ll be putting on a show of force in the dark to increase your bargaining chips…. Alright, as you wish! I’ll carry out this old job of mine then!”

Old job?!

Could it be that the Professor previously specialized in wreaking havoc?!

Weylin’s expression became even stranger.

……

A minute later, Jiang Nan and Weylin departed from the courtyard house.

After around ten days of recuperation, Weylin’s body had already made a major turn for the better. Although she still was not able to display her entire fighting capability, giving some scoundrels a good thrashing was still doable.

Jiang Nan and Weylin split up at the entrance to the Third Block: Jiang Nan headed towards Suzanne’s shops while Weylin brought a team of people towards Elegant Forest Restaurant.

Several of Suzanne Farms' overseers were in the middle of patrolling in front of the restaurant's gate. Catching sight of Weylin, they hastily rushed up to receiver her, "Welcome Wey…."

"Welcome my ass! You damned lowlives, screw out of here!"

The moment she opened her mouth, Weylin characteristically roared and cursed at them, pushing the overseers that were guarding the entrance out of the way and taking her team of people inside, "Suzanne, come out! *I've agreed to cede Mount Longinus to you, and I've brought the map!"

"Aiya, Little Sister Weylin, how come it took you so long? Big Sister was almost running out of patience."

Madame Suzanne walked out with graceful steps. Tonight, she did not wear a gauze veil.

Weylin had already seen Madame Suzanne's appearance long ago, so no particular feelings welled up inside her. However….

If Jiang Nan were here, he would definitely have cried out in startlement, "Calm down, for the sake of maintaining appearances, I must calm down. Okay, is Madame Suzanne Suzu's relative?"

(Do you still remember the mute girl who Jiang Nan released? Her name is Suzu.)

Madame Suzanne and Suzu looked as though they had been

created from the same exact mold. The only difference was that Madame Suzanne looked a bit older because she was already thirty-five years old.

Weylin coldly glanced at Madame Suzanne and raised the map she had prepared long ago high up in the air, “Suzanne, less nonsense! Find a place and let’s begin our negotiation!”

Madame Suzanne’s gaze lingered covetously on the map, “As expected, Little Sister is quite frank. Please, this way. The restaurant’s third floor’s conference room has already been tidied up for you.”

……

When the two people arrived in the conference room located on the third floor of the restaurant, a large round table appeared before them.

Weylin unceremoniously took the head chair as Lola and the three managers took places standing behind her back. On the other hand, Madame Suzanne looked a bit lacking in presentation. There were only to servants next to her bearing a pot of tea and pouring it out.

Weylin inquired in a strange tone: “Where’s Sauron? Call him out! Today’s matters cannot be handled without him!”

Sauron was naturally monitoring the Weather Totem duo, but

Madame Suzanne would not tell her this, “Recently, my farm has encountered some minor difficulties, so Sauron has set out from the city. Little Sister Weylin, please direct any words you would like to say to me.”

Sauron wasn’t in Sun City?! Weylin smiled. With Sauron not here, the success of the Professor’s operation was ensured further.

She officially began the negotiations, “Suzanne, several days ago, *I agreed to rent Mount Longinus to you. However, a slight change in plans has occurred.... The Professor wants to challenge Gibson. Are you aware of this?”

“It is such a major event, how could I not know?”

“So long as you know then!” Pa! Weylin smacked Jiang Nan’s revised announcement onto the table and pointed towards the words written on it: “Look at the remaining points yourself. The Professor has already accepted the challenge. However, he has requested to change the match’s location to Mount Longinus!”

The Professor actually accepted the challenge?!

Madame Suzanne’s eyes flashed with an astonished light for an instant before she swiftly covered it up.

At this moment, Weylin spoke with a dazzling smile, “Do you understand? The Professor is to use Mount Longinus, so the matter of the rental agreement will be temporarily put off for now. *I am

not preparing to rent Mount Longinus to you currently!”

Madame Suzanne chuckled, “Little Sister Weylin, that your side’s Professor is challenging Gibson is a major event. It is understandable that you do not wish to hand Mount Longinus over.... However, no matter how significant this event is, can it possibly be even more important than welcoming Yulianne?! My purpose in renting Mount Longinus is to build a temporary residence for Yulianne!

Little Sister, you have already delayed many days. If you do not rent Mount Longinus to me, then Big Sister cannot construct the temporary residence in time! Yulianne will not be please and His Majesty the Emperor will be infuriated. Are these consequences something you can bear?!”

The underlying meaning of her words: If you don’t hand Mount Longinus over to me, then I guess I’ll just force!

Weylin understood Suzanne’s meaning, “You want to use force with me?”

“Aiya, Little Sister, your words are too grating on the ears. How could I let Sauron bully you, my little sister?!”

Correct. If you don’t give me Mount Longinus, then I will force you too! I will make Sun City’s number one expert Sauron go and straighten you out!

Weylin smirked. Looking at the pocket watch on the elderly manager's person, she saw that it was no 7:25 in the evening, "Suzanne, you're actually Sauron's fighting capability to threaten me. Oh, *I'm honestly so scared! However...."

"However what...."

Bang!

Right in the middle of their negotiation, an overseer of Suzanne Farms charged in, "Madame, something bad has happened!"

He suddenly caught sight of Weylin and sealed up his mouth in panic.

Weylin knocked against the table, "What's bad thing has happened? Say it~ Don't tell me that your Suzanne Farms has some shameful secret?!"

When the overseer saw that Madame Suzanne did not object, he answered with a dejected face, "Madame, starting five minutes ago, a person began following along Third Main Street and destroying our shops! Our brothers tried their best to block him, b-but, that person was truly too strong!

In just five minutes, he destroyed three of our farm's shops and injured one hundred twenty something of our brothers!

The injured brothers went to go find the peacekeeping city

guards, but that person didn't even put the soldiers in his eyes! He has already beaten two offensive groups of the soldiers into retreat, a-and even injured Sun City's Guard General!"

Pa! Madame Suzanne slapped the table and shot to her feet, glaring coldly at Weylin.

Meanwhile, Weylin sat there without a face that said, 'What are you looking at me for? *I'm currently in the middle of thinking about a man'.

Weylin then scratched her head blankly, "Huh? Where did we negotiate to? Ah, it was if I didn't hand over Mount Longinus, you'd send Sauron to straighten me out...."

Weylin abruptly stood up, "Alright, then send Sauron to straighten me out! However.... *My Professor isn't easy to handle either!"

Her underlying meaning: You see now? The Professor has already begun destroying your shops. If you even dare to think about Mount Longinus, I'll let the Professor continue wreaking havoc!

Madame Suzanne's face went through a variety of different expressions, and she suddenly laughed aloud, "Good, good Little Sister Weylin! You actually allowed the Professor to go and destroy my shops!"

"Aiyah. Big Sister, your words are too unpleasant. How could I

let the Professor bully you, Big Sister?”

Weylin imitated Madame Suzanne’s previous tone. Her mood had already brightened to the extreme as she picked up the map on the table, “If Big Sister doesn’t have anything else to take care of, *I’ll just take this map back. The matter of renting Mount Longinus…. will just be settled like this then.”

Weylin strode out of the conference room with Lola and the others following behind her. Their heads were raised and their chests stuck out, their faces brimming with spirit and vigor.

With the Professor, with Jiang Nan giving a display of power on the other side, West Farms had once again retrieved their dignity!

However, right as they reached the doorway, Madame Suzanne smiled coldly: “What are you in a rush for? The negotiations haven’t yet come to an end!”

Could it be that Madame Suzanne had even more bargaining chips?!

Weylin turned her head around in stupefaction.

Madame Suzanne’s smile grew icy, “Little Sister Weylin, I have a visitor here, and he would very much like to see you! Come out!”

Chapter 041: Weylin Beats Her Elder Brother

A middle-aged man with a pale face walked into the conference room.

He wore an aristocratic robe knitted from gold thread and his head with slathered in the most precious, red pomade. Raising his head, one could see that his ten fingers were actually accessorized with seven male diamond rings.

This person appeared as though he had drunk excessively and walked over to Weylin with staggering steps, causing Weylin to call out in alarm, “Elder Brother, what is a lowlife like you doing here?!”

This person was precisely Weylin’s elder brother and the farm’s true master, Count West!

The Count did not dare to face Weylin’s gaze head on, “Little Sister, Madame Suzanne invited me here to discuss the ‘purchase’ of Mount Longinus. I’ve already agreed.”

As if struck by a thunderbolt, Weylin was stunned into blankness!

After several seconds, Weylin suddenly grabbed onto the Count’s collar, “You damned lowlife! Y-you sold Mount Longinus?!”

“Ai, let me go! Hurry up and let me go! I am your blood-related brother you know! Weylin, listen to my explanation!”

The Count struggled to speak, “You also know that I often enjoy gambling here and there. Several days ago, I lost 270,000 gold coins at the betting house.”

The Count cried aloud in dejection, “270,000 gold coins! Furthermore, that betting house was the imperial estate of the empire! I, I didn’t dare to renege on the debt like I used to.”

“So you sold Mount Longinus?!”

The Count’s head drooped, “Little Sister, I truly have no other choice. Our farm definitely cannot gather up 270,000 gold coins! If I did not sell Mount Longinus, I, I would be beaten to death by the debt collectors!”

Pa!

Weylin was so furious that she slapped the Count’s face, “Lowlife! You damned lowlife! Even if you had to sell it, you weren’t supposed to sell it to Suzanne!

Once this lowlife Suzanne acquires the resources of Mount Longinus, her side’s strength will rapidly increase and our farm will have no way out whatsoever!”

“Little Sister, I didn’t want to sell Mount Longinus to Suzanne

either! However, Suzanne agreed that as long as I sold Mount Longinus to her, she.... She would present me with the most beautiful woman in Sun City!”

The Count murmured lecherously, “Little Sister, that woman is truly too beautiful! Her eyes are exactly like the stars of the night sky, and her hair is like a pitch-black waterfall....”

The Count’s eyes began to glaze over as he spoke, but Weylin had already slumped back into her chair, “For a girl, you sold Mount Longinus to Suzanne.... For a girl, West, you sold Father’s sweat and blood to Suzanne?!”

Suddenly!

Two snow white wings unfurled from Weylin and her two hands had also transformed into snow white swallow’s talons. She roared as she charged towards Count West, “I will kill you in Father’s place, you lowlife!”

.....

Madame Suzanne watched the liveliness with a radiant face, but seeing Weylin going to kill West, “Little Sister Weylin, be lenient~ Remember that Count West is your dear elder brother.”

With just one sentence, Weylin flattened like a punctured ball, gloomily turning back into human form.

Madame Suzanne spoke with a smile: “Little Sister, your elder brother has already sold Mount Longinus to me. You would not fail to acknowledge this, would you?”

Weylin could only smile bitterly. Losing Mount Longinus had already become a fact, and she was unable to reverse the situation.

However....

She suddenly recalled Jiang Nan’s requirement: during the match, Mount Longinus had to be closed off!

Weylin waved her hands powerlessly, “Suzanne, Mount Longinus is yours now. However, I need time. Only after the Professor’s and Gibson’s match will I hand over Mount Longinus to you!”

“Aiyah, this would not be too good. In just fifteen more days, Yulianne will....”

“Don’t bring up Yulianne so much! Who doesn’t understand that constructing a temporary residence for Yulianne is just an excuse! All you damn want is my Mount Longinus!

Suzanne, I will hand over Mount Longinus after the match between the Professor and Gibson! This is my final bottom line! If you don’t agree....”

Weylin’s face suffused over with a layer of killing intent, “This

woman will throw caution to the wind and go all out in a life and death struggle with you!”

Under Weylin’s overbearing tone, Suzanne almost couldn’t breathe, “Alright, alright! Since Little Sister is so reluctant to hand over Mount Longinus, Big Sister will just wait a few more days then!

However, Big Sister has some words to say first! If you suddenly take back your words when the time comes, don’t blame Big Sister for taking some action that would harm our relationship.”

Weylin was so enraged that she could not speak.

She then glared at Count West, “You’ve already sold Father’s sweat, why aren’t you leaving? Hurry up and come with me!”

But the Count did not even wiggle his feet, “Hehe, just wait a bit. Just a bit longer.”

He came to Suzanne with an ingratiating smile, “Madame, the woman you promised me....”

Madame Suzanne laughed, “Ten minutes later, I will send her to Weylin’s courtyard.”

.....

Madame Suzanne sent off Weylin's group of people with her eyes, but the instant the conference room's door shut, the smile abruptly melted off her face.

"Come!"

A trusted servant walked in, "Madame, we await *your instructions."

A cold light flickered in Suzanne's eyes as she threw the notice Weylin left behind towards the servant, "Send this to Sauron! Tell Sauron that the location for the battle during the drifting snow has been changed to Mount Longinus!

Also, tell Sauron to investigate! He must definitely find out why the Professor changed the location of the duel!

If he really cannot find out....

Then tell Sauron to find a way to attend the match between the Professor and the Weather totem duo. When the time is ripe, he is to kill the Professor and the Weather duo!"

After she said all this, Suzanne exhaled out a long breath and murmured to herself: "This damned Professor! If I didn't have West as a trump card, today.... Hmph! I would truly fall to your hands!"

Achoo!

Jiang Nan sneezed, his face saying ‘Which beauty is talking about me? Oh, that’s not right. I’m an unlucky bastard who deserves to be incapable of finding a girlfriend. Rather, which corpse is talking about me?’

At this moment, Jiang Nan had already completed his task outstandingly. He beat the third round of the city’s soldiers offensive back and then came to Weylin’s courtyard on the Sixth Block.

He still had to await Weylin’s return.

Jiang Nan was extremely lighthearted at the moment. Weylin’s negotiations should have already concluded. He would then get his hands on the map and wait for the freak with the hanging eyeball to help him remove his slave marking.

But right as Jiang Nan lost himself in happiness, Weylin led Count West in.

Count West?!

Hatred immediately filled Jiang Nan’s heart. This was the bastard who chopped off Auntie’s two legs!” Miss Weylin, since the Count is in your hands, you should grab him even more fiercely…. Okay, did something unexpected happen during the negotiation?”

“Get out of the way! All talk about your matters later!”

Weylin smashed the Count onto the ground in a fit of rage and then instructed the overseers, “Hang up this lowlife West on the door frame! Lola, give me my whip!”

Lola was so startled that the color drained from her face, “Miss, the Count, the Count is *your blood-related elder brother!”

“He is not my elder brother! He’s only a lowlife who’s ruined the family’s estate!”

Weylin snatched the whip from Lola’s hands and ‘Pa!’, she violently lashed the Count’s head, “West, this first lashing is in Father’s place! Because you did not uphold the family rule! Because your gambling became an addiction!”

Pa!

“The second lashing is in the farm’s soldiers’ place! Because you sold Mount Longinus for a woman! For the sake of Mount Longinus, do you know how many people died on the battlefield?!”

Pa!

“The third lashing is for myself! Because you betrayed the farm and destroyed the estate *I worked so hard to piece together!”

Weylin raised the whip for the fourth time, but the Count had

already fainted. Finding no other person to vent on, ‘Boom!’, the courtyard’s main door collapsed!

And the West who had been hanging from the door frame was also buried underneath the debris!

By this time, the elderly manager of the farm truly could not take it anymore, “Miss, calm your anger, calm your anger! Even if the Count should not have done so and is completely in the wrong, he is, after all, *your elder brother! I beg *you, leave him with his life!” He aimed a look in Lola’s direction, “Lola, quick, quickly accompany the Miss back in to rest.”

“This woman won’t go back in!”

Weylin’s hand gripped the whip and stood guard at the ruined entrance of the courtyard.

“Miss, *you’ve already beat him and cursed him, and *your injuries have not fully healed yet either. It’s still better….”

“Shut your f***ing mouths!”

Weylin pointed towards the fragmented rocks beneath her feet, roaring: “I am going to wait here! Isn’t that woman going be sent here after ten minutes? I’ll just wait for her here! I want to see exactly what kind of woman turned my elder brother head over heels in lust to the point that he didn’t hesitate to sell Mount Longinus…. Exactly what does she look like!”

As she spoke, creak, creak! The sound of a carriage rang out from an alleyway.

As expected, Madame Suzanne was true to her word. She had already sent the woman over!

Chapter 042: Suzu Joins, A Trio Is Born (1)

Once Weylin caught sight of the carriage, she was so infuriated that green veins popped out on her skin and she charged towards the front of the carriage, “You damned lowlife, get the f*** out here!”

Bang!

Weylin destroyed the carriage!

A woman tumbled out in a pitiful manner.

The woman was dressed in a plain white dress and had a head of long, raven black hair. There was also a paper and pen set at her side.

But the most astonishing was that she was actually bound with ox tendon!

When Weylin saw the ox tendon bindings, she was slightly startled, and when she finally got a good look at the woman’s face, she could not help but call out in alarm, “Madame Suzanne?! No, that’s not right! You’re much younger than Madame Suzanne! You damned girl, exactly who are you?!”

(*TL: raws = 丫头, can be used affectionately, but also deprecatingly, and in this case, it’s clearly the latter.)

The woman in the carriage had a large pair of jet-black eyes. At

this moment, her eyes brimmed with the hopelessness of despair as she stared silently at Weylin and then lowered her head.

"This woman's asking you a question! Did you not hear me?!"

Because Weylin did not get any response, she was so angry that she raised her whip up and directed it towards the woman's head, "Fine, fine! Since you won't speak, then this woman will beat you until you are forever unable to speak!"

Pa!

The whip smacked onto Jiang Nan's hand!

Weylin looked on blankly, "Professor, what are you doing? This woman drove me to lose Mount Longinus and pushed my farm into dire straits. You, you actually dare to save her?!"

"Miss Weylin, blaming a woman in place of a man's sin is quite unwise. You need to calm down, calm down...."

Jiang Nan supported the woman and untied her bindings, "Okay, I must tell you two things: first, this woman is not deliberately looking down on you. She is mute and can't even say anything."

"Mute?" Weylin looked skeptically at Jiang Nan, "How do you know that she's mute?!"

“That is my second point....” Jiang Nan shrugged his shoulders, “This woman previously belonged to me, which is why I know she’s mute!”

Belonged to you?!

Weylin was so astonished that she could not get any words out of her mouth!

On the other hand, Jiang Nan let out a sigh in the woman’s direction, “Okay, Suzu. We meet again.”

After he said this, he motioned out to her the crushing of a slave marker, “Do you still remember me?”

“Wuwu!”

Suzu let out an excited sound and her large eyes suddenly lit up with pleasant surprise. Looking at Weylin in fear, she huddled in Jiang Nan’s embrace.

At this moment, Jiang Nan was not wearing a gold mask. However, Suzu was far too familiar with that gesture of crushing the slave marker: with just one look, she recognized Jiang Nan as the benefactor who had liberated her!

The wind howled by as Sun City descended into a heavy snowfall.

Suzu burrowed into Jiang Nan's chest. With her thin clothes, she was freezing to the point that she shivered.

And Jiang Nan hated that he couldn't just smack his forehead to pieces!

The woman in the carriage was actually Suzu!

Forget about why Suzu appeared here. The main crux of the issue was that Suzu ran into trouble again, but this time, how was he supposed to take care of her?!

Just neglect Suzu? Jiang Nan could not harden his heart like that.

Let Suzu go? But seeing how Weylin looked, if he let Suzu go tonight, Weylin would have probably chased Suzu in a killing pursuit until she was trapped by the next morning!

Then....

There was only one choice left—leaving Suzu by his side!

Jiang Nan was shocked out of his mind by his own idea. Good heavens, how could he have this kind of thought! He was a bastard who didn't deserve to find a girlfriend after all!"

If one day, Suzu saw him digging out a heart or cutting a person's

head off, she, she....

Jiang Nan truly did not dare to think about it further.

By this time, Weylin had gotten an understanding of the relationship between the Professor and Suzu, but her face continued to darken, “Professor, you’ve already let this lowly girl go, so she has no existing relationship with you anymore! Get out of my way and let me kill her!”

Jiang Nan sighed in his heart. Alright, for the sake of Suzu’s safety, he would still temporarily keep her by his side.

However....

He had two identities: should he let Suzu stay by Rodi’s side, or stay by the Professor’s side?!

Jiang Nan swiftly reached a decision: the Professor wrought havoc and killed the entire day. It would still be better for her to follow Rodi then.

As for how to send Suzu to Rodi’s side....

Jiang Nan chuckled and then barred the way of the furious Weylin, “Miss Weylin, Count West is at fault here. Suzu is only an unlucky mute, so why must you kill her? I told you just before already, blaming a woman for a man’s mistake....”

“Shut up! This woman has no interest in hearing your great principles!”

Weylin’s two eyes were already bloodshot as she raised her whip up high, “Professor, this lowly girl made me lose Mount Longinus and also destroyed my farm! If I don’t kill her, even if *I die, I won’t have the face to be buried next to my father. Get out of my way!”

“But…. what if I don’t get out of your way?! Miss Weylin, you will really be throwing my face in the dirt by killing the woman who previously belonged to me!”

Jiang Nan spoke in a hard-pressed tone, “We’re all on the same side, and there’s no need for us to negatively impact our relationships for a mere mute. You want to kill her, and I want to save face. How about…. we discuss a compromise?”

“Compromise? You can still f***ing compromise about this?!”

“Why can’t I? You being unable to think about it doesn’t mean that it does not exist.”

Jiang Nan spoke with a smile, “Are you interested? Listen to my solution.”

Weylin resentfully snorted, “Say it then!”

“This is my solution…. Oh, Miss Weylin. Before I reveal the solution to you, I hope *you can answer some of my questions….”

Jiang Nan slowly redirected the topic of the conversation, “The first question is this. I do not understand the circumstances very well, so if I might ask, who possesses the lowliest status on the farm?”

Weylin answered without thinking, “Slaves!”

“En, a slave! My second question: Lola, you can answer this. Who is the lowliest among the slaves then?”

Lola called out in a high voice: “It’s Alisa! She’s a lunatic and a cripple, a slave of the lowest standing!”

“Oh, Alisa….” Jiang Nan pondered over his Aunt’s name as though he had never heard it before.

“Then here is my third question: it is a yes or no question, Miss Weylin. You only need to answer whether I’m right or wrong….

This is my third question: to retaliate against a person, the person must experience inhuman torment and taste the lowliest suffering. This is even more refreshing than killing a person, correct?”

Weylin listened blankly, then squeezed out a few words from her gritted teeth, “Let’s just say you’re right!”

“Alright, alright! The solution has already been revealed!” Jiang Nan answered with a dazzling smile, “The compromise is.... to let Suzu wait upon Alisa!”

For a time, everybody’s faces became exceedingly strange: Weylin looked on like a deer in headlights, Lola’s jaw dropped, and the managers and the overseers exchanged looks in between them. Amidst their looks, they suddenly showed an expression that said, ‘Cruel, cruel, cruel! Professor, you’re so cruel!’

Jiang Nan continued to maintain a beaming smile, “Did I say something wrong? See, you were the ones who said just before that Alisa was a lunatic and a cripple, the lowest of the low! Then, letting Suzu go wait upon a deranged slave who cannot be reasoned with, a slave who is the lowest of the low, is equivalent to pushing her into a living hell. Isn’t this.... more refreshing than killing her?” He casually patted his chest, “This way, Miss Weylin, you are able to vent your anger, while I am able to uphold my face. No relationships are harmed, ha!”

Jiang Nan’s laughter brought about eyes that rolled in contempt, while Weylin glared viciously at Jiang Nan.

Face, face!

Weylin chewed over Jiang Nan’s words. Damn it! It turns out that the Professor wanting to save Suzu wasn’t out of compassion, but for the sake of saving his face!

For the sake of this guy's face, a mute would be pushed into a living hell....

What a f***ing son of a b***h!

Weylin's impression towards the Professor fell to a record low. However, the conversation had already progressed to this point, and she had to give the Professor some 'face', "Fine! Let's just say that your words make sense! Lola, go interrogate Suzu and ascertain her origin, then send her to Alisa! As for you, Professor...." Glaring icily at Jiang Nan, Weylin commanded, "Come with me!"

Chapter 043: Suzu Joins, A Trio Is Born (2)

In Weylin and the others' perspective, waiting upon Alisa was the most anguishing and humiliating task. However, Jiang Nan was very aware that his aunt was actually a senior who was quite easy to get along with. Suzu definitely wouldn't suffer any hardships by accompanying his aunt.

Weylin walked into the courtyard and Jiang Nan followed after her with a face of glee.

At this moment, Suzu suddenly stood up and tugged onto Jiang Nan's shirt, deep appreciation showing in her large eyes.

And then, Suzu stuck out her fair left hand and wrote the words "Thank you!" on them.

Jiang Nan went blank, then deliberately feigned disdain, "What are you thanking me for? I've delivered you into the hands of a lunatic and pushed you into the fiery pit. You're actually thanking me?"

Suzu gave a calm smile and wrote some additional words on the palm of her hand, "Suzu understands that that young miss was just about to kill Suzu. *Your decision to send Suzu to a slave is to protect Suzu."

She understood?! She actually understood his intent?!

Jiang Nan gaped in silence, then turned his back to Suzu and waved his hand, “I’m as good as a person that you think I am, young girl. Your impression of me is too kindly.”

From beginning to end, Jiang Nan had never told Suzu that besides being the Professor, he had another identity: Rodi!

Jiang Nan did not actually want Suzu to know that the Professor was Rodi. As to why this was so, Jiang Nan did not really know either. If his psychologist friend from the past world were here, perhaps he would give this kind of answer, “Humans will always subconsciously cover up the most lowly side of themselves, especially in front of a beautiful person of the opposite gender! Jiang Nan, the reason why you don’t want Suzu to know that you are Rodi is because you don’t want her to know that hidden underneath your guise as the grand and mighty Professor is actually the…. appearance of the absolute lowest slave!”

Weylin was currently waiting for Jiang Nan in the room. She had already determined Jiang Nan to be a ‘cold-blooded, hypocritical expert who would die for the sake of face’, so she naturally wouldn’t give him a good attitude.

“This is the map *I promised you. Is there anything else you need? If not….”

Weylin slammed the map of ‘Mount Longinus’ in Jiang Nan’s direction and then pointed towards the door, spitting out: “Hurry up and prepare for your match! Don’t forget, you’ll be challenging an ‘intermediate ranked’ Wind Totem after ten days!”

“Calm down, Miss Weylin. My coming and going is not something for you to decide.... Okay, I’m a bit curious towards Suzu’s background, so I hope that I can see the records about her.”

Weylin snorted and then twisted her head, refusing to speak.

After around seven or eight minutes, “Miss, Miss!”

Lola dashed in and waved about a piece of paper, saying in a flustered manner, “Suzu’s records have already been investigated!”

“What are you all flustered about?” Weylin responded in dissatisfaction: “Don’t tell me that Suzu is a major personage!”

“Suzu isn’t a major personage, no. No, she used to be a major personage!” Lola’s face was quite strange, “Aiyah, Lola really can’t say it clearly. If you could please take a look at the record.”

Weylin curiously took the record and first glimpsed these words, “My name is Suzu; I am a mute....”

Jiang Nan also scooched over. Because his reading speed was even faster than Weylin’s, he understood Suzu’s background after only a few sweeping glances.

There were ‘Seven Great Totem Aristocracies’, with the First Totem Millennium, the Rheinhardt Clan, at the head.

Second only to the Rheinhardt Clan was the ‘Sommer Clan’ that backed Madame Suzanne.

Suzu was of the Sommer Clan! Furthermore, she was the direct granddaughter of the family head, and was previously a young princess!

However, these things only lasted up till five years ago.

Do you still remember the legend about Talik? Five years ago, Talik suppressed a revolt that occurred in the capital: Suzu’s father was precisely one of those rebels.

Suzu did not actually know why her father participated in the rebellion. She only knew the consequence of his betrayal: her father died on the battlefield, while her mother was taken captive by Talik, hung to death on the city gate.

Suzu, on the other hand....

At that time, Suzu was only nine years old. Although Talik had also captured her, according to the law in which ‘those younger than twelve years of age are prohibited from being sentenced to death’, he left her with her life.

And this was the life he gave her: Talik cut Suzu’s vocal cords and sold her to the slave traffickers!

While those younger than twelve years old could not be executed, it did not mean that one could not slit the vocal cords and sell the child, right?

For the next five years, Suzu was passed from hand to hand six times.

It was not until half a month ago that the stadium bought her and gifted her to the Professor as a prize.

Jiang Nan was already aware of the following events: he destroyed the slave marker and liberated Suzu.

However, after Suzu was freed, she had nobody to go to. She then suddenly recalled that she had a directly related aunt in Sun City.

Suzu's paternal aunt was Madame Suzanne (which is why the two people's facial appearances were so similar. Similar appearances between relatives were universally and commonly seen throughout the Yuanzhi Continent).

Hence, Suzu went to go look for Madame Suzanne. However, Madame Suzanne was not willing to care for a niece who had long since been expelled from the clan.

Furthermore, when Madame Suzanne caught sight of Suzu's appearance, an interesting notion suddenly popped up in her mind: this girl's was abnormally beautiful. If she used her to entice Count West....

Just like that, Madame Suzanne used Suzu to acquire Mount Longinus.

And now....

Suzu had been sent to Alisa!

After finding out Suzu's background, Weylin was silent for a while. She suddenly sighed, "So Suzu was actually the Sommer Clan's little princess.... Ai, honestly, this girl is quite pitiful."

Lola pouted: "Exactly! Right after I saw the contents of the record, I was so shocked. Miss, are we still going to send Suzu to Alisa?"

"Send, why wouldn't we send?" Weylin coolly glanced at Jiang Nan, "Some Lord Professor has already ordered it to be done. Do we dare not to send her?! If we don't send her and Lord Professor's face can no longer be upheld, what happens if he blows up in fury?"

Jiang Nan chuckled indifferently. Just before, he had only wanted to keep Suzu by his side, and unexpectedly did not realize that his wish to 'maintain face' had actually given Weylin such a horrible impression.

However, letting Suzu go to take care of Alisa was having the best of both worlds. Getting misunderstood was totally worth it!

Jiang Nan stood up and excused himself.

Weylin did not hold him back either. She stared at Jiang Nan's receding figure in disdain, telling Lola, "Lola, arrange the luggage and come with me to Rheim Pasture."

"Miss, what are we going to Rheim Pasture for?"

Lola went blank, but soon reacted, "Oh, Rodi is still at Rheim Pasture. Miss, did you want to go see Rodi? But.... Rodi's only a slave. Is it necessary for you to go check up on a slave?"

"Why are you asking so many questions?! Whatever this woman tells you to do, just go do it! Hurry up and beat it!"

Weylin pointed towards the door and flew into a round of abuse, the spittle from her mouth shooting out like meteors onto Suzu's face. However, after Lola stumbled over herself to carry out Weylin's orders, Weylin's beautiful face suddenly revealed intense resolve, "Do what? Hmph! This woman won't be able to live much longer. Can I not say a last farewell to that heartless lowlife before I die?"

Chapter 044: The Legend Of Mount Longinus, Talik's Shock!

By 9:25 that night, Weylin had already prepared all the luggages. Suzu, the three managers, and Lola also departed along with Weylin. They were going to return to the farm to prepare for the match and would not be able to return to this place for at least four or five days.

The only people left in the courtyard were the unconscious Count West and two additional overseers.

At 9:30, Weylin and her team departed from the Sixth Block. Almost at the exact same time, Talik and Victor rushed over and hastily pushed open the entrance to Weylin's courtyard house.

"Tell me, does the Professor who killed my nephew live here!"

Talik barked out darkly!

An hour before, Talik and Victor had met up and found Hank's corpse.

Hank's corpse had been frozen in the hospital's cellar.

"Lord Talik, if *you could please verify the corpse! I've fulfilled Hank's final wishes and guarded here for five days. I assure you that absolutely no one has touched Hank's corpse!"

Truthfully speaking, Victor had carried out ‘Hank’s final wishes’ with extreme care and responsibility, so Talik still somewhat had to show his appreciation. At the very least, he had to say ‘thank you’.

However, Talik seemed as though he had not heard what Victor said at all. He hastily thawed the frost on Hank’s body, then stripped off Hank’s clothes.

Victor stared blankly, “Lord Talik, what are you doing this for?”

“Victor, you talk too much.” Talik’s face brimmed with urgency, “You don’t have the qualifications to know anything else concerning this matter. Go out!”

“You’re telling me to get out?! A wolf will not suffer this kind of insulting command! Talik, I gave you face only because I respect you as the empire’s high ranking official….”

Pa!

Talik threw down a shiny command token, “Victor, your family’s Reyne Mountain is also within the borders of the empire! As of this moment, I order you to leave this place right away as Vice Captain of the execution squad of the empire’s highest court of the law! If not, you will be committing the serious offense of ‘spying on the empire’s classified information’ and be sentenced to the punishment of ‘being hung and chopped in half with the destruction of three generations of your family’!”

Victor was so furious that he bared his sharp teeth, but he still left the cellar resentfully.

Talik was, after all, a high official of the empire. Victor did not want to bring the resentment of the imperial government upon Reyne Mountain for only one or two sentences.

However....

Victor's curiosity had been piqued.

He came to the floor right on top of the cellar and pried open a crack in the floorboards, sneakily observing.

Wolves were originally adept at concealing themselves in the first place, and Victor's faith totem was even more so the type of wolf that was the most skilled at hiding, the Nether Wolf. Talik did not discover Victor's presence—so after Talik stripped Hank's body bare, he suddenly unsheathed two slender dissecting knives from the bag on his waist!

"Hank, for the sake of our future, Uncle can only let you die without peace...."

The blade gleamed and flashed, cutting open Hank's chest.

Victor grew alarmed and fearful as he watched.

Taking care of the dead was the main issue, but Talik actually damaged his own nephew's corpse! Exactly what was this for?!

The following events caused Victor's 'heart to crawl and flesh to creep', making him stare 'dumbstruck'!

Talik dissected Hank's corpse and burned the pieces of rotten flesh that weren't needed. Afterwards, he arranged Hank's skeleton before him!

"So this is the skeleton that was dislocated by the Professor?"

Studying Hank's skeleton, Talik's eyes became unsure, "Hank, you said that the key to unlocking the secret was in your skeleton, but.... Ha, I understand, I understand now!"

It was unknown what Talik saw, but he abruptly called out in surprised delight, "Correct, Correct! As expected, the skeleton dislocated by the Professor is not ordinary! Hank, what you said is correct! To unlock this secret, the Professor must be found!"

After he said this, Talik knelt before Hank's skeleton, "Hank, Uncle will bow to you in place of everybody else! Uncle will thank you in place of everybody else! You did not die in vain, but rather used your own life.... to direct us to a bright path!"

Talik choked with sobs.

He was not aggrieved because of Hank. Instead, he was excited! He was incomparably excited!

It was only ten minutes later that Talik calmed himself down.

He then stored Hank's skeleton in a bag. As if he was protecting a newly born infant, he securely bound the bag to his chest.

Arriving outside the cellar, Talik grabbed onto a medical apprentice of the hospital, "Tell me, where can I find the Professor?!"

"I, I don't know where the Professor is! However, I heard that he joined West Farms. If you find Weylin, you will definitely be able to find the Professor!" This apprentice just so happened to be the person who had helped Victor several days ago. As such, he knew Weylin's address, "Lord, if *you wish to find Weylin.... You can go to the largest courtyard house on the Sixth Block!"

"For providing important information, according to the empire's laws, I bestow you with ten gold coins!"

Talik threw a pouch of gold coins to the apprentice and was just about to leave for the Sixth Block when suddenly, "Lord Talik! Are you going to look for Weylin?"

Victor's figure appeared from around the corner as he spoke with a cold smile, "Weylin is my fiancée. If you are going to harm Weylin, then please step over my dead body! If you wish to make a

friend.... Too wonderful! I've already fulfilled Hank's final wishes and was just about to go and propose to Weylin, so we can go together! Lord Talik, your decision is...."

"We can go together to find Weylin!"

Just like that, the two of them arrived at Weylin's courtyard house. However, by that time, Weylin and the others had already arrived at Rheim Pasture.

The two of them only saw an empty courtyard as well as an unconscious Count West who was being taken care of by two overseers.

Furthermore, these two overseers knew that Weylin hated Victor. They closed their eyes, and no matter what Victor and Talik asked, they only answered, "Miss Weylin has departed from this place. If you wish to find her, then you'll have to wait. She'll probably return after around half a year."

Talik's eyebrows tightly knitted in regret. However, in the blink of an eye, he caught site of the stack of flyers on the table next to the overseers that were to be distributed to the entire city. He stuck his hand out and snatched up a sheet, "Ten days later, the Professor will challenge Gibson of the Wind...."

His eyebrows eased up, "Ten days from now, on the Drifting Snow Festival at Mount Longinus.... I will also go to participate in the fun! Victor, are you going?"

“Where Weylin is, Victor will definitely be there. As long as Weylin goes, I will go too.... Aooo~ The Professor is going to challenge Gibson?!” Victor was absentmindedly staring at Weylin’s empty room, but when he heard these words, his wolfy eyes suddenly shone with a cold light and his spirit immediately inflated by a hundred times, “A wolf will definitely not let off any enemy! The Professor pushed me out of the Top Ten Ranking. I just so happened to want to measured his strength, so let’s go together, Lord Talik!”

Talik gave a slight nod and took another look at the written challenge. Suddenly, he called out wildly in his heart.

“Wait a minute! The Professor actually set the match ten days from now. Is it a coincidence, or is it that.... he knows the legend concerning Mount Longinus and wants to make use of it to overstep his rank and prevail over that Weather Totem Warrior?!”

Weylin did not know! Madame Suzanne did not know! The entire Sun City did not know either! However, because Talik was a high official of the empire and was in charge of the core of criminal legislation, he knew some secrets.

A legend had been passed down for a millennium concerning the secret of Mount Longinus.

When Talik and Victor decided to attend the fight on the night of the drifting snow, Weylin had already arrived at Rheim Pasture.

However, Rheim Pasture had already been rented by Madame

Suzanne. Weylin did not feel like looking at the faces of Madame Suzanne's subordinates, so she just waited in a small grove of trees, telling an overseer to call Jiang Nan over.

(*TL: raw word used = 嘴脸, which is used in a derogatory manner)

She did not think that the overseer would actually be unable to find Jiang Nan!

Of course he could not find him. Professor Jiang Nan was currently on the road returning to the pasture. Catching sight of Weylin's carriage outside the small grove of trees from a distance, he hastily took a detour and did not go through the pasture. Instead, he came to Weylin from a small path on the side.

"Oh, it's a dark night and truly a good time to sleep.... Alright, Miss Weylin. You were looking for me?"

Jiang Nan appeared drowsy and sleepy as he looked towards the dark clouds in the sky while speaking. In his mind, Weylin would definitely send out a flurry of curses, "You damned lowlife! Not being in the pasture in the middle of the night, where did you go die?"

However....

Weylin's expression was extremely calm. She waved her hand, "All of you leave and stand watch outside of the grove. Without my command, you are prohibited from coming in."

“Miss Weylin, what are *you….”

Jiang Nan went blank. At this time, only he and her were left in the grove. Weylin suddenly sighed, then threw herself into Jiang Nan’s chest, weeping pitifully, “Rodi, do you know? Right now, I’m so tired, I’m honestly so tired….”

Chapter 045: Punishment, A Prelude To The Night Of The Drifting Snow

Very quickly, Weylin's tears dampened Jiang Nan's shirt.

Jiang Nan awkwardly stuck his hands in his back pockets and stuck out his chest, asking, "Calm down, Miss Weylin. Did you run into some difficulty?"

"You can just think of it as a difficulty. Rodi, the reason why I came to look for you today…. was to say farewell!" Weylin buried her head in Jiang Nan's chest and narrated the events of the past several days in a bitter tone, "Ai, do you know? My elder brother already sold Mount Longinus. For a woman, for a femme fatale of a lowly girl, he sold my father's sweat and blood! Rodi, my father was an illegitimate child. It was only after he struggled for a lifetime that he developed West Farm's estate, but now…. now, there's nothing left!!"

She spoke bitterly: "Perhaps you may want to tell me that I've only just brought over the Professor. The matter hasn't fallen to the point that I have no choices left…. But do you understand? Just before, the Professor pushed a mute into a fiery pit just to maintain his face! He's basically a cold-blooded expert who is dead set on upholding face! I don't dare to truly believe this kind of person or truly rely on him…."

"Even if it's like this, it still isn't necessary for you to say your 'farewell', right?" Jiang Nan cut Weylin off, "Okay, at worst, you would just sell the farm and enter the city to become a young aristocratic miss who harbors no worries or cares."

“*I wish! However, there are people who will not let me do as I please!” Weylin grew emotional, “Forget about others, that lowlife Suzanne firmly believes in completely destroying something from the root, so she won’t let me off! Furthermore,when I am in trouble, the clan headquarters won’t care about whether I live or die. However, now that I’ve lost Mount Longinus, clan headquarters will definitely send someone over to condemn me! Rodi, just watch. In twenty days at the latest, the clan headquarters’ law enforcement squad will appear before me. At that time, even if I haven’t committed an unpardonable sin, I will still have to be imprisoned for eight or ten years, no longer able to see you!”

Jiang Nan was startled, “Is Rhein Headquarters truly so cold-blooded?”

“More than simply cold-blooded, that group of animals can carry out anything!” Weylin laughed bitterly: “Right now, I can only support the Professor’s duel to the best of my ability. I hope that the Professor will perform in such a way that rocks Sun City out of shock in representation of our farm. Only in this way will there be a possibility of me atoning for my sins....”

After she said this, Weylin wiped away her tears and laughed loudly, “Alright, this woman’s shown you a joke again! If you want to laugh, then laugh. In any case, I’ve already said all that I ought to say. *I still have to go prepare for the match on Mount Longinus, so I’ll go first!”

Staring at Weylin’s back, Jiang Nan was silent for several

seconds. Suddenly, he called out: “Miss Weylin, I believe the Professor will definitely defeat Gibson!”

“If only!”

Weylin waved at Jiang Nan with her back towards him. From her tone, she clearly did not believe that the Professor would be able to defeat Gibson.

After Weylin left, she sent Suzu back to the farm and brought all the strong forces within the farm that she could muster with her towards Mount Longinus. Thus, the curtains were drawn for the Professor’s match against the Weather Duo.

At this time, Jiang Nan also began to get down to business. He was still, after all, a substitute team member of the Knife Work Feast team. Moreover, he had to attend Talik’s class about anatomy as well.

On the evening of the second day, Jiang Nan appeared in Talik’s class, yet just five minutes into the lecture, he facepalmed, “Yi? I’m just wasting my time here. It’s still better that I go back and continue practicing my Ghost Mystique Arts!”

(*TL: He uses the term ‘I’ 兄弟 in a humble way)

In Jiang Nan’s perspective, the level of Talik’s understanding of the human body could not even enter the ranks of ‘general knowledge’!

To give a concrete example, let's talk about disassembling the human skull: The skull is a human's most detailed yet also one of the hardest bones of the skeleton. With the help of some fine instruments, Jiang Nan could take apart the skull in one second and reassemble it once more.

(TL: remember that he can dissect a body in 27 seconds)

Talik, on the other hand....

Talik needed at least thirty seconds. On top of that, his method included using a 'hammer to smash' it! From the looks of it, what Talik was doing was not dissection, but rather 'destruction'!

After seeing through Talik's level of achievement in dissection, Jiang Nan truly could not be bothered to listen further. At this time, many knife work specialists who could not bear the sight of the skull getting smashed all vomited. Jiang Nan also pretended to throw up, then secretly stole back away into his room!

The following days, Jiang Nan constantly hid in his room, cultivating the Ghost Mystique Arts. His Skeletal Poison Blade, Death Armor, and Dark Steps had already been comprehended to the point of perfection. All that was left was awaiting the battle on the night of the drifting snow!

However....

When there was only one and a half days left from the match, Jiang Nan suddenly discovered an extremely unexpected issue.

At noon, Jiang Nan was right in the middle of getting his travel pack ready when Eddy's raucous laughter suddenly burst through from the outside, "Haha! Victor, so a wolf cub like you actually came to my place! This armor of yours.... Isn't to catch sheep, is it?"

Jiang Nan glanced out the window and saw Victor dressed in a suit of bright yellow armor. Two sharp daggers hung at his waist and he wore an indigo headband. His head of long, ash black hair followed along the headband to flow down the back of his head, and he was currently in the middle of walking into the pasture.

Victor was actually acquainted with Eddy and haughtily said, "This wolf has come for the battle! Eddy, tell Talik that the arranged time has already arrived. Tell him to come with me to Mount Longinus!"

"Go to Mount Longinus to do what?" Astonishment shone from Eddy's face.

"Eddy, since you've been occupied by all the matters concerning the Knife Work Feast these past several days, I didn't tell you that the Professor will challenge Gibson tomorrow night!"

As he was speaking, Talik walked out from within the pasture. He was attired in the uniform of the empire's highest legislative office, but below the uniform, he also wore a dark red soft armor. A red and black leather bag also hung on his back.

Jiang Nan's eyebrows had already furrowed in his room.

These two people were going to go to Mount Longinus?

Damn it! He had shot off a whole load of talk for the sake of this match in order to create a stage that was 'closed off, in which he could utilize his Ghost Mystique Arts as much as he wanted'. How could he let these two ruin his entire plan?!

But....

These two people were both people of great status and strength. If they wanted to sneak up Mount Longinus, Weylin truly might not be able to block them....

Alright, alright. To keep outsiders away during the match, it'd be best if he personally went to lead them as far from the scene as possible!

As to how he would do this....

A plan that was somewhat evil popped up in Jiang Nan's head: the first step of this plan was to join them along the journey to Mount Longinus, and then.... Mislead the crap out of them!

Calm down, calm down! For the sake of maintaining a model character, it should be said.... That he was helping them to make the most precise decision. En, helping them, helping them!

“The Professor is going to challenge Gibson?!”

At this moment, Eddy was completely stupefied. Glancing at Victor, he suddenly pulled Talik over to one side and said in a hushed voice: “Talik, you actually did not tell me of such an exciting event! F***, what kind of friend are you! Don’t you know that I love excitement? Wait for me! I’ll tidy things up and then go with you! If you dare not to take me…. Hmph, hmph! Be careful in case I reveal how you took part in the entrance exam of the ‘Imperial Culinary Institute’ and flunked!”

Talik’s sinister face suddenly revealed a smile of fond recollection in honor of his youth. However, he still refused: “Eddy, I advise that you not go! While those little guys of Sun City don’t know, don’t tell me that you don’t know the legend pertaining to Mount Longinus? Starting from the day of the Drifting Snow Festival all the way to the New Year, Mount Longinus will devour people!”

“Alright, that’s enough! If you’re there to protect me, do I still need to fear some legend of Mount Longinus? Moreover, the legend of Mount Longinus has been passed down for more than a thousand years, but I still have not heard of anybody being eaten by Mount Longinus!” Eddy laughed heartily with a beaming smile, but his voice grew even lower, “Talik, since you’re so afraid of Mount Longinus, why are you going to watch the fight?”

A strange gleam flashed through Talik’s eyes, “Eddy, I can only tell you this. For the sake of my clansmen, I must find the Professor and beg for his help. As for exactly what kind of help…. If you are my friend, then don’t inquire further!”

“Alright, then I just won’t pester you anymore!” Hearing Talik mention his clansmen, Eddy’s expression grew apprehensive, and he hastily changed the topic while pointing at Victor, “How about Victor? Why is he going to Mount Longinus?”

“A little wolf who doesn’t know the heights of the heavens or the depths of the ground wants to find Weylin to propose. Perhaps…. He also wants to find the Professor to have a little contest?”

Talik laughed coldly, “Eddy…. Do you truly want to go to Mount Longinus?”

Eddy chuckled. Swivelling around, he went into his own room, and after ten odd seconds, he walked out with a case of luggage.

This action of his already expressed his attitude, and Talik could only shake his head while smiling bitterly. Just like that, the three of them began to set off towards Mount Longinus.

Yet right at this moment, Jiang Nan walked out from his room, “Mister Eddy, are you going to Mount Longinus? Okay, are you interested in me taking you?”

“You also want to go to Mount Longinus?” Eddy and the two others all simultaneously furrowed their eyebrows. Victor even scolded in a disdainful manner, “You lowly slave! Why would you go to Mount Longinus?!”

Chapter 046: Sealing Off The Mountain, Second Prelude To The Night Of The Drifting Snow

Do what? Of course it was to face off as well as mislead you guys far away from the actual stage of the fight!

But Jiang Nan did not reveal this truth to them. He shook his finger similar to how he had done while lecturing in his past world, “Calm down, gentlemen. Please calm down.... Before I answer your question, Mister Eddy, could you first answer a few of my questions?”

Eddy had always had a favorable impression of Jiang Nan, so he immediately grew interested, “Young chap, what do you want to ask?”

“My first question is this. If you are someone’s subject, someone’s subordinate, then you ought to put forth your best effort out of loyalty to your master, correct?”

This was common sense that no one would be able to refute, so Eddy nodded.

“Alright, then here’s my second question. No matter how much Miss Weylin beats or scolds me, I am still her slave as well as a member of West Farms, correct?”

“So what if it is?” Victor responded impatiently!

“If so…. Then please answer my third question! If something happens to Miss Weylin, as her servant, don’t tell me that I shouldn’t rush to her side immediately? Don’t tell me that I shouldn’t put forth effort on my part for Miss Weylin’s sake? Don’t tell me that I shouldn’t go to Mount Longinus to help Miss Weylin?!”

All of these comments were in direct favor of Weylin made specifically to combat Victor. Nodding his head, Victor’s expression towards Jiang Nan grew a bit more peaceable.

However, Talik laughed coldly from the side, saying: “Simply on the basis that you want to help Weylin? Hmph, you overestimate yourself!”

“Mister Talik, the laws of the empire do not prohibit me from overestimating my capabilities. On the contrary, the《Imperial Slave Law》stipulates that if the master is in trouble, the slave must appear promptly at the master’s side, is it not so?” He spread his hands out in helplessness, “Alright, I admit, I am only going to Mount Longinus because of this law, but all of you are also aware of Miss Weylin’s temper. If I do not appear at Mount Longinus…. Good heavens! Miss Weylin would beat me to death according to this law!” After he said this, Jiang Nan looked pathetically towards Talik, “Judge Talik, is my abidance of the law…. wrong?!”

(*TL: I’m not really clear about what kind of position Talik holds, but Jiang Nan refers to him as judge 法官)

Talik was completely speechless!

“Alright, alright, I’ll say one more thing of great truth!” Jiang Nan began to add to the fire, “All of you know that as a slave, I am not qualified to enter the Totem stadium. However.... I also want to watch the match! If I miss this chance, I probably won’t be able to see such a spectacular match for the rest of my life! Gentlemen, how about you take me? I’ve gone to Mount Longinus before, so I can act as a guide for you!”

The three of them had been completely tricked into silence and none of them wished to speak unreasonably in front of a lowly person. Eddy smiled bitterly: “Then ready your luggage. My, to be able to talk Talik into silence! You are the first!”

“Alright, as *you wish!”

Jiang Nan picked up the luggage which he had prepared long ago with a face that said, ‘You bunch of students, actually making this teacher waste so much saliva! Your comprehension abilities are truly pitiful.’

Sun City’s prosperity could be completely accredited to the fact that its golden soil could increase output by twenty-something percent. Moreover, a significant half of Sun City’s golden soil came from Mount Longinus!

It could be said that whoever seized Mount Longinus would then have Sun City’s golden soil in their control! This was why Madame Suzanne used all the methods possible to acquire Mount Longinus, and also why Weylin lost all hope for the farm after losing Mount

Longinus, bidding a depressing ‘final farewell’.

Jiang Nan had already gotten the map of Mount Longinus, so for the entire journey, it was a walk in the park. He truly acted the part of a guide.

The evening of the second day, several people appeared before a majestic and magnificent landscape.

Proud, lofty mountains rose and fell in succession, extended into the distance and piercing into the clouds. As for the highest points of the mountain peaks, a bit of radiant red light dazzled!

Circling around and surrounding the red radiance was a huge layer of golden soil that streamed down like a roaring, golden waterfall.

“So this is Mount Longinus? Oh my, what a huge amount of golden soil....”

Eddy gawked at the glorious sight, unable to speak for the longest time.

“Mister Eddy, now is not the time for admiration....” Jiang Nan pointed towards the crowd in front of them from the side, “It seems as though we’ve run into a bit of trouble.”

By this time, they had already arrived at a small town at the foot of the mountain. Normally, this small town would be bustling and

flourishing in a way comparable to that of Sun City's city square because it was connected to the multiple paths leading to the resource locations of Mount Longinus. However, today, the small town was filled with an austere and grim air. The dark and oppressive soldiers were stationed in strategic areas, and they numbered a full 3500 people, blocking the path one would inevitably take if one were to go up the mountain!

(*TL: Not very sure about the number of soldiers 三五千人, so here's the raw.)

A portion of these soldiers were overseers of West Farms while another portion consisted of mercenaries. However, the majority of them were city guards borrowed using the name of the city lord.

And on the inevitable path to the mountain, a group of people almost as densely packed as the soldiers had already begun heating up. A voice angrily roared: "Weylin, get the f*** out here! On what basis do you prohibit us from watching the Professor's and Gibson's match?!"

Another voice called out: "Weylin, I am a member of the Sheffield Clan and Gibson's servant. Don't tell me that even I cannot step up Mount Longinus?!"

"Miss Weylin, on the account of our many years of friendship, how about you give me some face and let me up the mountain?"

But Weylin was not actually in the small town. Currently, the elderly manager was supervising the situation in her place, and he barked out coldly: "Silence! All of you quiet down! I will say it one

more time. According to the Professor's wish, on the night of Drifting Snow, Mount Longinus will be sealed off. Only Gibson and the Professor can climb to the mountain peak! If you wish to break through.... Soldiers, hear my command! Mount Longinus is still considered as our family estate. According to imperial law, intruders will be killed without question!"

"What bullsh** wish of the Professor!"

A brawny man who seemed to possess some fighting capability spoke out indignantly: "You guys want to seal off Mount Longinus? Fine! *I didn't feel like watching anymore anyway! The Professor is only a primary rank 8th level Strength Totem Warrior and he'll definitely die in Gibson's hand. This kind of match where the Professor is just courting death is not interesting at all!" Another person also yelled out in response: "That's right, that's right! The Professor is only a primary-rank expert. He's definitely not Gibson's match! Hmph, I ain't watching anymore, ain't watching!" Although they spoke like this, not one person left.

Looking at the scene, Jiang Nan revealed a knowing smile. Weylin had already sealed off Mount Longinus, which was right within his expectations.

However....

The crowd's complaints swayed Jiang Nan's heart a bit. While ordinary people did not think that he would win, how would experts think? There were two great totem experts right next to him. Why not ask them what they thought about this match?

Thinking up till here, Jiang Nan spoke with a smile: “Young Master Victor, these people are all saying that the Professor is fated to lose, but what do you think? Alright, what I’m asking is this. Do you think that the Professor has some method to obtain victory?”

“The Professor wishes to obtain victory? Hmph, impossible!” Victor laughed disdainfully, “A wolf can most definitely slaughter opponents levels above it, but the Professor…. I don’t believe that the Professor has the ability to beat Gibson! I only hope that the Professor will live to return and die in my hands! Talik, do you agree?”

“Before victory is decided, all things are possible.” Talik answered coolly without any expression on his face: “Gibson is an intermediate rank Wind Totem Warrior, so he’ll be able to call up ‘Totem Guard’ for assistance. However, if the primary rank Professor is able to properly utilize his surroundings during the battle, he can likewise avoid an intermediate rank Totem Guard and find victory in defeat!” He halted for a bit, then continued on with a cold smile: “However, even if he does win, the Professor will have to pay an exorbitant price!”

The two of them did not favor Jiang Nan either, but Jiang Nan’s eyes lit up at their words!

This was because he extracted an extremely important piece of information from their conversation—Totem Guard!

The symbol of a primary rank Totem Warrior was being able to

manifest in the form of their faith totem, just like how Victor was able to become a wolf man.

On the other hand, the symbol of an intermediate ranked Totem Warrior…. Was summoning a natural medium to assist themselves in battle, called ‘Totem Guard’!

Okay, so Gibson could conjure ‘wind’ to assist him!

Jiang Nan touched the bridge of his nose. It was the same motion of pushing up his gold-rimmed spectacles as he did in the past when he challenged multiple figures of authority….

Yet right at this moment, a white cloud flitted speedily across the sky, causing Jiang Nan’s eyes to flower in bedazzlement.

People already began to cry out from within the crowd, “He’s come, he’s come! Lord Gibson has come!”

A middle-aged man whose long hair drifted behind him stood on the white cloud, dressed in white. He came to the foot of Mount Longinus with wisps of white cloud curling around him and gave a calm laugh, his faint voice transmitting throughout the entire mountain range, “Professor, on the night of Drifting Snow, I, Gibson, have come to accept your challenge on the peak of Mount Longinus!”

Chapter 047: The Second Route

The elderly manager of the farm spoke in a firm voice: “Lord Gibson, the Professor has not yet arrived! Please head up to the mountain peak, and only *you yourself!”

“Are you saying that I might have brought some helpers?” Gibson’s smile immediately exuded contempt, “For such a trifling Professor, I alone am enough to kill him. Why would I need any helper?! I, Gibson, conduct no questionable business in secret! If anyone here doubts me, then examine me as much as you’d like!”

“Lord, you overthink my words. I would not dare to suspect you, Lord! Please ascend the mountain!”

The manager laughed in embarrassment, but he still inspected Gibson diligently. Seeing that Gibson had only conjured some ‘wind’ to condense a cloud and that he only stepped on it to ascend to the mountain peak, the manager did not find anything suspicious throughout his entire inspection. As such, the manager’s heart eased up.

As for the crowd who was displeased with the fact that West Farms had sealed off the mountain, when they saw Gibson ascending the mountain, a person whose rims were already red began howling: “Lord Gibson, kill the Professor, kill the Professor!”

Gibson only responded with a fully smiling expression, and then his body abruptly sped up. In the blink of an eye, he disappeared in

the boundless cover of the night, “For this battle, the Wind is destined to win!”

“Hmph, how artificial!”

Victor retracted his gaze from Gibson’s figure and snorted in disdain, “Talik, Gibson has already gone up. How about us? Are we going to barge through or loop around some other way?”

“As a court official of the empire, how can I barge into the matters regarding a family’s estate? It’s still better that we find another route.” After he said this, Talik’s eyes gazed distantly towards Mount Longinus.

However….

Mount Longinus was abnormally steep. Precipitous cliffs and sheer rock faces covered the entire mountain face, and besides going through this small town, Talik truly could not find any other route of entry.

Furthermore, Talik’s faith totem was steel, and he could not ride the wind or step on it like Gibson to fly up to the mountain peak.

Talik’s eyes were a bit troubled, “If there truly is no other way…. We’ll just enter by force!”

“Calm down, gentlemen. There’s no need to barge through. Please keep in mind that you have me as a guide!”

Jiang Nan suddenly stepped out with a dazzling smile.

For a time, three pairs of eyes fixed onto Jiang Nan's figure, then Eddy let out some hearty laughter: "My, I nearly forgot! You are a member of West Farms! Young chap, do you know of any other way to ascend the mountain?"

"Of course I know. From here, walk westward until you see an overhanging cliff, then turn left. By doing so, you'll be able to reach the mountain peak, but...." Jiang Nan's face grew a bit unsightly as he pointed towards the soldiers who were maintaining a strict and heavy guard, "Looking at the situation, Miss Weylin has most definitely sent people to guard that path as well. You three won't be able to go up. At most, you can just try."

Their three faces all grew downcast.

However, Jiang Nan soon followed up with yet another option: "If you discover that you cannot go through that small path after testing it out.... Alright, you can still follow along that overhanging cliff and walk westward. Around five kilometers out, there will be several valleys. Of those valleys, the second can lead you to the mountain peak. However, please keep in mind that the topography of the area will make it very easy for you to get lost."

Eddy responded with a laugh: "With you to guide us, why would we need to be afraid of getting lost?"

"Gentlemen, I regret to inform you that I must walk my own

path now, because....” Jiang Nan pointed towards the farm’s banner in the distance, “I am a member of West Farms, so I can directly go in. It isn’t necessary for me to take the route with you, right?”

The three of them went blank.

However, by the time they came to their senses, Jiang Nan had already walked afar off with a final warning: “Remember! If you cannot go through the first route I tell you, you three can try the second route. However, you absolutely must keep in mind that it is very easy to get lost by going that way!”

The three of them exchanged glances, then Talik took the initiative to speak: “Let’s go. According to Rodi, we’ll go check out the first route first. If we can’t use it, we’ll just use the second route!”

Hearing his words, Jiang Nan chuckled.

Of the two routes he just mentioned, the first was a genuine path. However, Weylin would have definitely sealed that route off, so Talik and the others would not be able to get through.

As for the second path....

Don’t forget, Jiang Nan had come to mislead.... Oh, no, he had come to help these three people make the most accurate decision! In truth, there was no second route. If the three of them really

followed according to Jiang Nan's explanation, they could only get lost in the dense forest deep within the mountains for several hours. Perhaps they would even encounter some excessively thirsty female savages!

Jiang Nan could already imagine the following scene: the three of them would arrive at the first path and see that it was impassable. They would then hastily take the second route only to tragically discover that they were lost....

And by that time, the match would have already started long ago, and they would no longer have a chance to ruin the carefully arranged 'sealing off' that Jiang Nan set up!

Furthermore, if the three of them later came to find Jiang Nan to settle their grievances, accusing him of directing them to the wrong path, Jiang Nan could easily stare them straight back in the eye, "Aiyah, you all were too careless. Did I not say? It is very easy to get lost there...."

"....."

These were the thoughts that ran through Jiang Nan's mind, but it was a pity that the true reality of the situation was a bit different from Jiang Nan's imagination.

When Eddy and the other two came to the first route where the overhanging cliff Jiang Nan spoke of was located, as expected, Weylin had personally brought fifty mercenaries to personally guard the entrance!

However, there were two additional people who were currently trying to enter this way. One of them was Sauron, and he was currently in the middle of laughing brightly and saying, “Miss Weylin, what is the meaning of blocking me? Tomorrow, Mount Longinus will belong to our Suzanne Farms. Is it not permissible for me to inspect Mount Longinus one day in advance?”

The other person was an elder dressed in black whose entire figure was enveloped within a faint radiance.

This person was a surveyor of the ‘Totem Advancement Association’. In today’s match, there was a possibility of a change occurring within the Totem Ranking, so he requested to observe the match between the Professor and Gibson.

However, no matter what kind of identity they had, Weylin glared at them with round eyes and roared: “You damned lowlives! Beat it! Hurry up and beat it! Tonight’s match will be completely sealed off, so if you don’t beat it…. Brothers, seize these guys!”

Shua!

The fifty mercenaries behind Weylin all drew their weapons!

“Ai, Miss Weylin, your temper….” The black-garbed elderly surveyor of the Totem Advancement Association shook his head helplessly. He was a neutral power who did not need to have a fall out with Weylin, so he spoke in a defeated tone: “Miss Weylin, since you do not permit me to go up, then…. Is it okay if I stay here

and observe the changes that occur on the mountain peak from this distance?”

Weylin looked at the mountain peak. There was at least a 500 or 600 meter difference in altitude between the overhanging cliff adjacent to them and the mountain peak, so the surveyor probably would not be able to influence the course of the match, “Alright, just sit here. However, you must always remain in this woman’s line of vision! If there’s no sight of you for just one second…. This woman will go and destroy the Totem Arena stadium!”

After she said this, Weylin glowered at Sauron, “Sauron, why isn’t a lowlife like you leaving? Do you really want to force me to fight?”

“Tsk tsk. Since Miss Weylin is speaking as such, all right, I’ll just come tomorrow then….”

Sauron watched Weylin as he retreated. The neutral surveyor was here and there was a great force of men at Weylin’s side. For a time, he truly did not dare to just break through!

However, right as he left Weylin’s line of sight, Sauron suddenly swivelled around and came to a precipitous cliff. He then took a look at the mountain peak within the clouds and lightly shouted: “Carnivorous Flower Array, Flower Battle Armor, materialize!”

Suddenly!

Buds and buds of bright flowers bloomed at Sauron's side, and Sauron's body had already turned into a winding vine of flowers that crept up the steep cliffside towards the mountain peak!

Sauron's faith totem was a Carnivorous Flower, so he could not fly either. However, within the species of Carnivorous Flowers was a type of climbing vine, wasn't there?!

Hence, Sauron turned into a climbing vine and slowly inched his way closer to the mountain peak. However, his speed was much too inferior to the speed he could achieve by taking the main path, so he would probably need to take a long time before he could rush to the actual site of the match.

From a distance away, Talik's group of three caught sight of Sauron, causing them to share bitter laughs.

Talik spoke dejectedly: "Hmph, so Sauron can actually pull off such a sneaky and crafty method so quickly! We don't have the ability to climb the mountain like he does, but no matter. We'll just follow according to Rodi's instructions and take the second route!"

Turning around, Talik's eyes gazed determinedly in the direction of the 'second route'. That place was a location where one would not be able to see their own five fingers in front of them. Occasionally, one could hear the shrieks of one or two savage women from within the dense and boundless forest....

Chapter 048: This Move (1)

On the other side, Jiang Nan had already arrived with a radiant smile at the entrance to the mountain pass.

“Halt, did you not hear? Mount Longinus has already been sealed off!”

The soldiers obstructed Jiang Nan, but Jiang Nan only gave a leisurely wave towards the elderly manager in the distance, “Head Manager, it’s me, Rodi! Can you let me in?”

The elderly manager went blank and then waved his hand to tell the soldiers to let Jiang Nan in, “Rodi, why did you come here?!”

Why Rodi came to Mount Longinus at this moment was also a question of great severity. If Jiang Nan could not give a proper answer, it would herald big trouble for him in the future!

However, Jiang Nan had already long since thought up a proper response. With a face that said, ‘I’m a devoted servant who is faithful and loyal to Weylin,’ he called out indignantly: “Head Manager, I’ve come to report to you! Do *you not know? Talik, Eddy, and Victor, those three scoundrels who are on good terms with Madame Suzanne, they’ve already entered Mount Longinus!” Jiang Nan explained what he had done to mislead them truthfully, then concluded: “I suspected that they would try to disrupt the match, so I mixed in with their group and directed them towards the wrong path! Head Manager, please dispatch warriors as quickly as possible to pursue them!”

The elderly manager's eyes lit up and revealed an expression that said, 'Rodi, I never expected that you were this loyal,' then instructed: "Third Company, follow according to Rodi's directions and obstruct Talik's group of three with all your strength! If you cannot block them, then drive them into the dense forest!" After he said this, the elderly manager patted Jiang Nan's shoulder, "Rodi, today you've made a great contribution. You will definitely be heavily rewarded!"

"I thank *you for your praise, honored Head Manager. It's expected that I serve Miss Weylin to the best of my ability, but...." Jiang Nan shrugged his shoulders helplessly, "You also know that I still must return to Rheim Pasture to participate in the Knife Work Feast preparations, so please keep what I've told you confidential. By all means, do not allow Talik and the others to know of my previous words, okay?"

"Rest assured about this! I definitely will not betray a devoted worker!"

"I thank *you once more, honored Head Manager! Then.... Is it okay if I report the situation to Miss Weylin now?"

The elderly manager nodded his head and approved Jiang Nan's entry into Mount Longinus.

In response, Jiang Nan spread his hands out and watched the elderly manager with a dazzling smile as he retreated into the entrance of the mountain pass.

Reporting Eddy's group of three promptly explained why Rodi would appear here and even brought about more trouble to the group, delaying them and prolonging the time it would take for them to reach the site of the match. This was getting the best of both worlds, was it not?

Eddy's group of three honestly placed too much trust in Jiang Nan. However, what could they do? Even if they dreamed, they still would have never imagined that a trifling slave would carry out such a thing. All three of them were infected by the universal sickness of all the aristocrats on the continent: looking down on slaves.

Jiang Nan did not actually go see Weylin like he said he would. Halfway up the mountain, he came to a small, hidden shack, then began to take off his slave attire to exchange it for his Professor's disguise.

With a black mask, a black outfit, a head of strikingly pale, silver hair, and his dissecting cane at his waist, Jiang Nan walked out of the tiny wooden shack only for it to suddenly begin snowing heavily.

Drifting Snow Festival!

In Sun City, it would always begin snowing five days before the new year. This phenomenon had never faltered for several thousand years, which is why there was such an occasion as the Drifting Snow Festival.

Furthermore, snowy landscape of the Drifting Snow Festival was a bit out of the ordinary. Snowflakes would always be tinged with a scarlet layer of ice, resulting in snow white and blood red colors. It was as though a pitiful woman was overlooking Sun City in the sky and weeping tears of blood!

Gazing at the drifting snow in the sky and stepping on the gold soil beneath his feet, a bizarre feeling suddenly flooded Jiang Nan's chest!

The very first time he encountered the drifting snow, he was a dazed and ignorant slave.

When he encountered the drifting snow this year, he was already a person for whom Sun City would shake in excitement.... The ranked fourth expert!

"Gibson, on the night of Drifting Snow, on the peak of Mount Longinus, come partake in a match between gentlemen! No complaints whether one of us lives or dies!"

Jiang Nan leaped onto the peak of Mount Longinus!

The mountain wind transmitted this loud shout in all directions and to the small town, causing the crowd who was still disputing with the soldiers to abruptly sink into silence!

After a long while, someone cried out involuntarily in alarm,

“The Professor has already ascended the mountain?! Damn it! Let us go over! Hurry up and let us go!”

“Soldiers, hear my command! Get into formation and kill all trespassers without question!”

The elderly manager made a stern command, but his gaze was still fixed on the peak of Mount Longinus.

From the other side, Sauron had also heard the challenge. Sighing, he spoke, “Tsk tsk, I still need to go a bit faster!”

Talik had also heard Jiang Nan’s voice from within the dense forest, so he gritted his teeth and pointed towards the area in front of him with a resolute voice: “We must speed up and continue walking!”

“Lord Talik, Lord Eddy, please do as you wish! This wolf no longer needs to continue going.”

Victor suddenly halted his steps, his gaze lingering on Weylin from a distance, “I’ve already found Miss Weylin, so I’m going to propose now! Please wish me well!”

Just like that, Victor stayed behind on the little path in the vicinity of the overhanging cliff.

By this time, Jiang Nan had already arrived at the peak of Mount Longinus!

From the map, one could see that Mount Longinus extended two thousand meters into the air. On three sides, it was steep and precipitous, while the remaining side levelled off and led to the small town below. Its peak manifested itself as a volcanic crater that was around the size of a basketball court.

On the outer ring of the crater were multiple cliffs, while the inside ring was an entrance to the volcano in the shape of a seemingly bottomless hole.

Before Jiang Nan and the others climbed up the mountain, they saw that there was a red radiance at the mountain peak. That radiance was precisely a reflection of the magma within the hole.

With his feet on the white cloud, Gibson floated above the entrance to the volcano and looked distantly at Jiang Nan with a faint smile, “You lowly little lamb, have you prepared yourself for defeat?”

“Mister Gibson, please pay attention to your form of expression. Lowly little lamb.... Yi, I don’t particularly like this sort of outdated phrase. You need to go study up on literature some more.”

Jiang Nan did not possess the capability of flying, so he simply leaned on a large slab of rock with his arms folded across his chest as he smiled at Gibson.

“An interesting little lamb....” The cloud underneath Gibson’s

feet slowly drew closer as he spoke in a light voice: “Can we.... Start now?”

“What do you say?”

“Alright, then I ask that Lord Professor first witnesses one of my moves. Twenty-seventh Wind, Crushing Shadow!”

After he said this, the white cloud underneath Gibson’s feet abruptly accelerated and accurately stopped over Jiang Nan’s head. Suddenly, his two feet kicked out in succession as blades of gale winds suffused with volcanic ash slashed towards Jiang Nan’s head.

Jiang Nan, on the other hand, was not flustered at all. Rather, his fist unexpectedly blasted the rock next to him to smithereens!

Bang!

For a time, rock fragments flew in every direction!

Right at this moment, Jiang Nan’s figure suddenly began to whirl around with his two fists circling like a windmill all the way from his two shoulders. This motion whirled up the fragments of rock in the air to clash with Gibson’s gale wind!

“Lord Gibson, this is a move in imitation of Hank’s Iron Roar’s Twenty-Fourth Form, Massive Windmill!”

At the foot of the mountain, the crowd could see a sudden appearance of gale winds in the form of a white cloud as well as fragmented rocks that danced to form an earthen dragon from within the yellow and red radiance at the peak of Mount Longinus.

The people immediately understood and howled savagely: “The match has already started, damn it! Let us go and watch!”

Chapter 049: This Move (2)

Bang, bang, bang!

On the peak of Mount Longinus, Jiang Nan's stone fragments and Gibson's gale wind collided into each other, exploding forth with a series of loud booming sounds and bringing about a cloud of dust.

In this cloud of dust, Jiang Nan and Gibson's battle had already begun.

On his white cloud, Gibson's every movement was lithe and graceful, and every action could be described with the word 'skillful'.

Jiang Nan, on the other hand, did not actually begin using his Ghost Mystique Arts. He still continued to display the appearance of a Strength Totem and his moves were wide and all-encompassing, frequently destroying and splitting the mountain up at every turn. As such, his performance could be fully described in one word, 'tyrannical'!

For a time, the two of them were actually equally matched!

"Lord Gibson, it's been twenty moves now!"

Amidst the battle, Jiang Nan suddenly laughed, "For these twenty moves, you have been constantly employing the strength of

a primary-rank Totem Warrior! I've long heard that intermediate-rank experts can activate Totem Guard. Are you not going to prepare to let me experience your Wind Guard?"

"Taking twenty of moves face on and not appearing at a disadvantage, lowly little lamb. As expected of Sun City's fourth ranked expert! You want to see my Wind Guard.... Alright, as you wish!"

After he said this, Gibson slowly raised his head and spat out a clear breath, "Arise, my Guard!"

This clear breath spun around Gibson at an ever-increasing speed to finally form a whirling hurricane armor!

At almost the exact same moment, Gibson once again drew closer to Jiang Nan!

A whole mass of gale winds also followed along with him.

Jiang Nan drew up the stones on the ground to take on the attack, but this time....

Crack, crack!

The stones were ground into powder by the 'Wind Guard' surrounding Gibson! At this time, Gibson had already seized the opportunity to come before Jiang Nan and lightly point at Jiang Nan's solar plexus, his finger similar a knife, "Lowly little lamb,

you have already lost! You have been defeated by the intermediate-rank ‘Totem Guard’ that you do not even comprehend!”

Pu! Jiang Nan was not able to dodge, and Gibson’s finger ended up pointing towards his left shoulder. Immediately, his skin split and his flesh flayed, similar to a meat grinder!

So this was the Totem Guard….

At this time, Jiang Nan personally experienced the might of a Totem Guard: after Gibson called up his ‘Wind Guard’, the Wind Guard gave full support towards his defense while Gibson simply exerted all his effort to go on the offense. This was basically two people fighting against Jiang Nan alone!

An interesting fight!

Jiang Nan’s bloodthirstiness was now activated. Seeing that Gibson’s finger still lingered at his shoulder area, Jiang Nan abruptly bowed his head and lowered his shoulder, using a protruding bone from the area to slam against the weakest place on Gibson’s hand…. The ring finger joint!

Crack!

Gibson’s ring finger disfigured!

The ten fingers were connected to the heart, so the pain caused Gibson to moan heavily and also caused the hurricane armor

formed by the Wind Guard to falter!

Right at this moment, Jiang Nan waved around his right arm which was perfectly fine and stuck it through the slackened hurricane armor, his fist landing onto Gibson's chest, "Mister, have I truly lost? You must understand that your imagination does not necessarily constitute reality!"

Their two figures immediately separated from each other. Even after Gibson utilized his Wind Guard, both sides continued to suffer. Unexpectedly.... They were still evenly matched!

Refreshing!

Refreshing!

Jiang Nan covered his shoulder as he howled excitedly in his heart. If Gibson's strength was only to this extent, he had the confidence to seize Gibson's place on the Totem Ranking without even using his Ghost Mystique Arts!

Interesting!

Interesting!

Gibson wiped away the fresh blood in the corner of his lips. In his thudding heart, he was also muttering in delight!

One must know that Gibson had not set up this match for the purpose of defeating the Professor, but to test out the Weather totem's new move!

At first, Gibson worried about whether or not Jiang Nan's fighting capability would be sufficient enough to test the formidability of their new attack, but now....

Gibson was satisfied! He gave a slight smile, "Little lamb that is fated to die, do you find it strange?"

"Oh? Is there something I should find strange?"

Jiang Nan did not understand Gibson's meaning and instead took advantage of the momentary conversation to secretly recover his lost strength.

Gibson's smile was brimming with the contentment of a cat playing with a mouse, "While others do not know, you are definitely clear in your heart that this match was not set up by you. Don't tell me that you don't find it strange concerning exactly who started this match!"

"It's true that I find it odd, but now I already understand.... Mister Gibson, listening to your meaning, this match was initiated by you?"

"Correct, it is I who initiated it! Furthermore, I can even tell you that the reason I arranged this match was to test out the new move

that Merlin and I researched for two years in closed-door training —Weather Execution!”

Gibson’s smile grew even more and more self-satisfied, “Lowly little lamb, I am not telling you these things so that you will understand why you died. Rather, it is to allow your heart to prepare itself and give you a chance to bring out your best state to help us test the Weather Execution’s most! Powerful! Strength!”

Calm down, calm down....

Jiang Nan was already aware that the situation was not very good. However, he was even clearer that in this sort of critical situation, it was absolutely necessary to maintain a calm mind in order to continue living!

He simultaneously adjusted his body’s condition and laughed while speaking: “What an interesting trap! Alright, call out Merlin then! She should already be here, correct?”

“Professor, you have already seen me!”

Merlin’s voice suddenly rang out from the mountain peak!

The moment her voice rang out, the white cloud underneath Gibson’s feet floated outwards and recombined to form a middle-aged woman’s appearance next to Gibson!

If primary-rank Totem Warriors could transform into a

manifestation of their own totem, then Merlin could naturally transform into a white cloud as well!

Merlin simply transformed into a white cloud and strutted up here after passing through all those security checkpoints!

“Professor, have you made your preparations? In order to make it so that you die with a bit more dignity, please use your strongest move to receive our Weather Execution!”

Gibson swept his gaze over Jiang Nan in disdain as though he were looking at a pitiful white mouse. That he dared to explain his plot showed that he was absolutely sure that Jiang Nan would not be able to live to depart!

In reality, no matter who was here, none of them would believe that Jiang Nan would be able to leave Mount Longinus with his life!

After all, Jiang Nan’s opponents were two intermediate-ranked experts!

However....

Jiang Nan believed that he could leave with his life! The weather duo wished to use him as a means of testing their new move, but he just so happened to want to use the weather duo to test out his.... Ghost Mystique Arts!

In the next moment, Jiang Nan laughed and then spoke some ambiguous words, “Madam Merlin, Mister Gibson, in truth, I understand your pain....”

They both went blank!

Jiang Nan continued saying: “You hold an absolutely destructive move in store, but you cannot easily use it. This is a kind of pain, truly. It really is a sort of pain that I can empathize with because I am the exact same way! I also have several.... Killing moves that I have never used before!”

After he said this, Jiang Nan’s figure disappeared before the weather duo’s eyes, “Please taste my first move, first of the Ghost Arts, Dark Steps!”

Condensing necromantic energy into the space between his eyebrows and directing it to spread out towards his two shoulders, then using the shoulders to instantaneously shift the body was precisely the first of the Ghost Arts that Alisa had amended—Dark Steps!

When this change occurred, the weather duo was worthy to be second and third place on the Totem Ranking. They reacted in the first instant and Merlin shouted in a fierce voice, “Gibson, Wind Cloud harmonization, activate Weather Execution!”

The moment her words fall, Merlin transforms into a white cloud while Gibson turns into a ferocious gale. In the blink of an eye, the cloud and gale merge together!

However, Jiang Nan had already appeared between the gale and the cloud. Contracting his four limbs, he spoke in a light voice, “Madame Merlin, Mister Gibson, did you ask my opinion before harmonizing?”

Jiang Nan extended his four limbs and his body burst forth with numerous long and solid skeletal spikes that sparkled with a dark purple poison. It was precisely the third of the Ghost Arts, Skeletal Poison Blade!

“You, you are a Ghost Totem Master?!” Merlin blurted out in alarm, but now was not the time for shock. She howled crazily: “Gibson, disperse! Do not touch those skeletal spikes under any circumstances!”

For a time, both wind and cloud dispersed. They actually did not dare to combine!

On the other side, Jiang Nan no longer held anything back. Necromantic energy circulated around his body like a powerful current, and turning his body, he abandoned Merlin to instantaneously appear before Gibson. In the next moment, he punched out a heavy fist towards Gibson’s chest!

Gibson subconsciously kicked towards Jiang Nan’s left ribs in an attempt to bring Jiang Nan down with him….

But!

Gibson’s leg bones felt as though they had collided into a steel wall. Shifting his eyes to stare, Jiang Nan’s body was already densely covered in a solid layer of ghastly white bone!

The second of the Ghost Arts, Death Armor!

And at this moment, Jiang Nan’s fist had already blasted into Gibson’s chest! “Mister Gibson, this fight is already over for you!”

Chapter 050: The Mount Longinus That Devours People

Gibson groaned heavily, and his originally suspended body swiftly plummeted down. Furthermore, the outer ring of the volcanic crater was quite narrow, so he was not able to stabilize his body. As a result, he toppled into the volcano's entrance!

On the other side, Merlin had also ran into the same trouble: Jiang Nan swept around and also punched Merlin into the volcano's entrance.

Following his actions, Jiang Nan stared at the hole as he panted lightly.

The moves he just used before were truly refreshing to use. However, powerful moves required greater consumption of energy.

Jiang Nan could only feel that the necromantic energy in his body had been drained out of him. He even felt as though he could not breathe enough air into his system.

However, now was not the time to let loose. He unwaveringly fixed his gaze onto the hole....

The Weather duo could both fly, and if they had not yet died, they could fly out of the hole anytime!

Hu!

Hu!

Jiang Nan's heavy breaths were transmitted far away by the winds, but his gaze did not dare to leave the volcanic entrance. Furthermore, he had already seen that after falling around thirty or forty meters down, the Merlin whose injuries were comparatively lighter had already grabbed onto Gibson. They were now going to harmonize and come back to kill Jiang Nan.

But right at this moment!

Rumble!

It was as if there was an earthquake, and the peak of Mount Longinus began to shake. Immediately after, the originally red-colored volcanic entrance suddenly turned a ghastly white color!

The same ghastly white color as a skull!

All of a sudden!

This ghastly white radiance split apart to reveal a passageway in which something that seemed to be an ancient, savage variant beast licked lightly on the weather duo's bodies....

Everything became silent once more! The weather duo

disappeared without a trace, as though they had been devoured by Mount Longinus!

Jiang Nan was dumbstruck!

He blankly stared at the volcanic entrance. One minute passed, two minutes passed, and it was not until five minutes later that Mount Longinus returned to its former appearance, no longer showing any hint that it would devour people!

This....

What exactly was this?!

Jiang Nan wanted to leave this outrageous place as soon as possible, but his severe consumption did not allow him to take one step away. With a 'dong', Jiang Nan weakly fell on his bottom next to the volcanic entrance.

When the tremor happened, the crowd in the small town at the feet of the mountain was slightly astonished. However, it was just slight surprise, and they simply took it to be an ordinary, small-scale earthquake, or just a result of the Professor's match on Mount Longinus. Some people even yelled out excitedly, "Awesome, as expected, he's awesome! Did everybody feel that? Mount Longinus has been struck to the point of shaking!"

On the other side, the Sauron who was almost about to reach the peak of the mountain went blank. However, what he felt was even

stronger, “What strong strength.... Could it be that something unexpected happened on the mountain peak?”

After thinking up till here, Sauron increased his speed to his absolute limit!

And deep in the dense forest....

Talik and Eddy who had been sold out by Jiang Nan were currently occupied with evading the soldier’s pursuit.

“What is this, where did all these soldiers come from?”

Eddy crouched on a large tree as he panted heavily. He was only an ordinary chef, and continuously fleeing for his life had already tired him out to the point of exhaustion. He spat out angrily: “Talik, how come you don’t take action! Based on your strength, isn’t it easy to mow down these pursuing soldiers?!”

“Eddy, think of my identity!” Talik’s expression brimmed with helplessness, “I can in fact drive these pursuing troops away, but once I take personal action, the entire continent will know tomorrow that I, Talik, as a high-ranking officer of the empire consciously violated the law and secretly infiltrated someone’s private property! Once this accusation becomes real, what face will I have to see His Majesty the Emperor! What face will I have to see my colleagues of the highest level of legislation?!”

“T-then you still have to think of something! We can’t just keep

hiding here in this dense forest!”

Right after he said this, a tremor occurred!

“This....”

Talik was deeply aware of the legend of Mount Longinus, so his face instantly drained of all color, “Eddy, this is not an ordinary earthquake. I’m afraid.... That Mount Longinus has truly devoured someone!”

“It’s better that it has!” Eddy answered huffily: “It’s the best if the Professor and Gibson are both all completely swallowed up! My god, *I won’t participate in this sort of excitement in the future!”

“Gibson can die, but the Professor cannot die!”

Talik suddenly stood up and swiftly strode towards the peak of Mount Longinus!

“Hey, what are you doing? There are still soldiers in front!” Eddy hastily shouted, “Don’t forget what you just said! Going out right now, do you want to throw away all face?”

“Compared to locating the Professor, my face counts for sh**! Even if I break through, *I must go and save the Professor!”

Talik was already so anxious that his eyes had become bloodshot.

Seeing that the pursuing soldiers had found him, his two fists swivelled around and struck out without a second word, “Iron Roar’s twenty-sixth of a hundred forms, Massive Windmill!”

Five seconds!

In just five seconds, Talik mowed down all the pursuing troops and then tilted his head up to look at Mount Longinus.

At this moment, Talik was at the west face of Mount Longinus, and wall of precipitous cliffs appeared before him. Calculating the time, if he was to take a detour and go through the small town and barge through, he would need at least twenty something minutes!

So Talik decided not to take a detour!

Bang!

Talik’s fist smashed into the cliff face, then he did something akin to a chin-up and moved his entire body up a certain length by relying on the right fist that was deeply embedded into the cliff wall.

Immediately after, he raised his left fist up high and smashed it into a space above his right hand, deeply embedding it into the rockwall. After pulling his right fist out, his body moved up once more.

His idle right hand once more raised up high and struck

forward....

Bang, bang, bang!

Just by using his bare fists, Talik simply smashed open a pathway up as though he was climbing a ladder!

Seeing Talik climb up like a gecko, Eddy gaped, dumbstruck, “You, you can actually do this? Good heavens, why did you not do this earlier?!”

“Because he did not dare! If he had used this method earlier, we would have discovered him long ago!”

Somebody suddenly answered!

It turned out that the soldiers Talik had knocked to the ground had climbed back up again. With faces beaten black and blue and swollen like peach blossoms, their current faces glared at Eddy with this sort of expression, ‘Sh**, there was still a damn fatty here! Brothers, beat this guy to death to take revenge’.

“Hey, hey, what are you guys going to do? I’m only a chef!”

Surrounded by several dark figures, Eddy shrieked out miserably in despair, “Talik, you’re not enough of a f***ing friend!!!”

Sauron was doing his utmost to speed up while Talik was using

his bare fists to open a pathway. However, the first to reach the peak of Mount Longinus was not actually them.

The first to rush to the site of the match was Victor!

Not long before, Victor and Talik had split up. After tidying up his clothes, he raised a ring up high before Weylin and gracefully said, “My dear Miss Weylin, we meet once again. This time, would you please accept my marriage proposal?”

Weylin was currently guarding in the vicinity of the cliff as she fixated onto the black-clothed elder—the surveyor of the Totem Advancement Association! The moment she caught sight of Victor’s appearance, a fiery rage instantly burst forth, “You damned lowlife, are you still not done?!”

“A wolf will not give up the prey in front of him! Weylin, you are destined to become my woman! Wear this ring to symbolize your status as the Young Miss of Reyne Mountain, okay?”

Victor knelt on one knee, presenting the ring to Weylin.

“Victor! Are you insisting on forcing this woman to speak truthfully?!”

Weylin’s fury raged even more intensely as she pointed towards Victor’s nose and roared: “This woman will clearly and plainly tell you now! This woman’s heart.... Has long since been f***ing occupied by another!”

Victor went into a daze, and then forced out some laughter: “Miss Weylin, it isn’t necessary for you to deceive me with this sort of lie if you do not want to accept my love, is it?”

“Your words are the f***ing lie here! Victor, do you still remember the time when I was about to get assassinated?! I already wanted to tell you then, but those hateful assassins didn’t give me a damn chance.... Now, look at the shape of my mouth. This woman will repeat it one more time: in this woman’s heart! There! Is! Already! Somebody! Else!”

Chapter 051: The Wondrous Use Of Staying Calm

"You already have someone you love? You already have some you love? Awooo!!!"

Victor suddenly howled, his figure transforming, "Who is it, tell me! Exactly who is it!"

Weylin rolled her eyes, "Why would this woman tell you?"

"Tell me, hurry up and tell me! A wolf will definitely never let off any love rival. I must kill him!"

Victor suddenly stared distantly towards the peak of Mount Longinus, seemingly crazed, "Is it the Professor?! Damn it, it must be him!"

After he said this, Victor leapt up and dashed up Mount Longinus, "A wolf can never accept this sort of disgrace! The Professor must die!"

In Victor's perspective, the Professor's dubious alliance with West Farms and saving of Weylin's life was enough to prove that the relationship between him and Weylin was not ordinary. Therefore, it would be only logical for the person Weylin loved to be the Professor.

Staring at Victor's receding figure, Weylin urgently stamped her feet, "Son of a b****, would this woman like that cold-blood lowlife?! Victor, get your f***ing ass back here! The person this woman loves isn't the Professor!"

But Victor had already ran a significant distance away!

"Damn it! If you don't return, you're just looking for death...."

Weylin horrible temper erupted. Snatching out the whip from her waist, she barked out: "Brothers, go chase and kill Victor! F*** it all, if Victor is going to kill this woman's man, this, this woman will take my man's place to get rid of Victor, this love rival!"

After spitting out these words, Weylin bustled up the mountain in pursuit.

The fifty mercenaries followed close behind her.

And that black-clothed surveyor....

Simply gave a helpless laugh and followed along. This surveyor stood on neutral ground. If someone were to obstruct him, then he would not just barge through. However, no one was currently blocking the way, so he naturally went to go inspect the conclusion to the match.

Victor had already transformed into a wolf man and his speed originally was not slow either, so having followed the main road,

he soon arrived at the peak of Mount Longinus.

At this moment, Jiang Nan was still weakly collapsed in the vicinity of the volcano's entrance and he no longer had the ability to fight.

"Professor! For this wolf's dignity, you must die!"

Victor spied Jiang Nan from a distance and baring his teeth, he pounced over. From the looks of it, he unexpectedly wanted to gobble Jiang Nan up!

Jiang Nan struggled to flip over and evaded Victor's first attack with difficulty. However, he was sincerely baffled in his heart. It was really f***ing weird; he and Victor did not actually have some immense grudge between them, so why did he look like he was butchering a love rival?!

Time did not allow Jiang Nan to think further. Seeing that Jiang Nan had dodged his bite, Victor smoothly turned his head and directed a roar in Jiang Nan's direction, "Awoooo!!!"

The sound waves vibrated through the air and spiraled around in layers. In the blink of an eye, they formed a cyclone similar to a meat grinder and arrived at the top of Jiang Nan's head!

Twenty-seventh form of the Wolf Howl, Cyclone Blade! Victor had used this move to rescue Weylin in the past before. However, at that time, he was heavily injured, so the force he was able to

display then was far inferior to what he could demonstrate now!

“Mister Victor, do we have enmity between us?!”

Jiang Nan shouted severely. At this time, his necromantic energy had already been thoroughly depleted, so he had no way to escape Victor’s second blow.

“Victor, you’re f***ing looking for death!”

At this critical juncture, a whip-like shadow lashed in front of Jiang Nan, dispersing the Cyclone Blade made of sound waves. Weylin pointed at Victor’s nose and spat out in fury, “You damned lowlife, if you want to fight, then come at me!”

“Weylin, are you dead set on protecting the Professor?!”

Victor glanced at Weylin, then looked at the Professor. In his mind, this was a standard demonstration of an adulterous couple!

So enraged that he nearly shattered his steel-like teeth, he roared: “Fine, you ungrateful woman! Both of you come at me then! A wolf will not fear any kind of enemy!”

“It isn’t possible for this woman to fear you!” Weylin scowled deeply. Currently, those mercenaries were far from being a match to Weylin in speed, so any traces of them were no longer visible. As such, she could only fight alone, and she cursed in fury: “Come, Victor! This woman will accompany you to the end!”

This great fight would break out any moment!

In actuality, Victor understood very clearly in his heart that his strength was nearly on par with Weylin's. If they truly were to fight, it would probably result in heavy injures for both of them.

However....

How could a wolf endure such humiliation from a woman?! According to a wolf's dignity, even if he died, he would have to fight!

Carrying the determination that he would definitely die, Victor was just about to throw his life away in this struggle when a playful voice abruptly rang out from the mountain peak, "Tsk tsk, so the fun hasn't ended. Ladies and gentlemen, I haven't come late, have I?"

A lanky figure covered in bright flowers jumped onto the mountain peak, his every move graced with dancing petals. Even his appearance was covered up by the petals, so nobody could see it clearly.

At first, Jiang Nan could not recognize this person, but Weylin had already cried out in astonishment: "Flower Battle Armor?! Sauron, you, you f***ing dare to sneak up Mount Longinus?!"

At long last, Sauron arrived!

He did not actually see the match between the weather duo and Jiang Nan, but after he caught sight of Weylin and Victor facing each other with their weapons drawn and the fatigued Professor on the ground, laughter immediately escaped his mouth!

Too good, it was truly too good! The Professor had already lost all fighting capability, Weylin was alone, and Victor could be roped into an alliance with him. This.... Was simply heaven sent! It was a golden opportunity to thoroughly destroy West Farms!

Thinking up till here, Sauron gave a light shout. Fresh flowers bloomed across the expanse of the peak of Mount Longinus, sealing off any possible escape routes.

He then came to Victor's side, the flowers receding a bit from his head to reveal a beaming face that gestured to Victor in greeting: "Victor, my friend, it seems that you need some assistance, is that right?"

"Sauron, are you willing to provide assistance?" Victor's gaze revealed an expression of pleasant surprise.

"Of course! I am never stingy with helping my friends." Sauron pointed at Jiang Nan, "I'll hold off Weylin while you kill the Professor, how about it?!"

On the other side, Weylin stared anxiously at Jiang Nan, "Professor, you lowlife! Can you still stand?" The situation was quite urgent, so she could not be bothered to ask about Gibson's

whereabouts, and instead spoke in a desperate voice: “Quickly get on your feet and team up with me! If not, then don’t even think about leaving Mount Longinus with our lives!”

Stand up?!

Jiang Nan genuinely wished to stand up, but the consumption that the Ghost Arts wrought from him was really too much. All he could feel was that his head was dizzy, his eyes blurry, and his four limbs limp. He could not even sit up properly.

“Professor, hurry up and get on your feet!”

Weylin frantically roared out once more!

“Calm down, Miss Weylin!”

Jiang Nan mustered up his last bit of breath to seem as though he was leisurely leaning on a slab of rock. At this moment, he was dressed in skintight black clothes and was wearing a silver mask. As such, no one was able to see that his face had drained of all color long ago.

Weylin looked on dazedly at this casual movement and said in agitation: “Damn it, what time is it now?! You still dare to say calm down!”

“Why wouldn’t I dare?” Jiang Nan did not display the slightest bit of panic from being thrown into this state of emergency, and

instead spoke frankly: “A person once taught me that for the sake of maintaining a model appearance, even if I die, I must die in a calm and collected manner. I cannot let the students see a joke. Okay, right now, I’ve already lost all fighting capability, and you alone are not a match for Sauron and Victor either. We already have no chance of living…. Since this is so, why not sit down and appreciate the moonlight, saying our prayers while we’re at it. Perhaps…. A miracle may occur?”

After he said this, Jiang Nan pointed to his side, “Miss Weylin, sit!”

“Y-you!”

Weylin was so livid that she went speechless. Coming before Jiang Nan, she only wanted to launch into a barrage of curses, what bulls*** are you saying now! You’re simply a moron!

Yet right at this moment, Jiang Nan used his lowest tone of voice possible and said surreptitiously: “Miss Weylin, if you want to live, then sit down! The calmer you appear, the more the enemy will suspect that we have a hidden card up our sleeves, so the more he will not dare to easily take action. Only by doing this can we stall for time and look for a chance to escape, understand?” He then pointed to his side once more, “Sit down and calm down with me, calm down!” Weylin sat down next to him half in belief, half in doubt.

As expected, a second later, the Sauron and Victor who were just about to take action…. Suddenly hesitated!

Since they were idly gazing at the moonlight on the verge of death, could it be that the Professor had a final trick up his sleeve?!

Sauron and Victor exchanged glances with each other and for a time, did not rush to take the first move.

Victor was worrying whether or not the Professor had a final trump card, while Sauron simply wanted to make someone else test the waters. If Victor did not take action, then Sauron would not easily take a risk either.

“Professor, this woman truly admires you lowlife of a person. They actually don’t dare to take action now!”

Seeing the slight movements of those two people Weylin’s eyes revealed a glint of pleasant surprise as she spoke in a hushed manner: “Just like this, can you stall them for two minutes? As long as you can delay them for two minutes, this woman’s mercenaries will probably be able to rush over. At that time, they definitely would not openly dare to boldly kill us off!”

“Two minutes? Alright, Miss Weylin. From this moment on, just sit without moving. No matter what I say, you must keep absolute calm. By all means, do not ever display an expression of astonishment....”

Chapter 052: Educating, Educating

After he said this, Jiang Nan suddenly transformed to reveal the actions of an elegant bard, “The moon can be shady, clear, round, or fragmentary, and it is an unpredictable existence. Since ancient times, the moonlight has been inextricably linked with werewolves. Victor, do you agree?”

Although Jiang Nan’s words were directed towards Victor, his eyes gazed at the moonlight from the three moons instead. At the same time, he sneakily hid his two hands behind his back, as if he was preparing to unleash an ultimate and final move!

This appearance was similar to how an absolute expert with complete confidence of gaining victory would not mind giving one or two pointers to a weak opponent. It was basically saying that the difference between them was like that of heaven and earth.

Victor went blank!

Jiang Nan fiercely bit his tongue to arouse his spirit, nimbly getting to his feet and continuing to say: “On a night of a full moon, a werewolf’s battle prowess increases immensely after transformation. On the other hand, when the moon is not full, the four limbs of a werewolf will lack strength, thus making the werewolf unsuitable to endure a long battle. Victor, in regards to the weakness of your wolf clan, is this so?!”

“Hmph, so what if it is? When the moon is not full, the battle capabilities of us werewolves will decline sharply, but this isn’t any

secret!”

Victor laughed coldly in arrogance, but his eyes furtively glanced towards the two hands that were clasped behind Jiang Nan’s back!

“Correct, this isn’t some secret. However…. Your wolf clan still has a weakness that is yet unknown by all!” Jiang Nan’s gaze lingered on Victor’s nose as he spoke in a purposeful manner: “The tip of the nose is the most fatal weakness of a wolf! It is only necessary to use one move to kill you if the tip of your nose is hit!”

Victor’s expression changed drastically!

Jiang Nan was correct. The tip of the nose was Victor’s fatal point; it was the innate weakness of all members of the wolf clan!

Jiang Nan had dissected no less than a hundred wolves, so he was naturally aware of this deep secret on the Yuanzhi Continent.

Glancing at Victor’s unsightly expression, Jiang Nan muttered in his heart, Alright, this brat has been stunned for at least twenty or thirty seconds. Next…. Is to dupe Sauron!

Oh, no, no. For the sake of being a model character, how can I dupe someone? Rather…. I’m simply educating Sauron. En, educating, educating.

“Carnivorous Flower Totem, Sauron!”

When Jiang Nan called out Sauron's faith totem, his expression suddenly went icy, "With the Carnivorous Flower as your faith totem, you have eaten an innumerable amount of people. Do you enjoy eating people?!"

"Human flesh is indeed something I am most fond of, tsk, tsk. Lord Professor, do you have any advice?"

Sauron was far more collected than Victor, and in reality, he was already suspecting whether Jiang Nan was simply displaying false bravado. However, he could not determine correctly for a time, so for caution's sake, he did not act rashly.

"Towards a villain like you who eats his own fellow humans, I do indeed have something to say!"

In the Elegant Forest Restaurant, Jiang Nan had personally seen Sauron consume a living person. As such, his every word resonated with Sauron as he laughed coldly: "When you eat a person, have you ever thought that it is a fellow human that you have eaten?! Considering how nature grows and multiplies and how if there is a cause, there must definitely be an effect, have you ever thought about the retribution you would ultimately suffer after eating so many people?!" Jiang Nan's tone of voice suddenly grew very mysterious and enigmatic, "Perhaps you might say that you do not believe in such judgment. However, let me ask you this.... Whenever you eat a person, does your arm not experience an acute, twisting pain after the fact, and do your eyes not swell up? Do you not lose the appetite to eat and drink for three days?!"

Sauron's face distorted slightly.

Jiang Nan had spoken correctly yet again!

It would be impossible for Jiang Nan to speak wrongly anyway! This was because he was too familiar with the composition of the human body and with medical knowledge. The human body hosted a countless amount of bacteria and germs, and there were several components that would be extremely hard to digest. Considering that Sauron swallowed people alive, it would be abnormally strange if it did not appear the way Jiang Nan described!

However, Sauron did not understand these things, so after Jiang Nan exposed his secret, he assumed that Jiang Nan was already aware of all his weaknesses. For a time, he unexpectedly gave birth to the notion of fleeing!

"Sauron, these symptoms are your retribution!" Jiang Nan barked out once more in a fierce voice, "Having eaten an innumerable amount of people, there will soon come a day that your arms fracture from their twisting pain, your eyes lose their sight, and you will forever lose the privilege to food and drink!" These words were pure nonsense, but with the cushioning of his previous words, these nonsensical words directly thrust Sauron's mind into chaos, "Furthermore, these symptoms have already taken root within your body! To kill you through this root, only one move is necessary!"

After he said this, Jiang Nan stood up straight with his hands behind his back, massaging each other. His appearance was icy and

disdainful, as though he was saying, ‘Young fellows, my guidance has ended already. To kill you, all I need is one move. Who will come receive his death first?!’

Jiang Nan no longer spoke.

Victor and Sauron looked at each other, and did not rush to be the first to take action.

One second....

Two seconds....

Twenty seconds passed!

At this moment, the clamoring noises and shouts of Weylin’s mercenaries could already be heard from down the mountain.

Hearing the mercenaries’ noises, Sauron started in realization, “As expected, the Professor is treacherous! Victor, he’s deceiving us! Move!”

“Deceiving us?! Alright, if you have the guts then try this one on for size!”

Jiang Nan’s cold eyes flashed like lightning as they gazed at the two people, seeming as though he really had not been blathering just before. Rather, it seemed as though he was simply stating the

absolute truth of this world!

What an imposing aura! Could it be that the Professor truly had a final trump card?

The two of them hesitated once more....

Several seconds later, the mercenaries drew even closer. By nature, Sauron was prudent and cautious, so he was already intending to withdraw. However, Victor could no longer rein in the anger in his heart. He abruptly beat his chest and spat out in indignation, “Victor, you coward! A wolf ought to be fearless! Could it be that just because the Professor said a few words, you’ve already been scared out of your wits?!”

Tearing out a handful of wolf fur, Victor gave a crazed roar and violently pounced forward!

Jiang Nan, however, did not dodge because he already had no more strength to evade....

“Victor!”

Right at this moment, a voice brimming with an infinite amount of destructive power charged onto the mountain peak. The sound wave seemed almost tangible, and it unexpectedly outlined the form of an iron fist.

Boom!

This Sonic Iron Fist collided into the Victor who was completely defenseless, blasting him into the air!

Victor could only feel that the sky and the ground were spinning, and when his head finally cleared up, his body was already in the middle of the air. Moreover, the mountain peak was only a narrow, oval area. For a time, he was unable to take back control of his body, and unexpectedly plummeted through the air along the precipitous cliff!

Almost at the exact same time, in the direction of the cliff Victor was falling along, a robust and overpowering figure dashed up!

“So you are the Professor?”

The person who had just arrived was precisely Talik. After studying Jiang Nan with an indifferent eye, his mouth suddenly revealed a hint of a smile, “It was all due to your nonsense that I did not arrive late!”

In actuality, when Talik was ten odd meters away from the mountain peak, he could already hear Jiang Nan’s absurd babbling. Furthermore, as an executioner proficient in anatomy, he could tell that the Professor was almost at the end of his rope. The goal of his senseless drivel was clearly to stall for time!

Damn it, the Professor almost could not hold out anymore!

Talik frantically sped up! After arriving, he had already continuously used his bare fists to open up a path, so his ten fingers were already soaked with blood. Some areas were even ripped to the point that the eye-catching whiteness of his skeletal joints were visible!

“Lord Talik?”

Seeing Talik, everybody went blank. Sauron even licked his lips as he asked skeptically: “Lord, you ought to be at Rheim Pasture helping Eddy prepare for the Knife Work Feast. Why have you come to Mount Longinus?”

“You have no place in asking about my matters! Rather, you, Sauron!” Talik aggressively glared at Sauron with an indifferent face, “You selfishly trespassed onto the West Farms’ estate, attempting to wreck the fairness of the match between the Professor and Gibson, and are even suspected of attacking the competitor. According to the law of the empire, you ought to be condemned with the punishment of being chopped in half at the waist!”

A sentence?

Sauron went blank. Although he did not necessarily fear Talik, it truly was not worth it to offend a high-ranking officer of the empire at this time. Giving a faint smile, he explained: “Chopped in half at the waist? Oh, no, no! Lord, please listen to my explanation: Mount Longinus will belong to Madame Suzanne tomorrow, so the only reason I came here was to guarantee a smooth transference of the property, instead of ‘selfishly

trespassing'. As for me attacking the competitor? Good heavens! This is simply a joke! Lord Talik, *you also saw yourself when you came up that I was only standing here. I never actually attacked the Professor! On the contrary, it is the Professor who is currently threatening me!"

His eyes exuding a sinister air, he continued, "Lord Talik, *you are currently helping Madame Suzanne prepare the Knife Work Feast, while I am the Madame's most trusted commander. Why must we criticize each other? We can become friends, can we not? Why not.... Forget about the law today, and just talk amiably?"

"Talk amiably? That's also fine!" Talik was currently worrying about his image, so when he heard Sauron's words, he laughed coldly, "Today, on the peak of Mount Longinus, I am not an officer of the Empire, and you are not a commander under the Sommer Clan. We will only talk amiably!"

Sauron laughed. It seemed that Talik could still be roped in, "Since we are only talking amiably, Lord Talik, my friend!"

He suddenly pointed at Jiang Nan, "This is the Professor, the perpetrator behind your nephew, Hank's, death! I am willing to help you avenge Lord Hank's death!"

"Avenge Hank?"

"Correct, avenge Hank!"

“En, avenge Hank....”

Talik came before Jiang Nan, and just as Sauron was about to express his glee and Weylin was about to cry out in despair, he suddenly turned his head around and asked instead: “Why must I avenge Hank? Sauron, it seems that you’ve misunderstood my intentions. In terms of talking amiably, I am not talking amiably with you, but rather with the Professor!” After he said this, he gave a slight bow, the standard etiquette of an aristocrat, “Lord Professor, are you in need of a friend capable of intimidating Sauron right now? What a coincidence! I just so happen to be able to do so. Are you interested in making a friend?”

Sauron gaped, dumbstruck!

Chapter 053: Let's Fight Again Tomorrow

Talik actually wanted to help his enemy?

Having just heard news of Hank's death for the first time, Jiang Nan completely blanked out. As he leaned against the stone slab, he glanced at Talik's blood-red pupils, then shifted his gaze to Talik's two torn, bleeding hands.

This red-eyed guy really wasn't feigning it. He was truly doing his best to help himself!

As such, Jiang Nan extended his hand out, "Alright, I truly do need a friend, Mister Talik!"

"Then we are friends, my young brother!"

The two men clasped hands!

"Talik, do you want to keep Hank from dying contentedly?"

After Sauron's astonishment, he yelled 'Hank's' name out loudly, as if he was recalling a familiar, old friend, "Hank, if your soul is in heaven, take a look at what your blood-related uncle is doing! He actually calls the perpetrator behind your death brother, and is actually protecting him!" Fixing his eyes in righteous solemnity at Talik, Sauron continued, "Lord Talik! Please consider your actions seriously! Your actions are not only humiliating the dead Hank, but also insulting my own dignity and your reputation!"

“Sauron! You are Sun City’s number one expert, not a screeching and screaming shrew!” Talik barked out coldly: “The Totem Arena is fair and just, with no complaints whether one lives or dies! Hank’s death was due to the inferiority of his skills relative to his opponent, so what fault does the Professor have! Less of your nonsense now. If you want to fight, then I’ll accompany you! If you want to leave, for the sake of Madame Suzanne’s face, I’ll leave you a way out! Make your choice!”

Sauron truly could not understand the reason behind Talik’s actions. However, his mind was already operating at lightning speed.

Today, he definitely could not kill the Professor. Furthermore, with the Professor and Talik teamed up together, to use any sneaky methods to achieve a quick assassination was already impossible as well.

Then was there some way for him to openly and honorably kill the Professor?

“Lord Sauron, if I might be so bold to guess, the current situation is that *you wish to fight a carefree battle with the Professor. However, Lord Talik is not permitting this, correct?”

In the middle of Sauron’s train of thoughts, the surveyor of the Totem Advancement Association had already walked over. This old fellow was experienced and sharp, so with just one look at Sauron’s and Talik’s appearance, he had already hit the nail on the

head.

Since the surveyor was a neutral party, it was necessary for Sauron to give him some face, “Not bad. Do *you have any good proposals?”

“I dare not call them proposals. I am a surveyor, so I cannot interfere in the grievances between you all. However, I can only raise a personal idea of mine to share with you all for discussion.” The surveyor gave a slight chuckle: “Since you wish to fight the Professor, why must it be today? Five days later, it will be the first day of the first month, the first day of year 2144. On that day, Yulianne will also be arriving in Sun City, so why not arrange a match to decide the winner between you two five days later at the Totem Arena?” He turned around to face Talik, “I believe that you, Lord Talik, would not refuse this suggestion? After all, a match between the Professor and Sauron would also be for the purpose of welcoming Yulianne. As a high-ranking officer of the Empire, approving of this suggestion is equivalent to supporting His Majesty the Emperor in his strategy of treating Yulianne preferentially, is it not?”

This old fox!

Everybody was cursing in their hearts!

The surveyor’s intent was clearly obvious: he did not actually care about the lives of the people in front of him. He only hoped to see a certain situation: with this match between the Professor and Sauron, spectators in Sun City would come flocking over, while he would be on the side, subtly.... Selling tickets to make money!

In simpler terms, this surveyor was seizing profit for the arena!

However....

Sauron was the first to be swayed. He wanted to openly and honestly kill the Professor. Was not the opportunity before him the best chance?

If his mind was no longer enough to decide victory, then he would use his fighting capability as the strongest in Sun City to get rid of the Professor! “Lord Surveyor, tsk, tsk. A very good suggestion, I accept!”

He glanced at Jiang Nan with a cold eye. At this moment, Jiang Nan had already seen that his life and safety was guaranteed, so he relaxed his spirit and weakly sat beside Weylin. Seeing this appearance, Sauron immediately knew that he had just been played by the Professor, so his playful voice contained a trace of resentment, “Professor, how about you? Do you dare to accept this challenge?”

Fight, or not to fight?!

Truthfully speaking, Jiang Nan did not want to accept the challenge because on the first day of the first month, he would probably have to participate in the Knife Work Feast. Furthermore, there were spectators at the Totem Arena, and under the circumstances of being unable to use his Ghost Mystique Arts, he was not necessarily Sauron’s opponent! However, if he was to

reject the suggestion....

The Professor would lose all face, and tonight's fight would have lost all meaning!

"Fight? Why wouldn't I fight?" Jiang Nan suddenly laughed, then pointed towards the Golden soil, "However, I have to conditions: the first is that the entire match must be sealed off. No spectators are permitted! The second is that we will bet Mount Longinus. The victor will possess all of Mount Longinus!"

Sauron, you would not accept such harsh conditions, would you? Hehe, as long as you do not agree, then this brother can openly and honestly refuse your challenge!

As Jiang Nan thought in delight, a chilling light flashed across Sauron's eyes!

One minute!

For an entire minute, Sauron's expression wavered as he continued to keep silent.

Suddenly, he laughed heartily, "Alright, I agree! In place of Madame Suzanne, I bet Mount Longinus!"

H-he actually accepted such harsh conditions?!

Jiang Nan was utterly stupefied.

At this moment, the surveyor was at a loss to whether he should laugh or cry. He originally intended to publicize the match, and then earn some money by selling tickets. However, he had not imagined that the Professor would actually propose a sealed-off match.

However, things had already progressed to this point, and he was no longer able to interfere in the decisions between the two, “Since both sides agree, then as the person who suggested the match, I declare that this contract match…. Is set!”

After saying this, he drew out a yellow-skinned book and asked Jiang Nan: “Lord Professor, everything has concluded here, yes? As a surveyor of the Totem Advancement Association, I still must ask you a question…. Where is Gibson? Where is today’s other main character, your opponent, Gibson of the Wind?”

That’s right, where was Gibson?!

Weylin and Talik glanced about in every direction, while Sauron was thoroughly stunned. He was aware of the Weather Duo’s plans, so even though Gibson was not here, Merlin of the Cloud should be here.

“Gibson….” Jiang Nan shrugged. “I’ve already struck him into the volcano’s entrance. I believe he’s already died?”

“Gibson died? *You have already prevailed over Gibson?!”

The surveyor’s facial expression went rigid as he hastily scribbled some words onto the yellow-skinned notebook, “Milky Way Calendar, year 2143. On the day of the Drifting Snow Festival, the Professor defeated Gibson on Mount Longinus, seizing third place among Sun City’s experts, right below Merlin!”

“Mister Surveyor, there’s a bit of an error in your record. Do you mind if I make a correction?” Jiang Nan pointed to the volcanic entrance, “I also struck Merlin into the hole, so second place on Sun City’s Totem Ranking…. Oh, it’s also empty!”

Merlin had also been defeated by the Professor?!

The surveyor gawped, and abruptly put away his yellow-skinned book. He then looked at Sauron with an extremely odd look!

“Ladies and gentlemen, the situation is urgent. I must depart for a short period of time, so I’ll take my leave now!”

Chapter 054: Strategic Retreat

The surveyor hastily departed.

And following immediately after the surveyor's steps, "Professor, I'll see you in five days!"

Sauron also walked down Mount Longinus. As he walked, he smacked his forehead, "Tsk, tsk, what a mess it was tonight. However, at least all of this will come to an end in five days!"

"Alright, after five days, everything will come to an end!"

Jiang Nan flapped his hand dejectedly in the direction of Sauron's receding figure, then glanced at Weylin, only to then glance towards Talik....

Suddenly!

Jiang Nan staggered and fainted headlong into Weylin's arms!

"Professor!"

Weylin immediately cried out in alarm. Talik also took several great strides to hastily come over from his distant spot.

But right before Talik arrived, the 'unconscious' Jiang Nan suddenly spoke in a tiny voice to Weylin, "Hurry up and take me

away. No matter what excuse you use, do not let Talik follow along!”

Weylin went blank, and for a time, she could not understand Jiang Nan’s meaning. However, by this time, Talik had already drawn near. As such, Weylin did according to Jiang Nan’s intent and abruptly waved her hand, “Get out of my way, what are you doing?!”

“Miss Weylin, even if it was your honored Grandfather Rondor who saw me, he would not be as overbearing as you! Step aside and let me see the Professor’s injuries!”

Talik was not in the mood to bicker with Weylin as he gazed anxiously at Jiang Nan.

“Talik, I know that you are a major personage. However, this place is this woman’s territory! I* am the master! You trespassed my private estate in the middle of the night with unknown intention, and now you want to get closer to the Professor? Peh!” Weylin heaved Jiang Nan onto her shoulder and laughed coldly: “Who knows if you want to seize the opportunity to harm the Professor or pull off some trick! Talik, you listen to me. Before I know your intentions clearly, I will be bringing the Professor away with me!”

“Weylin, a junior like you dares to....”

“So this woman dares then!”

Weylin's shrill voice pierced the air, and jabbing a finger in the direction of Talik's nose as she supported Jiang Nan on her shoulder, she launched into a flurry of abuses, "Talik, if you have the ability, then why don't you try and act against me*?! If you dare to come closer another step, this woman will go to the imperial capital to expose your crimes! Even if I* need to bring the case before His Majesty the Emperor, I'll* accompany you to the end!"

After she said this, Weylin's lovely eyes glared fiercely at Talik, then retreated down Mount Longinus.

Talik wanted to chase after them, but Weylin was not in the same position as Sauron. Weylin was the Professor's leader in name, so offending Weylin was equivalent to offending the Professor!

Furthermore, he had exposed his identity tonight, so if he did not want to be seized by the people chasing after him, he would have to stay behind and make reparations.

Thinking up till here, Talik remained on the mountaintop and shouted out loudly: "Weylin, I'll always be at Rheim Pasture! After the Professor wakes up, tell him to immediately come and see me! If I won't be able to see him.... Hmph, I'll just look for your grandfather, Lord Rondor, to have a talk!"

"Aiyoh, this woman's so scared~!"

Seeing that Talik did not follow along, Weylin harrumphed in glee. After walking a distance away, she asked: "Professor, why not

let Talik come along? He is the person who saved us!”

“Miss Weylin, did you notice Talik’s two hands?”

Jiang Nan pulled himself off from Weylin’s shoulders, his steps a bit feeble and unsteady: “The finger joints of Talik’s hands had all their skin broken and torn, to the point that some of the bones even showed. What does this mean? This means that for the sake of promptly rushing over here to help us, Talik had no qualms about climbing up a steep cliff with his bare hands, and simply threw caution to the wind to reach us as fast as possible!” Jiang Nan smacked his forehead in vexation, “Think a bit more about Talik’s identity. He’s from the highest court of law in the empire and is the Vice Captain of the Execution Squad, an officer comparable to a provincial governor! For a provincial governor level officer to spare no effort for a small farm owner and a fighter with a bit of a reputation in Sun City, do you really believe that he has no agenda?”

He spread his hands out in a helpless manner, “Seeing as how Talik has helped us, the things he wishes to require of us are undoubtedly things that we cannot undertake! Since we cannot undertake it.... Alright, we’ll just have to use a ‘strategic retreat’!”

“Strategic retreat?” Weylin had never heard such a fresh phrase, but in order to save face, she feigned understanding even though she did not understand one thing, “Oh, so it was a strategic retreat.... Ha, this woman had thought that you had benefited from Talik, and just did not want to return the favor, so you deliberately evaded him!”

“Actually, a so-called strategic retreat....” Jiang Nan rubbed his chin, “Is another way of expressing a reluctance to return a favor. En, a model character’s method.”

“....”

Very quickly, the two of them came to a fork in the small path beside the steep cliff and Jiang Nan waved his hand, “The match has already concluded. I still have my own matters to tend to, so let’s meet in five days!”

“Hey, you, stop right there!” Weylin pointed towards Jiang Nan’s shoulder, “Do you not feel like f***ing living? Getting so heavily injured, hurry up and follow me back to the farm to receive treatment!”

“I myself can take care of such a minor injury! Miss Weylin, do you still remember my condition before joining your farm? You do not have the authority to order me around, alright?”

After he said this, Jiang Nan turned and entered into a small patch of shrubbery on the side.

Weylin resentfully cursed with a hushed voice, and it was unknown what she said. However, she very quickly tilted her head back up and directed a great shout in Jiang Nan’s direction, “Professor, thanks!”

“Thanks for what?”

“Thank you for betting Mount Longinus and having the heart to help this woman take it back!”

As she called out these words, a strange emotion swirled about in Weylin’s heart.

She could not see through the Professor anymore. This fellow could push a pitiful mute into the fiery abyss for the sake of maintaining face, but he could also bet on Mount Longinus for the her who could still be considered a stranger to him and fight with Sauron in a death match as well....

Professor, exactly what kind of person are you?

Carrying a stomach full of confusion, Weylin came to the small town located at the foot of the mountain.

However, she had not yet entered into the establishment when she heard an ear-splitting, angry shout, and even more so, the rumbles and booms of war drums!

“There’s a lone soldier here, beat him to death!”

“Relay my orders, relay my orders! The second squad must immediately come to my place to provide support. F*** it, hurry up! I* almost cannot withstand it anymore!”

“Damn it, forget the military commands! Brothers, take up your arms and slaughter these sons of b****es!”

The small town had already transformed into chaos! It turned out that during the match, the people who attempted to spectate had already lost all form of self-control. At first, there were only some who wanted to barge through directly, and they were pushed back by the soldiers. However, soon after, these several men stirred up the emotions of the crowd and basically turned a confrontation between a few people into a small-scale rebellion!

The moment she saw this, Weylin flew into a rage and was about to bark out, ‘All of you f***ing stop right there!’, but she had not even said anything when a voice rang out from the highest tower of the town, “Everybody, everybody, we are a neutral faction, and should not be interrupting these affairs in the first place. However, pertaining to tonight’s match, we must say this: the match has already concluded. Furthermore, we have already assessed the results of the match, and have revised the Totem Ranking!”

The person speaking was precisely the neutral surveyor!

Just like eggplant bitten by frost, the violent immediately grew listless as if they had withered. Besides the hundred or so whose eyes had already gone bloodshot from fighting so much, the majority had already been forced to calm down by the soldiers.

The surveyor laughed, “Very good. Since everybody is willing to hear the newest update of the Totem Ranking, then I will declare in representation of Sun City’s Totem Advancement Association that in the battle of the drifting snow, the Weather Duo joined

hands and were not a match for the Professor, and have now disappeared on Mount Longinus! Although the Professor's shoulder was heavily injured in this battle, that he could evenly face off against two opponents and still achieve victory demonstrates that his fighting capability is no less than that of Sun City's number one expert, Sauron! For this reason, Sun City's Totem Ranking has been revised to...."

The crowd sank into deathly silence. Only heavy and coarse breathing could be heard as everybody awaited the final verdict.

Chapter 055: The Name, Angel

"As of today, Sauron and the Professor are tied for first place on the Totem Ranking!"

The surveyor tidied his collar and said in a serene manner: "Ladies and gentlemen, although the Professor is only at the primary-rank 8th level, and although the details of today's battle are still being investigated, there's no need to doubt the outcome. The Professor indeed has the strength to stand neck to neck with Sauron! For this reason, I discussed with several other surveyors...."

The surveyor was right in the middle of going through these formalities and explaining the ranking in detail when he suddenly discovered that a queer atmosphere had abruptly spread throughout the entire crowd.

This sort of atmosphere had not yet erupted, but it already had the signs of bursting into a storm!

The next second, he suddenly understood: since ancient times, there had never been an absence of number one or number two. These people definitely would not be satisfied with a 'tie' for first place. Rather, they were much more interested in knowing this: between Sauron and the Professor, who was the number one expert?!

As expected, several people had already begun complaining, "Mister Surveyor, what is number one? Number one means

unrivalled and unmatched, superior to all the experts in Sun City! That you guys actually declared a tie for first place.... Hmph!"

"This gentleman here, no need to worry, no need to worry!" The surveyor hastily broke off his lengthy explanation as he spoke with a smile: "I understand. Everybody is more concerned about who the genuine number one expert of Sun City is. In regards to this question, I am unable to answer you, but...." He raised a match contract up high, "Five days from now, on the very first day of the New Year, the Professor and Sauron will fight a decisive battle in the Totem Arena! At that time, the throne for Sun City's number one expert will then find its one and only master!"

Five days later....

Immediately, the entire town quieted. The crowd's faces were quite marvelous to behold; some expressed astonishment, some excitement, while even more expressed troubled looks.

Correct, troubled looks! "It's actually the first day of the New Year, the day Yulianne will arrive.... Hey, are you going to go see Yulianne or go watch the match between Sauron and the Professor?"

"This.... Although the confrontation between the Professor and Sauron will be fascinating, Yulianne is also.... Ai, it's hard to say, it's hard to say."

Yulianne, or the match? Right as the crowd sank into troubled thought, a carriage guarded by two cyan-armored warriors

appeared within the forest outside the town.

Madame Suzanne was sitting within the carriage, and she let out an expressive sigh as well. “Arranging the match on the day of Yulianne’s arrival…. Sauron actually agreed to the match. What exactly is he thinking?”

The person within the carriage was precisely Madame Suzanne! She had been observing the situation in hiding!

Madame Suzanne rubbed her forehead in confusion. At this moment, she spotted Sauron right as he came down from the mountain peak and arrived beside the carriage.

She thereupon spoke in dissatisfaction: “Sauron, I already know of the match’s results! That you actually agreed to fight during the first day of the New Year, exactly what is the meaning of this?”

“Madame, are *you getting angry? Oh, no, I actually have even graver news….”

Sauron gave a faint smile and whispered in Madame Suzanne’s ear, “Not only did I accept the match, I even bet the property that is already in our hands without *your permission…. Mount Longinus!”

“Sauron!”

Whoosh!

A gleam of killing intent flashed across Madame Suzanne's eyes, but she very soon calmed down and spoke with a slight smile: "Tell me, why did you accept this sort of disadvantageous match?"

"As expected, Madame understands me...." Sauron began chuckling, "Madame, I bet Mount Longinus today, and five days later, I will be able to destroy Weylin's faction of power from the root up and slaughter all of West Farms until not even a chicken or dog is left!"

At this point in time, Sauron had still not removed Flower Battle Armor. Amidst waves and waves of flower fragrances, he spoke hushedly in Madame Suzanne's ear.

Subsequently, Madame Suzanne knitted her eyebrows, "This is too risky. With the slightest inattentiveness, the ones who will die will not be Weylin, but rather us!"

"Madame, fortune is found within risk!" A sinister light glinted in Sauron's eyes, "Of course, if you do not agree with my plan, I can also genuinely go and fight with the Professor. However.... Do you really wish to give up the opportunity to completely uproot West Farms?"

Madame Suzanne sank into lengthy silence.

"Just do as you've said then.... Ai, I'm tired. Let us return!"

Madame Suzanne's carriage slowly departed from Mount Longinus, while others toiled hard and long to deal with the aftermath of this incident.

The moon was already at the midpoint of its orbit, and according to the agreement made several days before, Weylin should have already handed Mount Longinus over to Madame Suzanne.

However, Mount Longinus had already become the stake for the match, and the Totem Advancement Association now had the authority over it. As such, Mount Longinus was temporarily signed off to the Totem Advancement Association.

And Weylin and the surveyors were simply 'nominally' busying themselves over the particulars of this transfer.

Talik, on the other hand, had already located the City Lord. Under the official's assistance, he hastily sealed off all news considering his appearance at Mount Longinus, or at least, sealed off all news from reaching the ears of his political opponents in the Imperial Capital.

As for Eddy....

This unfortunate chef had been heavily beaten by those pursuing troops and incarcerated within the town's prison. If only it were possible for Talik to drag him out when day came.

On a separate note, Victor had not fallen to his death from the

steep precipice. However, just as he was about to slaughter his way to the Professor once again, Sauron suddenly appeared before him!

As to what these two gentlemen discussed....

Jiang Nan did not know. Furthermore, he was not in the mood to go find out either.

From the map's perspective, Mount Longinus was a steep precipice on three sides, and of these cliffs, the northernmost cliff had many flat inclines. Under the cover of the greenery, these inclines concealed many indiscernible caverns.

More accurately, there were 206 of these caves, which just so happened to coincide with the number of bones in the human body.

Jiang Nan was currently hiding within one of these caverns. Normally, this cavern was used by Weylin for storing war preparations and supplies, provisions, medicine, emergency treatment kits, and many other necessities, so it was completely capable of assisting Jiang Nan in healing his injuries.

Phew!

After Jiang Nan bandaged up his shoulder, he lied feebly against the large trunk.

His injuries were not actually very serious; they were simply

superficial. However, the issue was that the three Ghost Art skills were truly too draining. Even now, his four limbs still faintly ached.

"Oh, what an interesting fight...."

Jiang Nan closed his eyes and summed up his experiences from the battle. However, as he pondered, he came to this conclusion: through his aunt's revision, the Ghost Art's might was incomparably terrifying, to the point that he could overlook his current level and defeat two powerful opponents!

However, since the Ghost Art's might was great, so was its consumption! If he went all out in unleashing his Ghost Arts, the most he could hold out was.... Five moves!

All of a sudden, muffled footsteps rang out from outside the cavern.

"Rodi, have you acquired the map of Mount Longinus?"

In a mist of black fog enshrouding his figure and an eyeball hanging against his cheekbone, the freak with the hanging eyeball whom Alisa had spoken off had come!

"I've already gotten the map. If you want it, it can be drawn for you anytime."

When Jiang Nan heard the black figure's voice, he responded

without even lifting his eyelids.

"Since you've already gotten the map, then there's no rush, no rush.... Rodi, first answer my question!"

The black figure let out a bizarre cackling sound only to suddenly direct his hanging eyeball to gaze fixedly at Jiang Nan's eyes, demanding in a sever voice, "I saw the course of your match. The might of the Ghost Totem skills you utilized from my Ghost Art was stronger by at least a hundred times! Say it, was it 'Blazing Angel' who altered my Ghost Arts?! Damn it all, it can only be Blazing Angel. Only Blazing Angel can revise my Ghost Arts to this degree!" He snarled furiously, "Tell me, was it Blazing Angel?!"

Chapter 056: A Foul Idea (1)

Blazing Angel?!

Jiang Nan did not know what kind of freaky object Blazing Angel was, but he was very clear from the black figure's emotional state that once he let out that it was his aunt who revised the manual....

Okay, this would bring an innumerable amount of trouble for his aunt!

Thinking up till here, Jiang Nan's face abruptly expressed surprise, "Mister, what are you talking about? The skills I used before were clearly your Ghost Arts! No one has ever revised the manual.... Oh, or more like, I myself know of nobody who altered the Ghost Arts!"

"You don't know? Hmph!"

The black figure eerily glared at Jiang Nan, obviously doubting Jiang Nan's nonsense.

"Mister! Is there a need for me to deceive you?" Jiang Nan patted his injured shoulder with a helpless expression, "Mister, can you see what this is? This is a slave marking, a slave marking that only you can help me remove! As long as this is here, can I deceive you? Do I dare to lie to you?" Halting a bit, Jiang Nan's tone took a more urgent tone, "If you wish to investigate the revisions behind the secret manual, I pledge on my dignity that I will give my absolute best to cooperate with you and help you do anything until the

situation is cleared up!”

“You’ve truly never seen Blazing Angel?”

The black figure’s tone had softened a bit.

“I’ve never even heard of Blazing Angel! If you don’t believe me…. Alright, I’ll recount to *you all the things I’ve done recently. You can find out anything, so if you notice anything amiss, you can cancel our deal and continue to let me be a slave who isn’t even comparable to a pig or dog!”

The black figure could find out anything about Jiang Nan. If these words had been spoken several days earlier, Jiang Nan might have believed them, but now….

That the black figure did not know that it was Alisa who altered his secret manual proved that he was not an omniscient god!

As long as he was not all-knowing….

Then it’d be a piece of cake to ‘teach’ him! Jiang Nan spoke earnestly: “After you gave me the secret manual that day, I was eager to cultivate it so I went to a cellar near the pig pen….”

Jiang Nan narrated all that had happened in full detail and honesty. Moreover, not even one particular was left out. However, when he began recounting about when he first began cultivating, he made a mistake. “After I read through the basic knowledge and

was in the middle of locating the necromantic energy from the dead pigs, it was probably because it was my first time coming in contact with necromantic energy or because I did something wrong, but my head began hurting sharply, so I simply took a break for a period of time.... After ten odd minutes or so, the abnormality disappeared and I continued cultivating. After that.... Good heavens, I actually only used several minutes to succeed in cultivating the Ghost Arts! Subsequently, I used the Skeletal Poison Blade from the Ghost Arts to destroy the manual....”

The aftermath of his cultivation took a whole twenty minutes for Jiang Nan to finish narrating, and they were all truthful words.

Hearing Jiang Nan conclude, the black figure’s hanging eyeball began to wriggle. After pondering for a moment, as expected, he pointed out the abnormality that Jiang Nan had deliberately spoken falsely, “When you were absorbing the necromantic energy, you felt a headache?!”

“That’s right, a headache!”

Jiang Nan’s face brimmed with sincerity and honesty.

On the other hand, the black figure’s face exuded heavy killing intent! Damn it all, his own Ghost Arts wouldn’t bring about a headache!

It was definitely Blazing Angel who interfered with Rodi and seized the opportunity to revise the Ghost Arts in secret!

This damned Blazing Angel….

As the black figure cursed silently in his heart, Jiang Nan continued speaking with a face full of innocence: “I’ve already explained all that needs to be said. Mister, do you still not believe me?”

The black figure snorted, tacitly admitting his belief. Rodi was indeed not aware of the alteration!

Jiang Nan let out a sigh of relief, “Alright, you finally believe me. Then, Mister, can you tell me what…. Blazing Angel means?”

“You don’t have the qualifications to know yet! Rodi, I do not wish for you to bring up the name Blazing Angel again, understand?!”

The black figure’s tone suddenly went icy. However, very quickly, his hanging eyeball soon flashed with a glint of craftiness as he spoke in an amiable voice: “Rodi, all you need to know is that someone has revised your secret manual. Furthermore, you should have also felt it yourself during the match that through this alteration, although it is very mighty, its consumption is even greater! Correct. The moves that person has given you will only lead you on the wrong path, and there is no benefit to you…. If you see this person in the future, immediately notify me!”

“Alright, alright….”

Jiang Nan's head bobbed up and down as he nodded with a face that said, 'You are my savior; I'll definitely notify you and repay you!' He patted his shoulder, "Since you aren't willing to speak of Blazing Angel, then.... Continuing with our deal should be okay right? Mister, before you remove my slave marking, what is your second condition?"

The black figure suddenly sank into silence.

After several seconds, he coldly spat out a word, "Yulianne!"

"Yulianne?"

Jiang Nan abruptly sat up straight.

"Correct, Yulianne!" The black figure chuckled coldly: "On the first day of the New Year, three hundred of our fellow Ghost Totem comrades will be transferred over to Sun City as materials for the Knife Work Feast. As a possessor of the Ghost Totem myself, I must save them! However...."

"However, these three hundred fellow Ghost Totem comrades will be prepared for Yulianne!" Not waiting for the black figure to finish speaking, Jiang Nan had already picked up from where he left off and began speaking with a frown: "To take away the Knife Work Feast materials for receiving Yulianne right before her and interrupt her welcoming feast.... Okay, once you take action to save these people, Yulianne will definitely act immediately and obstruct you with all her might, isn't that so?"

The black figure suddenly realized that speaking the truth to Jiang Nan was a very simple matter, and he nodded his head, “Correct, Yulianne will definitely obstruct me. As such, I need a person to help me hold Yulianne off and give me time to save them!”

His hanging eyeball gazing directly at Jiang Nan, the black figure suddenly chuckled, “Rodi, the second condition you need to fulfill before I remove your slave marking is to help me face Yulianne on the first day of the New Year. You must hold her off for at least ten minutes!”

“You want me to face Yulianne?!”

Jiang Nan’s eyes nearly popped out, “Alright, alright. First, answer two questions of mine. The first: what Totem level is Yulianne?”

“I do not know what level Yulianne is at. However, I can tell you....” the black figure laughed self-deprecatingly, “that I have personally seen Yulianne take action. At that time, the fighting prowess she displayed was definitely no less than Rondor’s!”

Rondor was Weylin’s grandfather, the current family head of the First Totem Millennium and a person whose nickname was the Undefeated Legend!

Jiang Nan’s face simply expressed, ‘Oh, so you also know this!’, and then continued to ask: “My second question: if Yulianne wants to kill me, how many seconds does she need?”

The black figure snickered contemptuously, “Not even half a second!”

“And you still want me to go face Yulianne?!”

Jiang Nan smacked his forehead in vexation, unable to keep from saying something from his native homeland, “Why not Allah just let me commit suicide!”

“Don’t worry about committing suicide!” The black figure’s tone suddenly changed, his words brimming with ridicule, “In terms of fighting capability, it’s true that you aren’t a match for Yulianne. However, Yulianne has once pledged before a crowd of people that if a man’s knife speed could surpass hers, she would give herself to that man....”

“Mister, your foul idea wouldn’t be....”

Chapter 057: A Foul Idea (2)

“Correct. I want you to use your knife skills to face Yulianne!”

The black figure’s hanging eyeball suddenly jumped, “Rodi, although Yulianne’s pledge isn’t necessarily valid, the fact that she is obsessed with knife skills is absolutely true. As long as you utilize your knife skills properly, you can definitely hold off Yulianne for ten minutes!”

“Mister, can I refuse?”

“Of course you can refuse. Continue being a slave who isn’t even comparable to a pig or dog if you wish!”

Jiang Nan sank into silence.

After a long while, he spat out a mouthful of spittle without the slightest bearing of a model professor and said fiercely: “Banana your guava, it’s settled then! This grandfather will help you take care of Yulianne!”

The black figure went blank. In his mind, Jiang Nan had always been a person who would demonstrate the bearing of a model character at every turn. Even if he had to risk his life to face Yulianne now and was a bit stirred up, it would not make sense for him to go as far as speaking that vulgarly, would it?

He nodded his head oddly: “Very good, I appreciate your

decisiveness! Rodi, as for how you will hold Yulianne off.... I can only tell you this. Yulianne will arrive in Sun City at around ten o'clock in the morning, and her route will undoubtedly pass by Sun City's food marketplace. As to how to deal with this, think of an idea yourself." Halting a bit, he continued, "On the other hand, in the upcoming days, three hundred fellow Ghost Totem comrades will be sent to various places in Sun City. You must locate one of them, preferably one with leadership skills, and then relay my plan to him. Tell him to lead the rest of the three hundred to cooperate with the operation!"

"Alright, as *you wish!" After a momentary loss of composure, Jiang Nan returned to his appearance as a model character and gave a chuckle, "I will fulfill your condition. Mister, do you have any other advice?"

"No more. Hand over the map of Mount Longinus then."

A blank, greased paper shot out of the black fog along with a quill pen to land gently before Jiang Nan.

Jiang Nan began drawing onto the greased paper, and just as he was about to complete the map, he suddenly asked without raising his head: "What do you need the map of Mount Longinus for? You wouldn't tell me that I lack the qualifications to know this, would you?"

"No, you are already qualified to know this...." The black figure's drooping eyeball swayed as he said with a smile: "You clearly saw the scene of Mount Longinus devouring the Weather Duo, right?"

Jiang Nan's pen paused moving as he nodded, "Does it have something to do with that pale white light?"

"Correct. Mount Longinus has always had a legend of it devouring people floating around it: every year during the Drifting Snow Festival, when it is the coldest time of the year, if someone uses their totem power on Mount Longinus, the dormant volcano will devour that person!" The hanging eyeball brimmed with avarice, "In these thousands and hundreds of years, Mount Longinus has devoured at least twenty-some experts and several hundred powerful, strange beasts. I want the map of Mount Longinus so I can find the skeletal remains of these experts and beasts!"

"Skeletal remains?" Jiang Nan tilted his head up with a look of confusion. At the same time, he handed the completed map to the black figure, "Why would you look for the skeletal remains?"

After sweeping his eyes over the map, the black figure collected it into the black fog and then handed over a faintly purple, sheepskin scroll to Jiang Nan, "The reason is in here. Look at it yourself!"

After he said this, the black fog roiled about and disappeared before Jiang Nan's eyes.

Jiang Nan spread open the sheepskin scroll. With just one glance, he let out a satisfied laugh, "I understand now. No wonder you wish to find the skeletal remains of those powerful figures.... Thank you for telling me this secret, Hanging Eyeball Mister!"

There were only three paragraphs written on the scroll.

The first paragraph: “Rodi, you are about to reach the peak of the primary-rank Totem Warrior stage. Before you advance to the intermediate rank, you must keep this in mind: primary rank is only a threshold. Only after you advance to the intermediate rank and possess a ‘Totem Guard’ will you officially begin the path of a totem master!”

The second paragraph, “A so-called Totem Guard is summoning a manifestation of nature to constantly follow by your side and fight for you! Furthermore, since you are a Ghost Totem master, the various defenses you can summon include corpses, bones, ghosts, zombies.... Any manifestations of nature that have to do with death!”

This sentence was the reason why that black figure wished to locate the skeletal remains of those experts!

Ghost Totem masters could summon corpses to act as their Totem Guard. Furthermore, the effect of summoning a dead pig and the skeletal remains of an expert would definitely be worlds apart.

The black figure precisely wanted the skeletal remains of the experts within Mount Longinus to become his Totem Guard!

And what was even more generous was that he had revealed this secret to Jiang Nan. He was clearly indicating to Jiang Nan,

“Young fellow, before you advance to the intermediate rank, you can also come to Mount Longinus and summon the skeletal remains of a peerless expert to become your Totem Guard!”

Seeing this, Jiang Nan laughed contentedly.

He then continued to look at the next paragraph: this paragraph was the incantation to summoning a Totem Guard. However, written in the paragraph was a particular warning that said, “Rodi, before your strength surpasses mine, you can only summon ‘one type’ of Totem Guard. Furthermore, once you summon it, you cannot abandon or change it! As such, when you are about to summon it, you must be beyond cautious. By no means should you make the wrong decision…. In simpler terms, you do not summon at all, or you choose the best option for the sake of your future path once you do make a summoning!”

If he was to summon, he would have to summon the best!

Jiang Nan silently engraved these words onto his heart, then recalled the map of Mount Longinus.

If it was possible, he could go look for the experts’ skeletal remains right now!

However, it was a pity that because Weylin was not aware of the Mount Longinus’ legend, she had not marked any trails to the remains.

Furthermore, just as Jiang Nan was about to sink into deeper thought and study, various shouts suddenly floated through, “Rodi, Miss Weylin wants you to immediately appear. If you haven’t come out within ten minutes, the Miss will break your useless legs!”

Oh, alright. The matter of locating those skeletal remains could be pushed to a later date.

Jiang Nan patted his forehead in irritation and came to the town at the foot of the mountain.

Weylin was currently leading people to look for Jiang Nan, and seeing Jiang Nan come over, she launched into a bout of scolding: “Rodi, you said that you wanted to inform this woman, but then what happened?! Where did you go die!”

“Calm down, Miss Weylin!” Jiang Nan shook his finger and laughed, “You know, I’m actually a very cowardly person….”

“This woman knows that you have no courage, but this woman is asking you….”

“Since you know that I’m a coward, Miss Weylin, in such a public place, can you keep from asking anymore?” Jiang Nan shrugged his shoulders with a troubled looks and inched close to Weylin’s ear, whispering: “Don’t tell me that you actually want me to tell the truth and say that when that earthquake happened, I was so scared that I nearly pissed my pants and went to hide in a mountain cavern? Weylin, I am a slave, but I am also a man. How

about you leave me some face?”

Weylin went blank, then suddenly went ‘pft’ and began giggling.

Jiang Nan also laughed, “Miss Weylin, I’ve already heard the results of the match. Right now…. Can I return to Rheim Pasture?”

“What’s the rush? Don’t tell me that you don’t want to see this woman?” Weylin glared, but she soon began laughing, “Let’s leave at noon. It just so happens that this woman needs to send some criminals to Rheim Pasture, so come along with me!”

Criminals?!

Jiang Nan stared blankly. He assumed that it was Eddy who had been captured by Weylin and had become the farm’s prisoner.

Turning his head around, as expected, the unlucky chef Eddy was imprisoned within a jail cart and was currently crying and wailing as he was sent along.

But behind Eddy, there were ten more jail carts. Twenty eyes flickered with a ghastly and eerie light while the faces of these ten criminals just so happened to gloomily fix onto himself!

The criminal in the third jail cart was the one who caused Jiang Nan’s heart to tremble the most!

This person's physique was not very big. One could even say that he was a bit skinny. However, he was carrying an enormous 150 kilogram iron cangue, and not even one bone bent under this burden. A deep furrow could be seen between his eyebrows and a cold light gleamed in within his eyes. With just one look, it was clear that this was an iron-blooded person whose life had often come into contact with life and death, a person whose knife would fall at the slightest lift of a hand.

This was Jiang Nan's and Glaston's first meeting.

If this was narrated in the melodramatic way of a wandering bard, it should have been like this, "In year 2143 of the Milky Way Calendar during the Drifting Snow Festival, the great Saint Rodi was still a slave full of a model character's bearing, and there were still many people who loathed him. However, this day, the person acclaimed as his number one faithful follower, the unimaginably loyal and steadfast Lord Glaston, miraculously discovered this side of the esteemed and great Saint. From this moment onwards, the wheels of fate began to turn...."

It is a pity that facts and history will always have some sort of disparity.

When the person in the cage sensed Jiang Nan looking at him, his head did not even turn. It was as if Jiang Nan was simply a lowly ant looking up to a gigantic dragon!

And after staring at this man for nearly half a day, Jiang Nan clicked his tongue and gave a fitting assessment:

This was a distinctively masculine man!

He then asked Weylin: “Miss, these men are….”

TL note: The meaning behind “Banana your guava” is basically cussing and swearing. Just use your imagination and substitute the fruit names with curse words. The backstory behind this is that there was a male character who would often scold and curse people. Because of this, it would bring a lot of trouble to him. As such, he went to a church to find a priest to help him with this shortcoming of his, asking him if there was any way for him to change his bad habit. The priest told him to simply change the curse words to the names of fruit. Nobody would be able to tell exactly what curses he would be saying, but it wouldn’t matter as long as he himself knew that he was getting angry at them. From then on, whenever he cursed or scolded people, he would always substitute the bad words with fruits.

Chapter 058: A Real Man

These ten criminals were the ‘materials’ needed for the Knife Work Feast!

During the match on Mount Longinus, those three hundred Ghost Totem criminals had already been escorted to Sun City.

However, just like that freak with the hanging eyeball, there were at least ten odd Ghost Totem masters who wanted to save these poor comrades, so in order to ensure their security, Madame Suzanne devised a simple, yet effective plan.

She divided the three hundred criminals into thirty teams consisting of ten people each, then handed them over to thirty supervisors. After this, she declared that as long as one team was saved, the remaining twenty-nine teams of criminals would be executed!

The ten criminals that Jiang Nan had just seen were the ten Ghost Totem criminals that had just been passed to her. However, Weylin was not in the mood to help Madame Suzanne supervise them, so after cursing the officers who handed them over out, she gave a large wave of her hand, “Beat it, and send these Ghost Totem lowlives to Rheim Pasture!”

Just like that, Weylin ushered the ten criminals onto the road.

And Jiang Nan also returned to Rheim Pasture in passing. As for Eddy....

Weylin had imprisoned this unlucky chef into a jailed cart, parading him through the streets for all of the public to see and completely stripping him of his face.

“Weylin, you’re such a malicious lady! My goodness, I’m just a chef!”

On the way back to the pasture, Eddy yelled and wailed with all his might. Compared to his ten other companions who were also imprisoned, he was as pitiful as a small white mouse who had fallen into a vat of oil, a white mouse without any fur.

Very quickly, Eddy realized that no matter how much he shouted and tore his throat yelling, Weylin would not pay any attention to him. Therefore, his gaze landed onto the leisurely Jiang Nan who was beside Weylin before he burst into a flurry of angry ranting: “Rodi, what kind of path did you lead me to?! When I went into the dense forest, I was even pursued the entire time by a group of soldiers…. My goodness, *I’ve never mistreated you, but you, you sabotaged me!”

“Calm down, Mister Eddy.”

Jiang Nan jumped onto the jail cart and sat next to Eddy with a face full of innocence, “Didn’t I say so before? That pathway is really troublesome to go through, so it is easy to get lost! You, you…. Ai, how can you blame me!”

Eddy was so furious that he could not say a single word.

At this moment, Jiang Nan recalled the request of the freak with the hanging eyeball—to find a criminal with leadership skills to cooperate with him to save the three hundred Ghost Totems.

For this reason, he surreptitiously pointed towards the criminals within the jail carts, “Mister Eddy, have you been imprisoned with them all this time?”

“Hmph, that’s right! *I’ve been incarcerated with these Ghost Totem lowlives, do you have something to say?!”

“Then…. Are you already familiar with them? Can you introduce them to me?” Jiang Nan stared at Eddy’s glance that said, ‘You’re not a good person’ and chuckled, “Okay, I’ve just never seen a Ghost Totem before, so I just want to know if their lifestyle is different from us humans.”

Eddy glared, “Why would *I tell you anything? Ungrateful pretty boy!”

“Mister Eddy, you’re one of the four great knife work chefs within the Empire. You yourself could not find the proper route, but you’re even bickering with a slave…. Alright, alright! If you aren’t afraid of shaming yourself, continue squabbling with a slave like me!”

“You…. fine, I’ll say it! How could *I be afraid of you?”

Eddy pointed towards a fifteen or sixteen year old criminal, “Alright, this one’s called Migg, the student of a Ghost Totem master. He accompanied his master to rob a grave and dig up the corpse, so he was captured by Talik....”

Eddy introduced them one by one, but the more Jiang Nan heard, the more discouraged he grew. He wanted to find a criminal with leadership capabilities, but these people were either too trifling in terms of exploits or just had lifeless expressions, having already fallen into complete despair. These people definitely could not cooperate with the freak with the hanging eyeball.

“This man’s name is called ‘Glaston’. Previously, he was one of the five great Tiger Generals of the Empire, the Garrison General of the Imperial Capital’s legion of guards, and was known as the Thorn Commander. He was also the Empire’s greatest military doctor!”

Doctor?!

When Jiang Nan heard that there was actually a person with the same profession as him within the jail cart, he lifted his head in astonishment. He saw that Eddy was currently staring at that ‘distinctively masculine man’ with a complicated expression, or in other words, Glaston.

When Glaston heard Eddy mention him, he did not move the slightest bit. Instead, he continued to bear that 150 kilogram cangue as he stood within the jail cart. Compared to the other criminals who were nearly collapsing under the weight, he appeared particularly unique.

“General…. Are you saying that this person was a general who previously led an army with thousands of men?” Jiang Nan’s eyes lit up, “Since he was a general, he could he fall to such a…. Alright, to such a degree where he’s not even considered a human being?”

Eddy’s expression grew even more complicated. Half of it contained righteous loathing, while the other was full of veneration. Suddenly, he sighed, “My goodness, how do you expect me to explain? Rodi, have you heard of origin of Talik’s nickname, ‘Man Slaughterer’?”

“En. In the rebellion at the Imperial Capital five years ago, Lord Talik executed eight thousand captives in one night!” Within that group were also Suzu’s parents.

“In that rebellion, Talik was only in charge of taking care of the incident’s aftermath. The person who truly led troops to quell the rebellion and killed the thirty-two great generals of the rebel army, thus protecting the Imperial Capital….”

He pointed towards Glaston, “Was him!”

“And then?”

Jiang Nan grew even more interested. This person settled a rebellion within the Empire in just one night, so there was obviously no need to question his leadership capabilities!

“Glaston quelled the rebellion, but there were disastrous casualties among his own brethren. There were numerous people who would become handicapped, so Glaston, this senseless and confused fool, actually did not attend His Majesty’s award banquet. Rather, he hid in a cellar to treat his subordinate troops!” Eddy sighed, “Treatment is, after all, treatment, but this fool actually…. Ai. At that time, there was a soldier with an arrow caught in the bones of his thigh, and no one could pull it out. As such, Glaston cut open this soldier’s thigh in secret….”

Jiang Nan’s eyes sparkled even more. That Glaston cut open the person’s thigh to save him…. Alright, this masculine guy was actually capable of performing surgery!

However, this would have definitely violated the land’s Ghost Massacre Decree!

“Cutting open the thigh was equivalent to violating the Ghost Massacre Degree!” Eddy also reached this conclusion. “The soldier who was saved did not sell out Glaston, but Glaston’s deputy officer had seen the entire process of treatment. That deputy officer had always wanted to take over Glaston’s position, so he….”

“So he betrayed Glaston?”

“En. That deputy officer reported this incident to the Empire’s highest court of law in secret…. At first, the supreme court did not want to trouble the Empire’s hero for such a matter, so they just sent out a few people to give a casual investigation. However, who knew…. My goodness, forget the investigation, they actually found out that Glaston was a Ghost Totem master! These years, he had

been using a secret and bizarre art to conceal his identity, and he had even climbed up to the position of Imperial General!”

Halting for a bit, Eddy curled his lips in a sneer: “For just one soldier, he exposed the secret that he had hidden for so many years. Rodi, what do you say? Isn’t this fellow foolish!”

Jiang Nan had not even responded when Glaston narrowed his eyes and said in an icy voice: “Ten years ago, when I fainted on the battlefield, that soldier personally carried me back. If I didn’t save him, what kind of person would I be!”

Glaston’s voice was extremely hoarse, as if sandpaper was being ground into foam.

Eddy rolled his eyes at Glaston and continued speaking: “You can probably guess the following events: Talik was in charge of interrogating Glaston. For this reason, he captured his entire family to force Glaston into revealing the art that allowed him to conceal his Ghost Totem, who imparted it to him, and who his master was…. Ai, Glaston never confessed, so Talik was even more ruthless. One a day, he killed for thirty-nine consecutive days, completely eradicating Glaston’s entire family….”

Glaston’s eyes were expressionless.

“On the fortieth day, Glaston still had not confessed, so Talik crippled his strength and incarcerated him within a bloody prison. He even viciously said that for each day Glaston did not confess, for each day he would not receive any rest! This torment continued

for five years....” Eddy suddenly laughed, “It’s actually pretty damn funny. Talik actually forgot about Glaston two years ago. However, not long ago, I went to find him for some Ghost Totem criminals. It was only then that Talik remembered Glaston and sent him over as a favor in passing....”

Eddy narrated this with spittle flying all over the place. From the looks of it, if he was to lose his job, he could earn his keep as a wandering minstrel.

However, Jiang Nan was no longer interested in listening further. He circled Glaston twice, then suddenly patted him on the shoulder, “You’d rather have your whole family killed and yourself to suffer torment for five years rather than betray your master.... Brother, you’re a damn real man!”

Chapter 059: The Real Man Must Also Lower Himself Before Me!

To find a more precise term to describe Glaston's current mood, it would definitely be: go f*** yourself!

If one really had to add a certain term before go f*** yourself, then it would be: godda** it, go f*** yourself!

Although he had fallen to this degree, he had still managed a hundred thousand man army before and was a national hero who had quelled a rebellion in the Empire. However, just looking at Jiang Nan's appearance, sloppy and dishevelled, patting his shoulder, opening his mouth with 'brother' and closing it with 'a real man', was he ridiculing this former hero?

Furthermore.... This bastard was actually wearing the clothes of a slave?!

When did I, Glaston, fall to the point where a slave is even mocking me now?!

Glaston closed his eyes, simply pretending that Jiang Nan was not there.

Unfortunately, Jiang Nan did not feel as though he did not exist. His two hands passed through the chains and grabbed onto Glaston's two hands heavily, "Brother, let's be friends. My name is Rodi."

Glaston lifted his head.

“Brother, how about you just give me some face!” Jiang Nan’s voice grew softer, “You are a criminal and I am a slave. If you become my friend, you will receive your proper compensation in the future.”

Glaston tilted his head even higher.

“Looking at you, it seems that you look down on my identity as a slave, huh?”

His head tilted up several degrees higher.

Seeing as how Jiang Nan had not brought about any satisfactory results, he inched closer to Glaston’s ear with a dazzling smile and said in a small voice: “If you raise your head any higher, watch out for hyperosteogeny! The fourth vertebra of the human spine is extremely fragile!”

(*TL: “excessive bone development”)

Glaston’s eyes suddenly shot open!

Astonishment flashed across his eyes, as if clearly asking, “You actually understand the skeletal structure of the human body?!”

Jiang Nan gave a faint smile, leapt off the jail cart, and left!

“Remember my name, Rodi!”

Jiang Nan was very satisfied with this first meeting with Glaston.

He had already appointed Glaston as the criminal with leadership capabilities.

This was why Jiang Nan revealed a bit of his skeletal knowledge to leave a strong impression on Glaston. Later on, he could just contact Glaston in secret and then complete part of the mission the black figure had entrusted to him.

When Jiang Nan and Glaston were talking, Weylin’s expression grew extremely strange, and it grew even stranger as time passed by!

She felt that Jiang Nan was a bit different!

Damn!

Brother!

A real man!

Where these phrases words that Rodi would normally use?!

Rodi's words should have been that of a model character, a person who would always open his mouth to speak in a level headed manner and close his mouth in amiable agreement, always displaying a chiding face. At the same time, he would also demonstrate the meekness and servility of a slave!

As such, Weylin called out Jiang Nan's name, "Rodi, get yourself over here!"

But after Jiang Nan arrived, she simply stared at him without speaking.

"Miss Weylin, I'm awaiting *your command?"

Under Jiang Nan's urging, Weylin finally opened her mouth. However, she responded with seemingly irrelevant words, saying hesitantly: "Rodi, you, you seem to have changed."

"Changed?"

Jiang Nan rubbed his face, "Miss Weylin, have I grown a third eye?"

"You haven't!"

"Have I suddenly grown another nose?"

"Not that either!"

“Yet you’re saying I’ve changed? Oh, my dear Miss Weylin. Your joke is not the least bit funny.”

After he said this, Jiang Nan mingled into a group of people and obtained two bottles of wine from an overseer’s hand. He then jumped onto the jail cart and began to chat idly with Eddy.

He also left behind a blank Weylin, who, at this moment, truly felt as though there was something different about Jiang Nan.

Exactly what had changed?

Jiang Nan knew where he had changed, but he just wouldn’t tell Weylin.

What changed was his attitude!

A friend of Jiang Nan’s who was a psychologist once told him, “Humans will change according to their environment.” Jiang Nan was just like that: after he transmigrated into this world, he was a lowly slave. The slave markings and the whips of the overseers had already ground away his sharpness from the previous world, making him a servile slave through and through!

However, now....

Alright, one could say that this result was a bit similar to that of a

person of low status achieving his dream. Jiang Nan now possessed a fighting capability that allowed him to experience being at the peak of Sun City, and he was already qualified to look down on the several tens of thousands of people within the city!

Following the surveyor's words, 'Professor, Sun City's number one expert!', Jiang Nan's dignity, confidence, and personality from his past world.... Had all returned!

At this moment, the person who had returned was not only Professor Jiang!

It was also Hua Zainan!

That's right, Hua Zainan! This was the alias Jiang Nan had used while in the criminal underworld before becoming a medical professor.

Correct, Jiang Nan was once a hoodlum of a criminal gang.

No person would develop an interest in skeletons and internal organs from the moment they were born, and there was definitely no person who would be naturally inclined to associate with the dead. Before becoming a passionate anatomy specialist, Jiang Nan was actually a member of a criminal gang!

Jiang Nan rubbed his lower back where his dissecting cane was stuck.

The only reason why he could change from a hoodlum to a top-notch specialist of the medical world was a story that stemmed from this dissecting cane....

The specifics included....

Jiang Nan no longer had the time to think further. At this moment, the escort team had already arrived at a point in the outskirts one hundred kilometers away from the city, in the vicinity of West Farms.

Gazing at the indistinct chimney smoke, Jiang Nan's mouth curved in an interested smile.

Auntie and Suzu.... Were within the farm, a distance no more than seven or eight hundred meters from him.

Auntie! No matter how much you altered the secret manual, no matter whether or not you are that so-called Blazing Angel, you are still my Aunt, are you not?

Just wait. Give your nephew some more time, and your nephew will take back your dignity and let you become a noble lady of high status!

As for Suzu....

You poor girl. I'll establish a large-scale medical laboratory to heal you of your muteness. Do you believe me?

I swear on my title as a first class anatomy professor!

The more he thought, the wider Jiang Nan smiled.

At this moment, Weylin roared, “None of you may return home! Go directly to Sun City, damn it! Yulianne is soon to arrive!”

When he went to Mount Longinus, Jiang Nan only packed lightly and walked for a day’s journey. While returning from Mount Longinus, he took a whole four days and four nights with the team of people!

In other words, there was only one day left before Yulianne would arrive!

Sun City was already enveloped in a layer of festivity and jubilation, while three banners hung from the city’s gate. The first welcomed Yulianne’s arrival, while the second announced the duel between the Professor and Sauron. As for the third.... It was to celebrate the coming of the new year!

“Happy New Year, Happy New Year!”

Amidst a joyful atmosphere, Jiang Nan returned to Rheim Pasture. By this time, Talik had already returned long ago, and was currently giving the final pointers and guidance for the knife workers before the feast while covered in blood.

The following events did not include anything unexpected: Eddy was liberated, while the ten Ghost Totem criminals were escorted to the pasture's cellar for the overseers to supervise. Talik, on the other hand, immediately asked about the Professor's whereabouts when he saw Weylin, only to receive a huge bout of scolding and curses....

However, what surprised Jiang Nan was this: he actually did not see any trace of Victor!

If that little wolf cub was not here entangling himself with Weylin, then where could he have gone?

Could it be that he really plummeted to his death after falling off the cliff?

Even if one was to beat Jiang Nan to death, he would not believe it: he could at least think up five different ways for Victor to escape with his life, while Victor.... Could only think of more!

Another issue that surprised him was this: Madame Suzanne seemed to have worked herself to faintness in preparation for Yulianne's arrival, and did not appear for several days. She simply sent people to inform Weylin, "The Professor and Sauron's duel has been arranged to happen after Yulianne's welcoming feast: 9:30 at night!"

Amidst this hustle and bustle, Jiang Nan welcomed New Year's Eve.

The night scene consisted of knife workers rushing all over the place in busy preparation. Talik, Eddy, forty executioners, and the knife work specialists had all gathered before the entrance to the pasture to listen to Eddy's roaring.

"Brothers, Yulianne will arrive tomorrow! Sun City will be watching us, His Majesty the Emperor will be watching us, the entire Empire, the entire continent will be watching us!"

He roared so earnestly his voice tore through the air, "Whether Yulianne is pleased and whether His Majesty is pleased will depend on our performance tomorrow! Brothers, tell me! Are you confident?!"

"We vow to His Majesty to earn favor with Yulianne!"

The knife work specialists roared words that seemed to be representative of oaths and pledges. Although their chants were a bit laughable, once one recalled Yulianne's bewitching of the moon with one blade and her ability to fell a thousand-troop army in one stroke, her absolute fighting capability that allowed her to change the continent's history with just one thought, no one thought that 'earning favor with Yulianne' was something embarrassing to say! On the contrary, whoever could earn favor with Yulianne was simply a damn good representation of their strength!

"Good! Since you brothers have confidence, then *I'll just speak bluntly!"

Eddy raised his command banner up high, as if he was a general

who was bossing people around, and roared loudly: “Right now, I’ll start assigning the tasks! Talik, your executioners will be the first batch to go on stage and cut apart forty Ghost Totem lowlives! Once Talik’s executioners complete their task, the rest of you knife work specialists must immediately go on stage and arrange the dissected flesh into 120 plates! You must set them up into the words ‘Welcome Yulianne’….”

Orders were passed on one by one, and Eddy violently beat on his chest in excitement as he yelled out: “Rodi, since you are the captain of the general preparations team, once…. My goodness, where’s Rodi?!”

Eddy suddenly realized that Jiang Nan had disappeared!

At this time, Jiang Nan was currently in the pasture’s cellar and standing behind a guard’s back. He gave a slight smile and knocked the guard out, then pushed open the iron door to a certain cell. “Mister Glaston, my real man! Your brother has a little deal. Are you interested?”

Jiang Nan was in the process of arranging the rescue operation for the next day!

Chapter 060: The Ten Minute Arrangement

In the past several days, Glaston had gotten acquainted with Jiang Nan. However, he did not actually express much astonishment, and instead kept his back towards Jiang Nan, not moving the slightest bit!

However, he was laughing coldly in his heart!

Deal?

He was going to get cut open tomorrow, yet this slave was requesting for a deal at this moment....

Rodi was definitely plotting something unlawful!

Glaston shut his eyes and refused with an extremely hoarse voice, “A dead person has no interest in making a deal!”

“Oh, no, no! My dear man, you are definitely interested in this deal....”

Jiang Nan sat before Glaston with a gleeful smile, “Perhaps.... We can start with the question from the day before yesterday: why do I understand the skeletal structure?”

Glaston’s eyelid opened up the slightest bit.

“Alright, you’re interested!”

Jiang Nan laughed, and then raised one finger. This finger slowly extended outwards, slowly, slowly, until a skeletal thorn unexpectedly protruded out from it!

On the skeletal thorn was a layer of dark purple poison!

“Skeletal Lance Poison Blade, you’re a Ghost Totem master?!”

Glaston’s eyes finally opened up completely!

“En, Mister. Your conclusion is correct. Just like you, I also possess a Ghost Totem. However…. There really isn’t a need for you to call out so loudly, right? I took such trouble to charge in here, so I don’t wish for your cry of alarm to ruin my plans.”

Jiang Nan moved his wrist as though he had just experienced a bitter fight. However, in actuality, everybody was currently busy with the Knife Work Feats preparations. When he snuck into the cellar, he really did not expend that much strength. In fact, he did not even need to cover his face and disguise himself.

Glaston swept over Jiang Nan with a cold gaze, “Since you are a Ghost Totem, then you’ve….”

“Mister, please keep your mouth closed. Right now, it is my time to speak, is it not?”

Jiang Nan gave a faint smile and fixed his eyes onto Glaston's as he spoke, "Tomorrow morning at ten o'clock, three hundred fellow Ghost Totems will assemble at the city gate. A freak with a hanging eyeball will then save you at that time! Listen, my dear Mister Glaston. If you wish to continue living, you must use your leadership capabilities to help that freak command the three hundred prisoners. Cooperate with all his operations!"

Jiang Nan did not welcome Glaston's thanks. On the contrary, Glaston coldly spat out two words, "Dream on!"

"Oh? You don't believe that I will save you all?"

"I believe. However, I do not believe that someone can save us in front of Yulianne!"

Glaston's face was expressionless, "Rodi, I appreciate that you have the heart to save me! However, Yulianne's strength is absolutely beyond your imagination! Do not risk your and your friend's life to save me!"

"En. As expected, you are a real man who values sentiments and justice...." Jiang Nan repeatedly nodded, "Yulianne is indeed very strong. I heard that she is no longer inferior to the Undefeated Legend, Rondor Rheinhardt...."

"It is Yulianne's 'currently demonstrated' fighting capability that is no longer inferior to Rondor!"

Glaston coldly corrected Jiang Nan's mistake. Jiang Nan, on the other hand, spread his arms out in an exaggerated manner, "My dear man, don't tell me that you mean.... That Yulianne's true strength may be even stronger that the Undefeated Legend?"

Glaston nodded, "Yulianne is not human. Her strength has already exceeded the limits of a human!"

"Alright, Yulianne is very strong. Okay, Yulianne is extremely strong...." Jiang Nan retracted his smile, then crossed his two forefingers and suddenly said: "However, ten minutes. After Yulianne enters into the city, she will definitely be late ten minutes! Glaston, you have ten minutes to escape!"

Glaston's eyes shined with a light full of disbelief, "That isn't possible. Yulianna would not be ten minutes late...."

"No. Yulianne can be late because.... I need Yulianne to arrive late!"

After he said this, Jiang Nan departed from the cellar with a beaming smile on his face. His last glance landed upon the man's vacant expression.

Not long after Jiang Nan left, the unconscious guards in the cellar soon awoke. However, no matter how much they looked around, it seemed as though they had forgotten that they had been ambushed.

This wasn't any unimaginably difficult magical art, but rather due to Jiang Nan's knowledge. He knew that by striking a point three centimeters below the Yu Zhen acupoint on the back of a person's head, he could cause temporary memory loss for a person.

The structures and functions of the human body's acupoints and head were all compulsory academic courses within the anatomy major.

When Jiang Nan came back to the surface, he lifted his head and looked at the moonlight.

It was now midnight, and the new year had already come....

Today was the first day of the Flowerstream Era's year 2143!

At ten in the morning, he would proceed to exhibit his knife work skills to Yulianne!

Tonight at 9:30, he would then contest with Sauron over the throne of Sun City's number one expert!

Today.... Ah, today would truly be a busy day!

Jiang Nan loosened his waist and displayed himself in an undisciplined and dishevelled manner, then ran towards the pasture gate, "My dear Mister Eddy, don't tell me that I'm already

late! It's just that my stomach began hurting, so I spent a not very pleasant period of time in the latrine!"

"You damned Rodi, you're already late by half an hour! Hurry up and get into the ranks!"

Eddy glared fiercely at Jiang Nan, "You better remember, boy. At three o'clock in the morning, we will go to the city square to set up. Your job is to follow by my side. Once any mistake occurs, you must immediately go up and handle it!"

Follow along Eddy's side?

Then how was he to hold Yulianne off?

The moment Jiang Nan thought of this serious issue.... He simply shrugged his shoulders in indifference.

In his mind, simply saying a few words would be enough to leave Eddy's team.

At three in the morning, Eddy led the team and departed, making sure to take along Glaston's group of ten as well.

The location of the Knife Work Feast was Sun City's public square. From Rheim Pasture to the destination, one only needed to go through the city gates and two main streets, a roughly forty-minute journey.

However, right after they passed through the city gates, Jiang Nan suddenly began fretting and worrying as he murmured to himself, “Huh? If it’s like that, there might be a slip-up, huh?”

Eddy, who was next to him, was currently very excited, so he did not hear Jiang Nan’s words.

Jiang Nan spoke louder this time, “Aiyah, this truly will bring about a lot of trouble!”

This time, Eddy heard and went slightly blank.

At this moment, Jiang Nan suddenly smacked his forehead, “Not good, not good. This will be a huge inconvenience!”

“Rodi, what is a youngster like you muttering about?”

Eddy finally reacted.

“My dear Mister Eddy, I just realized that we may have overlooked a huge thing for this Knife Work Feast!” Jiang Nan’s arms flailed in panic, “If we cannot resolve it in time, I’m afraid…. The Knife Work Feast will be ruined!”

Eddy was utterly gobsmacked, and said hesitantly: “That can’t be? I’ve taken every little detail regarding the Knife Work Feast into consideration. There shouldn’t….”

“You’ve taken into account every little thing? Mister Eddy, have you factored in their mental state?!”

Jiang Nan turned around and pointed towards Glaston and the rest of them, “If we think about it through their perspective, Mister Eddy, if you were the one who was about to get cut open, right now, what would you be thinking?”

Chapter 061: Qian

“This....”

“You can’t think of anything? Then see if there is a possibility of this happening....” Jiang Nan spoke very earnestly, “A person’s death is a big thing. No person wishes to die a horrible death, and there is definitely no one who wishes for themselves to become materials for a dish to exhibit a person’s knife work. Mister Eddy, what if these people are unwilling to die from being cut open and commit suicide before the Knife Work Feast....”

Eddy let out a hearty laugh, “There’s nothing wrong with that. Even if dead, they will still get cut open!”

“Then what if they mutilate their own bodies beforehand? For example, what if they go berserk and bite off their fingers, then swallow them....”

This was an extreme situation, but there was definitely a chance of it happening!

Eddy’s face distorted.

If a Ghost Totem criminal really threw caution to the wind and destroyed his own body, then the Knife Work Feast.... Would be f***ing finished!

Seeing Eddy’s expression, Jiang Nan patted his shoulder

sympathetically, “Calm down, Mister Eddy. That I can think of this possibility naturally means that I’ve already thought of a way to resolve it. You’ve taken such good care of me, so I’ll help you take care of it!”

“You smelly brat, what solution is there!”

Jiang Nan rubbed his chin: “Give me a few gold coins so I can go buy some live pigs immediately. If that sort of situation really occurs, then we can just use live pigs in place of the Ghost Totem criminals! That way, although the Knife Work Feast might be less exciting, it definitely would not be ruined. What do you think?”

“Using live pigs in place of Ghost Totem criminals….”

Eddy’s chubby face halted a bit, then he suddenly slapped his thigh, “Rodi, you’re right! It’s better safe than sorry! Immediately go and purchase some pigs. I’ll also send out an order right away to make sure that the knife work specialists are prepared to use the dead pigs for substitution!”

“As you* wish!”

Jiang Nan accepted the large bag of money with a beaming smile, then turned and left the team.

Eddy could not really rest assured, “Hey, do you know how to choose the live pigs? I’ll send someone to accompany you….”

“Mister Eddy, have you forgotten what I am?”

Jiang Nan fixed his eyes onto him and put his two hands next to his ears, gesturing in the shape of a fat pig’s ears, “I am but West Farms’ best pig caretaker, so good that people have told me this: Rodi, with you here, no sick pigs will appear! I alone am enough to buy pigs!”

Purchasing pigs was naturally the excuse Jiang Nan was going to use to make an opportunity to challenge Yulianne. However, it was not only an excuse.

Soon, the Knife Work Feast would most certainly be ruined by the freak with the hanging eyeball. At that time, no matter whether or not the freak with the hanging eyeball succeeded, Eddy would lose a portion or or all of the Ghost Totem criminals and face severe punishment!

As such, Jiang Nan prepared an alternative course of action for Eddy so that even in the worst circumstances, he would still have a chance to use the dead pigs to atone for his sins.

This guy, Eddy, has been treating me pretty well this entire time. As his brother, I cannot really harm him, right?

Jiang Nan really did throw himself into the task of purchasing pigs.

At nine in the morning, Jiang Nan had already purchased enough

live pigs and changed into his Professor's disguise.

In order to delay Yulianne by showing off his knife work, Jiang Nan would have to exhibit the fastest speed of his Golden Inch Blade. He did not want people to know that Rodi possessed this sort of knife method, so he prepared to hand the task of delaying Yulianne.... Over to the Professor!

At 9:50 in the morning, the Professor appeared in Sun City's marketplace with a silver mask, and used the remaining gold coins to rent a pig butchering booth.

Everything was in order. However, at this moment, the situation outside Sun City's city gates was another story altogether.

Before Sun City's east city gate was a broad road, wide enough for twelve fine steeds to cross shoulder to shoulder. This road extended from the east city gates all the way into the distance on the level earth. With the terrain so wide and open, one could not even see the road's limits.

At this time, a scarlet, velvet carpet had been rolled out from the east city gates all the way to the end of the horizon, and likewise had no limit!

Madame Suzanne was standing on the red carpet, while Weylin stood shoulder-to-shoulder with her.

This represented Sun City's power ranking, meaning that

Suzanne and Weylin both currently had Sun City's number one expert on their side, so they could stand on equal ground!

Behind these two people were the various representatives of 103 other families, and further beyond this group of representatives.... Was an overwhelming crowd of fanatical people who filled up the entire space from the eastern city gates all the way to the inner district of the city!

Turning her head to glance at the crowd, then glancing at her own head position, Weylin was quite gleeful!

However, she was still a bit confused: Sauron was occupied with tonight's match, so he would not be in the reception's crowd, and therefore had an excuse for his absence.

However....

What about Victor?

This wolf cub had kept bugging her this entire time. Moreover, he had come to Sun City for the purpose of welcoming Yulianne, so why had he not appeared?!

Not to mention, Victor had even said that his father would be coming in these one or two days....

"Little Sister Weylin, what are you thinking about?"

Madame Suzanne interrupted Weylin's thoughts.

"What do *my thoughts have to do with you?" Weylin snorted, "If you must know, wait until my Professor gets rid of Sauron, and then I'll tell you!"

"Aiyah, Little Sister Weylin's little temper~! While speaking in this kind of tone with Big Sister does not matter, make sure you keep from speaking like this when Yulianne comes!" Her tone then changed, "Or else.... Big Sister can only excuse you from this welcoming committee."

"You want to drive me out?" Weylin gave a cold laugh, "If you have the ability, why don't you give it a try? Damn, do you believe that *I'll tell the Professor to smash apart your farm right now?!"

"These two beautiful ladies, it seems that there exists some conflict between you two? Oh, please forgive my abruptness!"

A voice suddenly cut in!

Suzanne and Weylin went blank, then turned their heads around to look. At some unknown time, a team of people with two handsome youths had suddenly appeared behind them.

The first youth was around twenty-seven or twenty-eight years of age and was dressed in formal aristocratic attire of a resplendent gold color. He had a head of short, pale golden hair that curled up

and a physique that shouted money. It was clear that he was born in a wealthy family.

(*TL: He's fat/overweight.)

On the other hand, the second youth seemed a bit sickly. His complexion was an unhealthy pale color, and his seventeen or eighteen year old face unexpectedly revealed signs of excessive alcohol intake. However, he wore a diamond-encrusted crown that clearly showed that he was an influential young master from a great aristocracy.

The person who spoke was precisely the first of the two youths, the overweight one with the golden hair!

Madame Suzanne's eyebrows knitted slightly, but she soon gave a faint laugh, "These two are?"

"I possess the bloodline of the Yellow race, and am surnamed 'Qian'. The two of you may address me as Mister Qian."

(*TL: raw – 黄种人 – literally yellow, but also known as Mongoloid. I'm not sure whether that would work in this context, so it shall be Yellow race for now.)

(*TL: Qian – 钱 – money)

The golden-haired youth bowed with a beaming smile, "Today is the great day of Yulianne's arrival, and I am accompanying this young master to come see the continent's number one beauty. We've arrived in a rude manner, so please forgive us!"

He then pointed towards the red carpet at his feet, “Beautiful ladies, do the two of you mind if we stand here to await Yulianne?”

These two had come for Yulianne?!

Madame Suzanne truly disliked these sort of unexpected situations. However, because she could not ascertain the background of these two youths, she only answered with a slight smile.

However, Weylin, on the other hand, had already blew her top, “Welcoming Yulianne is Sun City’s matter! Have you two lowlives informed us before? Screw off!”

“You dare to scold me? You lowly hick, you actually dare to scold me?!”

The crowned youth’s face suddenly darkened as he pointed towards Weylin and instructed: “Kill!”

Chapter 062: Unicorns And Country Bumpkins

“Young Master, amiability will bring you wealth, amiability will bring you wealth! Telling me to kill someone here.... Probably isn’t too good, right?”

The obese Mister Qian still had a beaming smile on his face, as if the order he had just received was not to kill someone, but rather simply the loss of an ingredient with which to garnish a dish with.

The crowned youth’s face grew even darker, “Qian! I order you to kill this country bumpkin! Do you not hear me?”

“You want to get rid of *me?! Ha!”

As the two youths bickered back and forth, Weylin did not continue idling about. She charged forward and slapped the crowned youth, then kicked him down from the abdomen.

The crowned youth crashed to the ground pathetically!

On the other hand, Mister Qian simply shook his head in vexation, yet still did not intend to attack Weylin or help the youth up.

However, right as the crowned youth toppled to the ground, a corner of his aristocratic attire fluttered upwards, revealing a

golden jade pendant hanging at his waist.

There were also two characters engraved onto it: Janya!

The Janyan Empire?!

Even if Weylin had always lived in a remote area, she immediately connected the dots about the youth's identity: the Janyan Empire was another powerful empire outside of Rheim Empire, and was located northwest of it. Its relationship with Rheim Empire could be summed up in this one sentence: a war per decade, a battle every five years, and an annual border clash!

This youth carried a jade pendant with the name of Janya on it, and with further recollection of the rumors concerning the Janyan Empire's Imperial household....

Damn it all, this wretch was actually the Janyan Empire's crown prince, Kajeer!

But who cares about your identity! That you dare to threaten *me, if *I don't trample you to death, then my name isn't Weylin!

Seeing that Mister Qian was simply watching the excitement unfold and that Kajeer was just an annoying coward, Weylin smacked down the Kajeer who was struggling to climb back to his feet and began pelting him with heavy kicks!

"Weylin! Stop it right this minute!"

Suzanne had also caught sight of Kajeer's jade pendant and hastily held Weylin back, saying urgently: "If Prince Kajeer has come to our country, then he is our country's esteemed guest! Beating up another country's prince, do you want to start a foreign dispute?" She then turned around and helped up Kajeer, saying pleasantly: "Aiyah, I didn't think that the Prince of Janya would actually come here! We've truly failed in welcoming you. Your Highness, you wish to receive Yulianne? Please, please, this way! Please stand at the very front of our welcoming committee!"

Madame Suzanne wanted to smooth things over, but neither of the two parties wished to acknowledge her intent.

"You lowly country bumpkin, get your filthy hands away!" Prince Kajeer pushed Madame Suzanne away and once again pointed to Weylin, commanding Mister Qian, "Qian, I order you to kill her!"

In response, Weylin simply punched Kajeer's nose bridge in and then snarled in Madame Suzanne's direction, "This damned lowlife, so what if it's another nation's prince?! Did you forget? The Janyan Empire has exacted more than eight years of invasions and killed millions of our fellow citizens. Being courteous to him.... Damn it, the blood of the Empire is destroyed in the hands of your group of so-called peacemakers!"

Pa!

Weylin finished speaking, but her fist did not actually land on

Kajeer.

Mister Qian intercepted Weylin's fist and said in a troubled manner: "This Miss here, I'm sure this is enough, right? If you continue beating him up, Prince Kajeer will die.... Ai, this will cause quite a lot of trouble for me. Are *you aware? Kajeer's father paid me a huge sum of gold coins in order to protect Kajeer's life. It doesn't really matter if you injure or cripple Kajeer, but if you beat him to death.... Tsk, I'll just have to take action."

Mister Qian's palm was flabby and seemed to be soft and powerless, yet the arm of Weylin's that had been grabbed onto had already begun to ache. Occasionally, she could also detect a boundless and overwhelming pressure flashing from Mister Qian's eyes!

"She's come, she's come!"

"Yulianne has arrived!"

Amidst this group's dispute, a horse-drawn carriage slowly appeared in the horizon.

To be more precise, this was not a horse-drawn carriage.

This was a unicorn-drawn carriage!

A snow-white unicorn with a mysteriously black horn at the middle of its forehead led a carriage, its four hooves prancing as if

they were dark clouds upon snow. This unicorn-drawn carriage slowly traveled along the red carpet, while a meter tall cart shaft rotated around and around. To one's surprise, the mechanism did not make the slightest noise either. The carriage was snow-white in appearance and encased in a light muslin that was slightly discernable. One could also faintly see a figure's graceful posture within.

The only thing that disrupted this harmonious image was the driver; he was a burly Beastman with a head of gold fur, a pair of golden eyes, and a lion's mane of golden hair that rested on either side of his temples. This was shockingly a royal member of the Beastman race, the Golden Lion King!

To let a royal member of the Beastman race drive one's carriage....

Good heavens!

The country bumpkins of Sun City suddenly felt as though their breathing became a bit laborious.

Under the pressure this grand air of nobility brought, only Kajeer expressed indifference, to the point that there was even a hint of contempt and disdain.

He viciously glared at Weylin, then tidied his clothes and slowly strode to block the carriage's way, "Beautiful Miss Yulianne, I sincerely welcome your arrival to Sun City on behalf of the Janyan Empire. At the same time, if there is a possibility, we hope that the

next stop of your continental travel will be the Janyan Empire."

Oh!

The minds of the ignorant residents of Sun City flashed with realization. No wonder the Crown Prince of the Janyan Empire would appear in Sun City. He was here in representation of the Janyan Empire to sincerely invite Yulianne to come and visit Janya with his identity as Crown Prince.

The person within the carriage seemed not to have heard what Kajeer said, and the carriage continued to be driven closer toward Sun City. Only after it passed by Kajeer did a female voice say calmly: "There's no need to go to Janya. If His Highness the Crown Prince could simply be troubled to give Yulianne's respects to Marshal Iron Eye."

Marshal Iron Eye was the military head of the Janyan Empire, the number one expert!

The only reason why Weylin's grandfather Rondor was only called the Undefeated Legend and not the Unsurpassed Legend was because several years before, Marshal Iron Eye had fought him to a draw!

Giving one's respects to Marshal Iron Eye was a courtesy between peak experts, but....

Why did she only pay her respects to Iron Eye? Did she simply

treat the Janyan Emperor, the Janyan government, and the several hundred Janyan high-ranking officials as though they did not exist?

Kajeer coldly snorted, “Miss Yulianne! I will relay your greeting. However, I’d still like to ask you to step out of the carriage so that we can engage in discussion concerning the details of etiquette regarding your visitation to my country!”

Step out?!

The person within the carriage suddenly laughed, while the Golden Lion King simply spoke frankly, “You want our family’s Miss to step down?! Preposterous! The Janyan Empire has yet to possess the qualifications to make our family’s Miss step out. Only one person can—Marshal Iron Eye!”

His underlying meaning was this: You…. are not yet qualified!

“Miss Yulianne!”

Kajeer was infuriated, and stepped out to grab ahold of the unicorn’s reins in an attempt to force Yulianne to step out.

Yet right at this moment, the Golden Lion suddenly gave a muffled snort, shooting out two cyclones from his nostrils. In a flash, he knocked Kajeer flying!

“Ai, only amiability will bring you wealth. Why must one start

fighting the moment of the meeting?”

The obese Mister Qian caught Kajeer.

“Mister Qian?!”

The person within the carriage suddenly let out a sound of surprise, and then....

She actually stepped out of the carriage! In a white gown and a silver wrought mask, she stepped on the cart’s shaft and directed a bow in Mister Qian’s direction, “I did not think that Mister Qian would actually be here. Yulianne has behaved poorly!”

She came out!

She actually came out!

The country bumpkins all inhaled sharply. Although Yulianne did not step off the carriage, that she was willing to show herself and greet the man could only mean one thing!

In Yulianne’s eyes, although Mister Qian’s status was not equal to Marshal Iron Eye and the Undefeated Legend, it was not a large difference!

Mister Qian’s face knitted together in bitterness as the pudgy flesh on his face twitched, “Ai, I’m such an unfortunate person to

have to do business for others after taking their money. Iron Eye gave me a huge sum of money and entrusted Kajeer's protection to me, which is why I came...." He chuckled, "Miss Yulianne, how about you give me some face~ Just let Kajeer go for now. I assure you that he will quickly disappear!"

Yulianne returned to the carriage's interior.

Mister Qian gave a faint smile, then dragged Kajeer into the city gates.

Kajeer continued to argue on the way: "Qian! What are you doing! I came to invite Yulianne, but I've still not finished my task...."

"My dear Prince Kajeer, there might be an interesting show to watch later on." Mister Qian's smile contained a certain degree of mystery, "First come with me for now. I guarantee that you will definitely be able to finish your task!"

He turned his head to look at Yulianne's unicorn-drawn carriage and suddenly rubbed his fingers together in silent laughter, seeming as though he was a.... Cheating businessman who had just discovered an unknown commercial opportunity!

Chapter 063: Sun City's Pig Slaughtering Legend (1)

The mood of the members of Sun City's Welcoming Committee could be described in one phrase: ashamed!

A royal member of the Beastman race was Yulianne's carriage driver, and not even the prestige of Kajeer's identity as Crown Prince of a nation could make Yulianne step out of the carriage!

Even Mister Qian, a mysterious expert who was close to being on par with Marshal Iron Eye, could only receive a greeting from Yulianne while she was atop the carriage....

Good heavens!

What face do we country bumpkins have to speak with Yulianne, huh?!

However....

The chance to view the Tortoiseshell of Destiny could not be abandoned!

"Esteemed royal member of the Great Plains...."

Madame Suzanne thickened her skin and stepped out. She did not dare to speak directly to Yulianne, so she simply spoke softly to

the Golden Lion to explain her identity. She then implored: “We have already prepared a welcoming feast. It is just in the city square, so if *you would take a look....”

The Beastman nodded, “My family’s Miss will arrive soon. For now, please move out of the way. You are also aware of my family’s Miss’ rules!”

This was Yulianne’s rule: as the continent’s number one knife work chef, every time she traveled to a new place, she made it a priority to visit the location’s marketplace and check the place’s culinary achievements.

Madame Suzanne hastily instructed everybody to open up a path, then intended to take her group to follow behind Yulianne.

However, at this moment, the Beastman suddenly shot a cold glare in Suzanne’s direction.

Clearly, Yulianne favored peace and quiet, so she did not wish for a large team of people and horses following behind her.

Frightened by this glare, Suzanne hastily announced, “Aiyah, since Miss Yulianne likes peace and quiet.... Everybody, listen! All of you will go to the city’s public square and wait! Nobody is allowed to disturb Miss Yulianne’s peace of mind!”

The unicorn-drawn carriage was slowly led into Sun City.

“This woman is pretty f***ing bit**y!”

Staring distantly at the figure of the unicorn-drawn carriage, Weylin viciously spat.

“That’s right. It seems that it will not be easy to receive Yulianne....” Out of everyone’s expectations, Madame Suzanne actually felt the same way as Weylin for the first time. The two women then blew up fiercely and shouted together: “What are you staring blankly there for? Immediately go to the city square! Those three hundred Ghost Totem lowlives are already congregated there, and the Knife Work Feast is soon to commence! Hmph, *I don’t believe that the Knife Work Feast which we took great pains to prepare would fail to acquire Yulianne’s favor!”

Sun City’s marketplace was a narrow, three hundred meter long road of business and trade. Like many other food marketplaces, the air was suffused with the thick and pungent smell of meat and fish, while the ground was covered in the remnant blood of slaughtered pigs and sheep along with mud. Additionally, there was a mess of rotten greens mixed with chicken and duck excrement that had been blended together by the multitudes of feet stepping through.

As it walked along this road, the snow white unicorn shook its head and huffed in frustration. In her heart, she was complaining: This damned place! It’s already dirtied my four hooves!

However, what was fortunate was that it was currently ten o’clock in the morning on New Year’s Day. For this reason, a portion of the peddlers and merchants had already gotten their busy morning work over with and had already returned home to

pass the holiday. Another portion of these merchants and peddlers had gone to the stadium in advance to experience for themselves the tense atmosphere before the Professor and Sauron's match.

As such, there was only a meager amount of merchants on the street marketplace, making the unicorn's journey much smoother!

Crunch, crunch.

Following the crunching sounds of the carriage running over gravel, the Golden Lion knitted his eyebrows, "Miss, do we still need to keep looking? Just by looking at this marketplace, one can tell how inferior the culinary achievements here are!"

"Let's just look some more...."

The person within the carriage sighed in disappointment.

The carriage continued to advance. Along the road, the merchants had already been talked to by Madame Suzanne, so none of them dared to come and disturb Yulianne. They all diligently crouched at their own booths,those who slaughtered, slaughtering, and those who butchered, butchering.

Gradually, the carriage had already arrived towards the end of the market. At this time, only a pig meat peddler was left doing his work at a storefront.

"En?"

After glancing at this final pig peddler, the Golden Lion let out a contemptuous snort!

This pig meat peddler was quite unique: other pig peddlers all bared their arms, wore large trousers, large boots, and wrapped an apron of greased cloth around their chests. However, this pig peddler was dressed in a black, tight-fitting gown, and even wore a silver mask on his face.

Furthermore, from the smooth skin on his two hands and neck, one could deduce that he was extremely young.

At this moment, the pig peddler was leading out a live pig from the storehouse and was just about to begin cutting it open.

Seeing this peddler's dissection method, the Golden Lion stifled a laugh, which turned into an extremely vexed, extremely disbelieving, extremely ridiculous.... Strange laugh!

Good heavens, was this slaughtering a pig?

To slaughter a pig, one ought to begin cutting from the neck, then follow along the bone structure to continue the process. This sort of method was advantageous for speed, and enabled a person to dissect a live pig in several minutes. Even Yulianne was able to cut apart a live pig in twenty-seven seconds this way!

However....

Looking at this pig peddler's method, he held two tapered, nondescript knives in his hands while staring blankly at the dead pig before him. This stare itself lasted around five to six seconds, and made him look like a calm and carefree fool. It could truly be said to be a look of dismay, like a tortoise staring at a mung bean!

(*TL: Supposedly, a tortoise's eyes is the same size as a mung bean, so to stare at it, it needs to fully open its eyes and then look at it, which is similar to staring off into space or staring blankly.)

Soon after, the pig peddler yelled out an 'Ah!' in an exaggerated manner and leapt up like a frog. Following this jumping motion, his two hands stuck out and stabbed the two small knives into the dead pigs.... rear end?!

Correct, its rear end!

The Golden Lion began laughing so hard he could not close his mouth anymore.

However, this pig peddler's performance had not yet concluded: he stirred the two small knives which were stuck into the dead pig's rear end for a moment, then abruptly pulled them out and leapt up again.

"Ah! Ah! Ah! Take that~~~~!"

While in the middle of the air, the pig peddler suddenly tossed up his two small knives. As he began falling towards to the ground, he

twisted his hands and caught the two knives, then began slashing in a messy and disorderly manner as he stabbed randomly into the dead pig's body.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

What was interesting, however, was that this disorderly and confusing knife method actually stabbed out in a rhythmic manner, and the Golden Lion involuntarily began counting, One, two, three....

This peddler's knife work was not very quick, and it seemed that he stabbed out only three times within two seconds or so. When the Golden Lion had counted to twenty-seven, it had not been more than twenty seconds.

Phew....

The peddler exhaled loudly, then held the two knives at his back as if he was a supreme expert who had just finished working, and looked coldly in disdain at the dead pig!

The dead pig, on the other hand....

Was completely intact. The only thing was that its body had twenty-some additional holes from the knife stabs!

"Hah, haha!"

The Golden Lion finally could not take it anymore and began roaring with laughter. As he guffawed, he patted the unicorn, “Let’s go! It’s still better that we go attend that welcoming feast. Miss, it seems that the culinary knife work level in Sun City…. Ai, it’s more suited for a circus!”

“Wait a moment!”

The person within the carriage suddenly opened her mouth. Her tone of voice was very solemn and filled with disbelief! “Please have this man…. No, have this gentleman…. No, have this great master invited over!”

This sentence in which she changed her term of address three times left the Golden Lion astonished and dumbfounded! Yet, Yulianne even said, “This person’s knife work skill is rarely seen in this world! Such a great master cannot be neglected! Yulianne…. Will personally pay her respects!”

A graceful figure adorned with a silver mask stepped out of the carriage in a white gown. She came before the pig slaughtering booth and gave a sudden, deep bow, her two hands cupped together before her chest as she spoke in a light voice, “Great master, this young one, Yulianne, is fortunate to have seen Great Master’s knife work skill. I do not know if may have the fortune of having an audience with the Great Master and asking for guidance concerning my culinary knife skill?”

Chapter 064: Sun City's Pig Slaughtering Legend (2)

The Golden Lion was completely gobsmacked!!!

A nation's prince could not make Yulianne step out of her carriage!

A mysterious expert could only make Yulianne greet him from atop the carriage!

Even the Undefeated Legend and Marshal Iron Eye could only get a word of greeting from her!

However, now....

Yulianne was bowing! She was respectfully and deferentially bowing to formally pay her respects to a pig peddler!

The most unimaginable thing was this: that pig peddler acted as though he did not see Yulianne and simply threw down his knives in a sloppy manner, turning around....

And leaving!

He actually ignored Yulianne, actually ignored the number one knife work chef on the continent, actually ignored the continent's number one Blade Knight. He actually ignored.... The continent's

number one beauty?!?!

“Halt!”

The golden Lion pressed down on the pig peddler’s shoulder, “Did you not hear my family’s Miss speaking to you?! Do you know who my family’s Miss is?!”

“Calm down, Mister….”

The pig peddler looked askance at the Golden Lion, then slowly and deliberately pointed out one finger, “My first question: is this road the private estate of your family?”

The Golden Lion went blank, then shook his head.

“My second question. Is your family’s Miss the Emperor of Rheim Empire, or Sun City’s City Lord?”

“She is neither!”

“My third question. Am I a servant of your family’s Miss?”

The Golden Lion furrowed his eyebrows, “You are not….”

“Then why are you blocking me for?!”

The pig peddler pointed towards his chest and began speaking in a rude and foreign manner, “Mister, puh-lease! I’m just an honest citizen who observes the law and carries out his duties. First of all, I don’t steal, second of all, I don’t rob, and third of all, I’m not the servant of some family’s miss. If I want to leave, then I’ll leave! Does it have any kind of bullsh** relationship with you?!”

He turned and continued walking.

The Golden Lion was so startled that he could not speak!

That’s right! On what basis was he obstructing someone else? The other party was simply slaughtering and selling pig meat here. The person did not break the law, nor did they provoke himself. He, he, what reason did he have to obstruct someone else?!

After sulking for a while, the Golden Lion noticed that the person had already walked afar off and said urgently: “Hey, I don’t have a reason to hold you back, but my family’s Miss is Yulianne!”

“Yulianne? You mean the Yulianne who holds the title as the continent’s number one beauty?”

The man reluctantly turned his head around and glanced at Yulianne.

Yulianne, on the other hand, was still in the bowing position before his pig stall!

“So you’re Yulianne?”

The pig peddler came before Yulianne.

“It is precisely this one!”

(*TL: She’s speaking in a humble way, and I don’t really know how to denote it.)

Yulianne gave a slight smile.

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

Right at this moment, the sound of a severe explosion rang out from Sun City’s public square!

A small scale cannon! This was a small scale cannon placed within the city for military use!

Following the sound of the explosion, one could see that a huge clock displayed the time…. 10:01 in the morning!

The freak with the hanging eyeball had already begun rescuing the three hundred Ghost Totem criminals!

“Keke!”

(*TL: sound of the freak’s laughter or the noise he makes. Pinyin would be ‘jie-jie’, and this sort of laughter is supposedly usually used for a person who is laughing sinisterly)

A black mist enshrouded the entire city square, and the freak with the hanging eyeball seemed similar to a ferocious demon of the night as he floated in mid air, sprinkling out a purplish blue liquid relentlessly!

On the ground, there were people holding up umbrellas and hiding under the buildings’ eaves. However, no matter where they hid, the purplish blue liquid would let out a ‘tss-tss’ sound as it corroded all obstructing materials and proceeded to land on people’s heads.

The two leaders of this activity, Madame Suzanne and Weylin, were both hiding in the vicinity of Talik and his executioners. At this moment, the only place still keeping calm was Talik’s group of executioners!

“Ghost Totem, it’s that son of a b**** Ghost Totem master!” Weylin roared in desperation, “Suzanne, *I told you to use the Ghost Totem criminals to prepare for the Knife Work Feast. Great! Now can you see what trouble it’s brought?!”

“Weylin, now isn’t the time to be grumbling!”

Madame Suzanne's face had drained of all color as she yelled out: "Soldiers, soldiers! All of Sun City's guard soldiers, move out! Weylin, call out the Professor! I'll immediately go look for Sauron!"

"Is that any use?!"

Weylin pointed towards the sky and howled: "Look at that guy's strength! Even if you called out all the experts in Sun City, they would only be sending themselves to death! Son of a b****, the only person who can hold him back is...."

Speaking up till here, Weylin's eyes suddenly lit up.

Madame Suzanne's eyes also lit up as both of them shouted out in unison, "Yulianne! Hurry up and ask Yulianne to come over and help!"

After hearing this shout in the air, the freak with the hanging eyeball trembled. However, even after looking in all directions, Yulianne.... Actually hadn't come!

Kek! As expected, Rodi was reliable!

He had already held off Yulianne!

"My fellow comrades...." The freak with the hanging eyeball spread out his arms in mid air, "Right now, I need a helper...."

“With my name as Glaston, Ghost Totem criminals, congregate!”

Glaston stood up as he bore the 150 kilogram cangue and a drop of liquid just so happened to land on his fetters. With a crack, the fetters disintegrated, and the freed Glaston remained as calm as before as he commanded fiercely: “Those previously soldiers, step out!”

Several tens of Ghost Totem criminals stepped out and the liquid that diffused through the air promptly dissolved their chains.

With his back towards the veterans, he pointed in an imposing manner towards Sun City’s soldiers who had already fallen into disarray as his long hair fluttered in the air, “Imperial Assault Formation, Level Halfmoon, do you still remember?!”

“We remember!”

“Then…. Seize their weapons and kill!”

Kek!

The freak with the hanging eyeball discovered in excitement that under Glaston’s command, three hundred Ghost Totem criminals quickly formed into a powerful current as strong as steel, rumbling as they crushed the Sun City’s guards.

Interesting, interesting. Rodi actually found such a manly general....

The freak with the hanging eyeball was excited, but Suzanne and Weylin had already gone mad, “Yulianne! Your welcoming feast has already been destroyed by someone else! Hurry up and save us!”

On the corner of a street a distance away, Yulianne heard the calls. However....

She did not move!

This was because before her was Jiang Nan, disguised as a pig peddler and sizing her up this way and that.

“So you’re Yulianne?”

Jiang Nan once again asked the same question.

“It is precisely this one!”

Yulianne gave a faint smile once more.

“Are you really Yulianne?”

Yulianne continued smiling.

And then....

Jiang Nan waved his head, “Oh, it’s nothing. You can go now!”

“.....”

“Shameless! Are you playing around with my family’s Miss?!”

The Golden Lion flared up!

“Calm down, Mister Lion. Losing your temper frequently is not good for your digestive system.... Please note that I am not playing around with your family’s Miss....”

Jiang Nan pointed in the direction of the chaotic city square, “Did you not hear that? A huge rebellion has occurred in the city, and they’re currently looking for your family’s Miss to rescue them! If I was to delay you two.... Good heavens! After this day, there would definitely be people falsely accusing me of being an accomplice to the rebellion, accusing me of delaying Yulianne from saving them!”

“The Great Master is thinking too much!” Yulianne gave a slight laugh, “If anyone truly falsely accuses Great Master, Yulianne will clear up the facts for you: Today, it is of Yulianne’s own initiative that she pays her respects to the Great Master, rather than the Great Master deliberately stalling for time!”

Huh!!

This woman Yulianne was pretty damn sensible!

Jiang Nan's face seemed to say, 'A good student, worthy of my teaching'. He then sat down and very, very slowly.... Prepared to chat for fifteen more minutes.

Chapter 065: Truth And Falsities (1)

“So it’s Yulianne, huh? Oh, you said that you wanted an audience with me previously…. If you wanted to see me, then you should have just said so~! If you don’t say it, how am I supposed to know that you want to see me? In this situation, you’re in the wrong. If you wanted to see me, then you should have just said so….”

For the sake of stalling for time, Jiang Nan turned one sentence into multiple sentences and talked in a rambling manner as he began his chat with Yulianne.

Yulianne had very good manners, so she simply sat cross-legged before Jiang Nan and silently tolerated the nonsense that spewed out of his mouth like a nosy supermarket granny.

Two minutes later, Jiang Nan suddenly smacked his forehead, “Ai, I’ve talked for so long. Why did you come to see me?”

“Yulianne wishes to seek audience with Great Master for none other than to ask for advice concerning knife work culinary arts.” Yulianne half rose out of her sitting position in a polite manner and smiled.

“Knife work culinary arts?”

Jiang Nan scratched his head, “This brother here can play around with a knife to kill pigs…. But for culinary arts, that isn’t something this brother is good at. It’s fine if you want to ask me about culinary arts, but this brother will just blather without

thinking. If I say something wrong, don't blame me~!" He halted for a bit, "If you blame me, there's nothing this brother here can do. However, you're the great and exalted number one Blade Knight on the continent, and you're a strong person who can off me with just one finger! Even if this brother here says something wrong, you wouldn't bother with it, would you? If you were to bother with it, this brother here can't do anything about it, but you...."

What the f***!

Was this pig peddler a meddling old granny in his past life?

The Golden Lion's mouth twitched slightly.

Yulianne, however, acted as if nothing was wrong. She politely said in a soft voice, "Great Master is too modest," then shifted her beautiful eyes to gaze at the whole and undamaged pig in the booth.

More accurately, she was looking at the twenty-seven knife cuts made on the pig!

"Yulianne has personally seen the Great Master's spectacular knife skills in which a whole pig was dissected with twenty-seven moves of a blade in seventeen seconds.... This sort of miracle is something Yulianne is completely inferior to! As such, Yulianne wishes to inquire of the Great Master exactly what the secret is to this miracle?!"

“The secret huh…. Seven words!”

Yulianne’s starry eyes abruptly flashed, “What seven words?”

“No rush, No rush, do not worry….”

Jiang Nan calmly spat out these seven words. Right as Yulianne sank into astonishment, his eyes opened up wide: “This lady here hasn’t misunderstood me, right?! These seven words are not the secret to killing pigs! This brother here only wished to communicate to you not to rush before I tell you the secret. After all, I still have another question!”

Motherf***er!

This pig peddler was definitely a meddling old granny in his past life!

The Golden Lion’s eyes had gone bloodshot!

However, Yulianne’s expression was the same as before! She calmly answered: “The Great Master may ask as he pleases! Yulianne will not keep anything back!”

“This brother just wants to clarify something. You swore before an entire crowd that you would marry any man whose knife skills were faster than yours…. Is this true or false?”

“Yulianne did indeed make such an oath!”

“Oh, then didn’t you just say before that you were inferior to my knife skills? In other words, you admitted…. That the knife skills of this brother is faster than yours, right?!”

After he said this, Jiang Nan’s eyes glittered with a light that could only be described as dubious. His eyes jumped around on Yulianne’s body, the rate at which they darted around surprisingly similar to that of the rhythm belonging to lively and upbeat Latin dance music.

Yulianne laughed.

Her response was something which Jiang Nan could not really make heads or tails of, “The Great Master’s knife work is indeed faster than mine!”

Her tone then grew cold, “Great Master, can you now instruct Yulianne regarding the seven-word formula?!”

As she said these words, Yulianne’s eyes flashed with an icy gleam that caused people’s hearts to palpitate.

If he continued rambling on….

This lady would probably lose it!

“The formula to slaughtering pigs is only seven words….”

Jiang Nan calculated that it was more or less about time and suddenly stood up, backing away as he spoke, “Steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade!”

“Steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade!

Yulianne digested these seven words, a bit of puzzlement filling her beautiful eyes.

Several seconds later, her starry eyes blossomed with the radiance of pleasant surprise. She then stood up and bowed in Jiang Nan’s direction, “Many thanks to the Great Master’s advice! Yulianne…. Has benefited from this teaching!”

Steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade!

These seven words were not some nonsensical rubbish that Jiang Nan had just blathered out randomly!

After deceiving Yulianne for a whole ten minutes, if he could not reveal some true ability, would Yulianne allow him to leave peacefully?!

These seven words were the essence of the Golden Inch Blade!

What?!

Professor Jiang actually revealed the essence of the Golden Inch Blade to someone else?

No rush, no rush, do not worry....

To reveal a major truth, Jiang Nan had never actually considered the Golden Inch Blade to be a secret. The first reason was because for the sake of maintaining a model appearance, if he knew about something good, he would never mind imparting it to his students.

Of course, this was under the condition that the students made Jiang Nan sufficiently satisfied.

And this was the other reason....

If you assumed that human anatomy only consisted of some gaudy knife work, then you would have made a mistake! A big mistake, a huge mistake!

The Golden Inch Blade that was incomparably fast and as fast as lightning was only a trifling skill!

Jiang Nan's expertise was in the analysis of the human composition!

Extrapolating the mysteries of life from a dissected body was Jiang Nan's special ability, a unique secret that he would never

reveal under any circumstances!

Ai!

It's a pity now that this brother here has landed on this crazy Yuanzhi Continent. There really isn't any opportunity for me to show off....

Jiang Nan slipped into an alleyway while shaking his head.

"Miss, why are you being so courteous with this scoundrel?"

Right as Jiang Nan left, the Golden Lion blew up resentfully: "This person did not speak frankly and simply prattled on nonsensically. Don't tell me that he truly is capable of such quick knife work?!"

"Do you still not understand?" Yulianne's gaze continued to linger in the direction of Jiang Nan's disappearance as she answered unhurriedly: "How can this person's blade simply be described with the word 'quick'.... If you still do not understand, then go take a look at that pig."

"What's so good about this pig?"

The Golden Lion came to the whole and unblemished pig, poking at one of the holes made from the twenty-seven cuts, "In any case, I can't make sense of it, so what can this pig show me? If we're talking about something strange, it's that blood isn't flowing from

these incisions. This is much more bizarre.... Good heavens, Miss, is he still human?!”

Rumble!

The instant the Golden Lion touched the incision, the whole and unblemished pig toppled to the ground like a collapsed city wall. It immediately fell apart and landed in a heap of pig organs!

Muscle, bone, skin, viscera.... Various body parts tumbled down in a neat manner and arranged themselves into groups as they fell onto the ground.

The most unbelievable thing was that the pig’s main arteries were nearly all whole and undamaged. Only two spots tore open, allowing the slaughtered pig’s blood to rocket into the air and spray out like a fountain!

“This is the reason why I revere him!”

Yulianne came before the pig and solemnly picked up a piece from the arrangement, which was as tidy as though the pieces of pig had arranged themselves. “Seventeen seconds, twenty-seven cuts! This man used only seventeen seconds and twenty-seven blade movements to dissect a pig....”

“Seventeen seconds, twenty-seven blade movements.... Miss, how did he do it?”

“It’s very simple: this person’s execution of the blade is actually not quick. At most, he can only slash out two or three blades per second…. However, his understanding of the pig’s body is like that of his hand!” Yulianne picked up yet another bone, “Look at this bone. If I wanted to separate the flesh from the bone like this, I would need to use at least thirty blade movements! However, that person understood that pig’s skeleton and flesh far too well. He located the correct point and cut there. With just one cut, he separated the flesh from the bone…. One cut. With just one cut, he did something that I would need thirty cuts to complete, so you tell me! Can this person’s dissecting speed not be fast?!”

The Golden Lion’s mouth was turned in a bitter way, “Then what he said just before: steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade, what did that mean?”

Yulianne remained silent.

She then laughed, “Actually, I myself do not understand. However, I can faintly feel that that phrase represents a realm of knife work skill. Right now, I can only engrave those words in my heart and pass it on to her. Perhaps…. She can truly understand the meaning of these words!”

The Golden Lion nodded as if he did yet did not understand, then knitted his eyebrows and bitterly asked, “Miss, the knife work speed of that person has already prevailed over yours. Don’t tell me that Yulianne will really marry….”

Chapter 066: Truth And Falsities (2)

“As long as this person’s knife work is faster than Yulianne’s, Yulianne will definitely marry him!”

Yulianne spoke in a resolute and decisive manner. However, a trace of craftiness could clearly be seen radiating from her eyes, “However…. Is this man’s knife work truly faster than Yulianne’s?”

The Golden Lion went blank, then began laughing heartily.

Yulianne stepped onto the carriage, “Let us go. Someone has ruined my welcoming feast. If I still do not show up, Sun City will go into an uproar.”

The unicorn-drawn carriage slowly made its way to Sun City’s public square.

Jiang Nan’s speed, on the other hand, was a bit faster than Yulianne’s. He had already seen the state of Sun City’s public square.

More accurately speaking, what Jiang Nan saw was this: ruins in every which way and city guards and soldiers wailing and sobbing as they held their feet and their heads.

While the liquid poison which the freak with the hanging eyeball sprinkled in the air was not fatal, after it landed on people’s heads,

it would immediately disintegrate the person's entire head of hair and scald out a pattern like that of a toad's bumpy skin; if one stepped on remnant poison by mistake, then.... The toad-like pattern would appear on the bottom of their feet.

In the center of this group of people whose heads and feet now possessed toad-like skin, Weylin and Madame Suzanne seemed particularly distinct.

Under the protection of Talik and his executioners, their bodies had not gotten injured.

However, they were very hurt on the inside, extremely hurt....

Gazing at the ruined site of the welcoming feast, Madame Suzanne felt like crying, but had no tears to cry out, "Little Sister Weylin, let bygones be bygones and let us think of a way! The welcoming feast has been destroyed, Yulianne will not be pleased, and His Majesty the Emperor will be infuriated. We.... we are in trouble!"

Weylin's face had also gone deathly pale, "Even if you ask me, who would I ask? Just wait. Even if the Professor helps me take back Mount Longinus tonight, Clan Headquarters won't let me off either.... Suzanne, I can't f***ing take the fact that I'm going down with you!"

Just several minutes before, the freak with the hanging eyeball led the three hundred Ghost Totem criminals and killed their way out of Sun City. At the same time, they destroyed Madame

Suzanne's painstakingly prepared welcoming feast site in passing!

"Calm down, you two beautiful ladies. Frustration is not good for your bodies, truly...."

With a silver mask on his face, Jiang Nan walked over in his Professor's disguise with a beaming smile.

"Professor? You actually have the face to come over?!" The moment she glanced at Jiang Nan, Madame Suzanne's face shifted and darkened as she criticized him: "Don't you know? Because you did not come in a timely manner, the welcoming feast was utterly ruined!"

Huh?!

Is this woman shirking her responsibility and preparing to place all the fault on this brother?

Jiang Nan had guessed correctly. Madame Suzanne was going to try anything in this sort of crisis, and whoever she seized, she would dump the blame on that person. She berated him in a severe voice, "Professor, you must pay a price for your conduct today! Someone, come! First incarcerate the Professor, then escort him to the Imperial Capital. Ask that His Majesty the Emperor puts him on trial for the crime of 'delayed support and neglecting Yulianne!"

"Suzanne, I'll f** your mother!" Weylin shot to her feet, "You want to pass the bucket? Keep dreaming! If we're talking about

untimely support, your Sauron....”

“Calm down, Miss Weylin. I understand your intent to pay your respects to Suzanne’s mother, but....” Jiang Nan glanced at Weylin’s lower body in total seriousness and concern, “But, do *you have this capability?!”

With a whoosh, Suzanne’s face went red. Weylin, on the other hand, glared at Jiang Nan, her face saying, “You rogue, you actually dare to take liberties with *me?”

However, Professor Jiang did not feel the slightest bit like a rogue, and instead spoke in a deliberately slow manner, “En, the site for the welcoming feast has been destroyed. Yulianne will not be pleased, and His Majesty the Emperor will be infuriated. In this situation, a person truly will have to take the blame. However.... My dear Miss Weylin, as your most competent worker, I have already arranged everything for you. Today, everybody may be put to death in His Majesty the Emperor’s fury. However, you, and only you, will not be punished.... On the contrary, it is even possible for *you to receive a commendation from His Majesty the Emperor!”

Weylin went blank, “Professor, you’re not joking, right? Why would His Majesty commend me?!”

“You will know in several minutes....”

Jiang Nan’s laughter was quite enigmatic as he mixed into the ranks of the injured on the large street.

Crunch, crunch!

Yulianne's carriage had finally arrived. As expected, when the Golden Lion saw the ruins strewn about, he immediately furrowed his eyebrows, "Hmph! A nice welcoming feast this is!"

"Yulianne, you f***ing dare to complain to us? Just before, only you were capable of beating back that freak whose hanging eyeball hang out like a dick, yet why didn't you come?!"

(*TL: Yes, what she is saying means dick, and in quite a vulgar way too. It's quite offensive to say it to women, although I don't know about others since I'm not sure about the banter that goes on in China and in the different regions.)

Weylin wished to launch in a barrage of curses just like that, but the words stopped at her mouth. She and Madame Suzanne both lowered their heads, and Madame Suzanne herself pleaded: "Honored Miss Yulianne, beautiful Miss Yulianne, we simply ran into something a bit unexpected just before. *You...."

"Please do not blame us!" Weylin scrambled to talk, "If *you could just wait, ten minutes! Within ten minutes, we will definitely prepare an even grander welcoming feast for *you! Please forgive us...."

"Huh!!! Weylin, did not this brother tell you?? Today, anyone can apologize to Yulianne, but only you cannot!"

Jiang Nan popped out from within the injured ranks and stood up!

The moment she saw the Jiang Nan who was dressed in his Professor's disguise, Yulianne's beautiful eyes flashed with a gleam of pleasant surprise.

The Great Master was actually here! Heh, I actually thought that he was not willing to divulge his name because after imparting that seven word incantation, he just left!

The Golden Lion also restrained his expression of unbridled arrogance to complete reverence. Weylin, however, grew panicked, "Professor, Yulianne is here! Don't f***ing speak your nonsense!"

Suzanne had also gone nearly insane from panic. She maintained her face as an aristocratic madam with difficulty, then coldly berated him: "Professor! Not only did you not provide support in a timely manner, you even spoke rudely before Lady Yulianne! You, what charge should you bear!" After she said this, she swivelled around and bowed towards Yulianne and explained fearfully: "If your distinguished self could forgive us, please excuse us!"

"That.... Yulianne, they both say that this brother here is guilty. What do you think?"

Jiang Nan glanced at Yulianne from the corner of his eye. In comparison to the others' frenetic appearances, he seemed to be an ignorant idiot that had just come from outer space!

However, Yulianne stepped out of her carriage instead and directed a bow towards Jiang Nan, saying in a light voice: “What crime can the Great Master be guilty of?!”

Gobsmacked!

Weylin was utterly gobsmacked!

Suzanne was utterly gobsmacked!

Several thousand injured soldiers were utterly gobsmacked!

All of Sun City was gobsmacked!

Amidst these dazed and blank expressions, Yulianne continued speaking, “Yulianne cannot thank Great Master enough and is indebted to Great Master for his instruction! The only thing that is unknown…. Is why Great Master is in this place?!

“This brother here huh…. Ai, I’ll just speak truthfully then!”

Jiang Nan went to stand next to Weylin and patted her shoulder as he spoke, “In truth, this brother here is Miss Weylin’s subordinate! Just before, the knife work I performed for you was arranged by my family’s Miss. It was just a bit of a unique…. Welcoming ceremony!”

“A wonderfully unique welcoming ceremony!”

Yulianne’s tone was light and springy, revealing that she was in an extremely good mood. In the process of esteeming Jiang Nan, she conveniently heightened her impression of Weylin and took a few additional looks!

“So it was Miss Weylin. Many thanks for your creative and original welcoming ceremony.” Yulianne gave a slight bow to Weylin, “It is Yulianne’s fortune to have gotten acquainted with Miss’ subordinate. Would it be possible for Yulianne to have the honor of temporarily residing at Miss’ side residence and asking Great Master’s guidance each day?”

(*TL: The word is 别院, and basically refers to the subordinate and adjoining residence to the main residence.)

She actually bowed towards me?!

She, she even wants to live at my home?!

A warm and fuzzy current swept through Weylin from the top of her head to the tips of her toes. All she could feel was that the sun at this moment was really f***ing glorious! Hastily taking several steps backward and demonstrating the appearance of an aristocratic miss, she answered, “Cough! That Miss Yulianne is willing to reside at Weylin’s side residence is Weylin’s honor. If you could please.... This woman’s side residence is located at the Sixth Block!”

After only speaking half an aristocrat’s response, Weylin’s innate

disposition soon exposed itself. She then turned her head around and glared viciously at Jiang Nan, “Professor! What exactly did you f***ing get yourself into now?!”

(*TL: in terms of how she refers to herself – the haughty way of referring to oneself)

Chapter 067: Golden Ghost Butterfly (1)

What did I get myself into?!

Tsk, of course this brother here likes to ‘maximize all benefits’ when getting stuff done~

With a pig slaughtering performance, he saved three hundred Ghost Totem comrades with his identity as a Ghost Totem master himself. As Professor, however, he helped absolve any guilt that might be placed on Weylin’s head and gained the favor of Yulianne. This was making the most out of maximizing the benefits!

Furthermore, Jiang Nan had extracted even greater benefits out of this performance!

After leaving behind the dumbfounded Madame Suzanne, Yulianne and Weylin both departed. Jiang Nan, on the other hand, waved his hand with a dazzling smile, “Ladies and gentleman, this brother here still has a match to attend tonight, so let’s chat tomorrow! If you don’t understand what just happened, you can go ask Yulianne.”

With a turn of his body, he left!

Several minutes later, Jiang Nan changed into his slave clothes and came to the rear end of the city’s public square where the Knife Work Feast was to be prepared.

“Oh my goodness, oh my goodness! Talik, I’m finished!” Eddy was currently standing there ashen-faced as he grabbed onto Talik, pleading: “I did not successfully carry out the Knife Work Feast, Yulianne will not be pleased, and His Majesty the Emperor will butcher me! My dear little Ta-ta, please allow me to call you by this nickname for the last time…. After His Majesty sentences me to death, if you are the one carrying out my execution, you absolutely must make it easy for me! I-I’m just a chef!”

Talik seemed to have not heard Eddy’s pleas. Instead, his expression was gloomy and downcast. After a long moment of silence, he answered, “My old friend Eddy, I’m also to blame in this Knife Work Feast failure! If we’re talking about who’s going to die…. Both you and I will die!”

In truth, half the reason for Talik and Eddy’s arrival to prepare the Knife Work Feast was due to a first-grade classified order from the Rheim Emperor!

Or else, just based on Madame Suzanne’s identity as a country bumpkin, could she invite one of the four great chefs of the Empire and a high-ranking official who was on the same level as a provincial governor?!

However….

The Knife Work Feast had been ruined, and these two people’s futures had also been ruthlessly cut off.

“Calm down, my dear Mister Eddy. Frustration isn’t good for your body, really….”

Jiang Nan’s hands were placed behind his back as he strolled over, “Laugh a little. This brother here recommends that you laugh a little, and you will benefit!”

“Oh my goodness, can *I still laugh right now?!”

Eddy shot to his feet, an unreadable expression on his face. In truth, all three hundred of the knife workers had all come to gather around Eddy, their faces all indiscernible poker faces similar to when a person held a hand of spades.

(*TL: highest suit, although I don’t know what it means in poker because I thought suit doesn’t matter. I’m not super sure what the author is trying to convey about the spades either because the last word is censored.)

“Why can’t you laugh?!”

Jiang Nan face expressed extreme simplicity, “Isn’t it just that the Knife Work Feast is ruined? My dear Mister Eddy, what’s so bad about that? Or is it that you forgot that this brother here…. Had already prepared an alternative course of action?!”

“That’s right! You prepared three hundred dead pigs for me!” Eddy’s eyes lit up, but soon dimmed, “Ai, there’s no use, no use. The situation’s already fallen to this state, so even if you were to give me three hundred more Ghost Totem criminals, it would still be of no use!”

“Tsk, who said that there’s no use?! My dear Mister Eddy, seeing that you’ve taken such good care of me, this brother here will tell you a bit of news from West Farms....”

Jiang Nan lowered the volume of his voice in a mysterious manner, “Weylin made Yulianne quite happy, to the point that Yulianne will go to live at Weylin’s side residence.... Do you still not understand? Alright, I’ll just say it straight out: Mister Eddy! Right now! You must immediately take the knife work team to Weylin’s residence and use the dead pigs to carry out a Knife Work Feast! If Yulianne asks, just say that Miss Weylin arranged it all....”

Eddy was still in a bit of a daze.

“Huh!! Has your brain turned into a pig brain?” Jiang Nan smacked his forehead, deciding to now state it even more simply, “Listen. Right now, the only person who can gain Yulianne’s favor and speak before her is Weylin! If you want to live, then hurry up and ally yourself with Weylin and entertain Yulianne using Weylin’s name! Once Miss Weylin is happy, Yulianne will also be happy, and His Majesty the Emperor will be even happier! As for you all.... You all will be the most joyful!”

“Rodi! Oh, no. My dear little Dee-dee, *I’ll thank you later!”

Eddy seized two pig butchering knives and roared: “Brothers, if you wish to live, then come with *me to team up with Weylin! Go to Weylin’s residence and carry out the Knife Work Feast there!”

Three hundred people dashed towards Weylin's courtyard residence with a whoosh.

Ai!

Pig-brained they are, a group of pig-brained people....

Jiang Nan sighed, then yelled out towards Eddy's receding figure: "The pigs! The dead pigs I've prepared for you are all located at the marketplace on the Third Block! The pigs! Don't forget to bring the pigs!"

"Got it!"

Eddy was already long gone, and as for Jiang Nan.... Currently, all of Sun City was in chaos, so who would bother with an insignificant slave?

This morning, this brother here has been easy huh!

(*TL: basically, easily taken advantage of.)

I'll just take it as doing good to accumulate merits then!

Jiang Nan thought in vexation.

It truly was doing good and accumulating merits! At this moment, nearly all of Sun City felt gratitude towards Jiang Nan.

As he ran, Eddy also communicated to Talik, “Little Ta-ta, this Rodi is quite a fine youngster! *I don’t care anymore! Once we’re done with this Knife Work Feast, no matter what, I’ll definitely send him to the Imperial Culinary Institute to thank him!”

On the other hand, Weylin had already escorted Yulianne to her residence. She then turned her head and whispered to Lola, “Hey, you lowly girl, after the Professor joined us, has he gotten his wages yet? Prepared three thousand gold coins for *me! *I’m going to reward him handsomely!”

Even the disappointed Madame Suzanne....

“Ai, it seems that my life is safe for now....”

Madame Suzanne left the city square and came to a private room in the Elegant Forest Restaurant. Sauron, who had the match tonight, was currently in there, and Suzanne grumbled in frustration: “What a pity, what a pity that the Professor is destined to die, or else.... I would truly wish to give him my thanks face to face!”

“Kek! Rodi, this fellow, is pretty good! He’s really pretty good!”

In the outskirts of Sun City within a hidden valley, the freak with the hanging eyeball was currently thanking Rodi as well.

And right opposite the freak with the hanging eyeball were the

three hundred Ghost Totem criminals who seemed to have gone completely crazy!

"Free! We're free!"

"Father, mother, you can rest in peace! Your son was not cut open by others, your son still lives!"

Three hundred people freely exclaimed in their excitement to the point that they nearly went into a frenzy!

However, amidst this feverish atmosphere, Glaston stood silently under a large tree, gazing at the horizon's white clouds. A few chilly breezes swept over the treetops and fallen snow, making his figure which could not be described as very tall, to the point that it could even be described as skinny, even more desolate.

Free!

That's right, I'm already free!

But what about the future?!

I am a Ghost Totem criminal who cannot travel the continent. I am a Ghost Totem criminal who will be endlessly pursued wherever I go. My future.... Where is it?!

"Young fellows, you are all free, right?"

At this time, the freak with the hanging eyeball spread his arms, shouting out in contentment from a large rock as he stood on the highest vantage point of the valley.

"Free!"

The gazes of three hundred people focused on the freak's figure and halted a bit, then abruptly broke out in excited roars and howls!

"That's right, you are all free.... Then, you freed people, are you happy?!"

"Happy!"

"Are you joyful?!"

"Joyful!"

The frenzied roars of the three hundred people nearly shook the horizon!

"I'm also very glad, I'm also very glad! However, my young fellows, I must ask you a question that is not too kind...."

The black figure's voice suddenly went icy, "Have you guys thought about what will soon happen to your bodies?!"

Chapter 068: Golden Ghost Butterfly (2)

The three hundred people suddenly sank into absolute silence.

The black figure's voice grew even icier! "How come you're not speaking anymore? Talk!" He pointed towards a thin youth, "Since none of you are talking, then let me ask you what your name is!"

"G-Greene!"

The thin youth lowered his head under the freak's gaze.

"Your identity and your strength?!"

"I-I'm the student of a Ghost Totem master. My master has already been killed, and I have no more relatives!" The youth was nearly about to cry, "Furthermore, my Ghost Totem talent has already been crippled, so I'm just a f***ing cripple!"

"Correct, you are now a cripple. Have you ever thought what your future would be like?"

For an instant, the look in the youth's eyes went blank, and the freak with the hanging eyeball laughed uproariously in a crazed manner, "You've realized it, but do you not dare to say it? Are you afraid to say it out loud? If you won't say it, I'll say it!"

He pointed towards the youth's chest, his tone without the

slightest bit of human emotion, “You only have two paths. The first is to hide in this dense mountain forest and die in the mouth of a wolf or tiger! The second is to wander the various nations of the continent, get seized by executioners and suffer a thousand cuts, getting chopped in half at the waist, or your heart being dug out…. You will suffer various methods of torment and die! Did I speak correctly? My fellow ‘Ghost Totem’?!”

The youth gripped his head in pain.

“Glaston!”

The freak then bellowed Glaston’s name as he pointed towards the youth and said sinisterly: “He doesn’t dare to speak of his future. You are a soldier, so you say it!”

Glaston continued to maintain his expressionless face, and his tone was likewise indifferent and cold, “I am also a cripple, so I only have two paths in my future: to kill myself or die from another’s hands!”

“Correct. All of you are the same as me–we are all Ghost Totem lowlives! However, I am even stronger than all of you! I am free! I am strong! I leave people terror-stricken with my name! All of this is because…. I possess power!”

The black figure began laughing maniacally and his voice turned faint, “Do all of you…. Wish to be like me and possess power?”

Power....

Glaston's eyes slightly narrowed as he answered coldly: "Don't tell me that you can restore our power?!"

"Correct!"

A sheepskin scroll suddenly shot out from the black mist around the freak. This scroll floated at his head, and the characters on it surprisingly formed a name: Domeyer!

"Domeyer! None of you are unfamiliar with this name, right? Correct! It is precisely the Ghost Totem King who, in these thousand years, was the continent's most powerful Ghost Totem, Domeyer!"

The black figure pointed towards his own chest, "Of course, I'm not Domeyer. However, I possess Domeyer's secret manuscript! As long as all of you can read this manuscript.... Those who are crippled can restore their strength, while those who are not crippled can become even more powerful, to the point that all of you can become the most terrifying army on the continent with this secret manuscript! All of this.... Can be done just by looking at the contents of this manuscript!"

"Give me the manuscript!"

A Ghost Totem criminal charged over!

The hanging eyeball freak evaded him as quickly as a feather as he cackled: “Why should I give this manuscript to you?”

This....

The three hundred criminals all went into a daze. Several seconds later, a clever criminal dashed out of the group and dropped to his knees before the freak, “Benefactor, you saved me! I’m willing to follow you all the days of my life with my identity as a Ghost Totem and become your most loyal servant!”

“Benefactor, we are already cripples without a future! Take us in! On our honor, we guarantee our loyalty!”

Thud! Thud!

Everybody said that the kneeling knees of men were golden. However, at this moment, three hundred criminals were all on their knees!

(*TL: meaning that they don’t/shouldn’t kneel easily)

Only Glaston was an indifferent bystander as he stood underneath that withered old tree....

“Kek! Kek!”

Enjoying everybody’s worship, the black figure laughed heartily, “Young fellows, my comrades! All of you are qualified to acquire

this manuscript....”

Just as everybody was about to call out master, his tone suddenly turned serious: “However, all of you must remember that the target of your devotion is not me!”

“Not *you? Then....”

The crowd was completely puzzled!

The black figure stuck out two bony palms. Golden light flashed on one hand, while the other began radiating with a white color. He began to draw in the air, and very quickly, he had drawn a bizarre picture!

It was an eerie looking skull with a pair of starkingly different golden yellow butterfly wings at its posterior end.

After seeing this picture, the three hundred criminals were even more confused.

“Golden Ghost Butterfly!”

The black figure pointed towards the image as he declared loudly: “This picture is called the Golden Ghost Butterfly! One day, all of you will meet a person who possesses a Golden Ghost Butterfly tattoo! That person is the true target of your loyalty and devotion, your true master!”

After he said this, his eyes fixed onto Glaston who, up till now, had only been looking on indifferently, “Glaston, everybody else has made a decision. What about you? These three hundred people need a leader, a general like you…. When you join them, you will be the highest commanding officer in this team…. Glaston, tell me, what is your decision?!”

The valley was deathly silent!

Glaston did not kneel, but his right hand thumped his chest, which was a flawless and perfect military salute!

And then!

Right as his salute concluded, he raised his hand. The instant he did so, the nails which had already grown long and sharp after being imprisoned for five years left five bloody gashes on his face!

Five bloody grooves, their lines willful and billowing, seemed like the fluttering butterfly wing of a blood colored butterfly!

“This blood oath will serve as witness: from this day forward, Glaston no longer exists in this world. The only one who exists…. Is the Ghost Butterfly Chief Knight!”

After he said this, Glaston goose-stepped in militaristic style to the freak’s side. He then used his cold gaze to sweep over the three hundred criminals, as if waiting for something.

Pu! Pu! Pu....

Three hundred criminals all stood up, their five fingers cutting across their left cheek. Soon, three hundred fluttering butterfly wings dripping with blood were born, “This blood oath will serve as witness that from this day forward, I no longer exist on this world. The only one who exists.... Is a Ghost Butterfly knight!”

Seeing all this, the hanging eyeball freak laughed. He then raised his head and exhaled long and loudly, “Young fellows, take hold of the manuscript and follow me to look for a place to train, train to become an army that will leave the whole world terror-stricken at the very name, train to become a group good enough to make the Golden Ghost Butterfly proud.... the Ghost Butterfly Knight Squadron!”

At this time, no one knew what the Ghost Butterfly Squadron meant. However, in the long history of the continent, perhaps after many years, those melodramatic minstrels would say this, “There occurred something fantastic: the continent’s most terrifying Ghost Totem army, the Ghost Butterfly Knight Squadron that makes even specters tremble, was born in a small and nameless valley. And when she was born, her master, the fellow with the Golden Ghost Butterfly tattoo.... Was actually ignorantly, shamelessly, and utterly disgracefully.... Pretending to be a pig peddler!”

Of course, how the future minstrels would recount the tale was something that did not even have a hair’s worth of anything to do with Jiang Nan!

At this moment, Jiang Nan was currently feeling that he was even more like model than an actual model! Other models would change one outfit every several minutes. However, he.... Had already changed four full outfits in several short minutes!

Of course, the models described above did not include models of the human body.

Eddy went to work with Weylin, while Jiang Nan came to a remote alleyway and stripped off Rodi's slave clothes for the Professor's mask and black, tight-fitting gown.

Sauron!

Soon, Jiang Nan would have to fight an ultimate match with Sauron for the summit of Sun City, the true.... Number one expert!

Book 03: Ghost Totem Paradise

Chapter 069: Night Of The Full Moon (1)

Sun City was in an uproar!

Excited shouts, enthusiastic cries, and hysterical roars sounded out as the residents of Sun City unleashed their emotions!

Humans would always need some flavor in their life, would they not?

The Totem Arena was precisely the continent's most flavorful event!

And in Sun City, Sauron versus the Professor was among the best in terms of excitement!

At ten o'clock in the morning, the continent's number one beauty descended!

At 10:01 in the morning, a freak with a hanging eyeball ransacked the city square and rescued three hundred Ghost Totem criminals.

At the same time, the Professor revealed his almost peerless and god-like knife work to Yulianne, thus placing the title of the continent's number one knife work chef once more into suspense!

At 10:25, Eddy carried out the Knife Work Feast, the gorgeous movements of three hundred flashing knives fascinating everyone

utterly....

However, all of these had already occurred. Right now, the hot topic at the moment was the match that would decide Sun City's number one expert. It was who the owner of the number one expert's throne would be, a symbol that represented the strongest person among Sun City's population of 150,000.

"Sauron, Sauron, Sauron!"

Outside the Totem Stadium, several thousand zealous fans occupied nearly half of the main road. Pictures of Carnivorous Flowers representing Sauron could be seen on their faces, while they themselves raised pictures of Sauron up high. Banners and streamers saying 'Sauron will win' were also hung on their heads!

"Professor, Professor, Professor!"

The Professor's supporters were no less inferior and could even be said to be even more imposing as they occupied the other half of the main road!

Yes, the Professor had only appeared for about a month's time, and his prestige was still far from being able to compare with Sauron. However, the Professor possessed a Strength Totem, which was the most violent, most bloodthirsty, and most able to stimulate the hormones in those warlike men!

Crushing the opponent to pieces with just a bare fist! This was

the scenario that most men enjoyed watching! This was the most masculine sort of move!

“Support the Professor, men!!!”

(*TL: 纯爷们 – basically referring to masculine men, but I’d rather it stay men.)

This was what the streamers and banners on the Professor’s side said!

At nine o’clock in the evening, the two opposing crowds were already at the peak of their excitement. One or two people began throwing rotten eggs towards the opposite side, and twenty or thirty others began heaving up fist-sized bricks. Gradually, the main road before the stadium entrance turned into a fight consisting of rotten eggs and fist-sized bricks whistling through the air! Amidst this chaos, the peacekeeping city guards and soldiers were all hopelessly occupied, to the point that some of them were so infuriated that their teeth cracked from gritting so hard!

“Brothers!” A soldier pointed towards another soldier and yelled, “This sissy dares to support Sauron! Give me two bricks so I can smash this fake man!”

Huh!

In his past life, there were violent soccer fanatics. In this life.... Okay, they could be called Totem fanatics!

Jiang Nan rubbed his forehead in irritation. At this time, he was already standing at the stadium entrance.... behind it.... in an inconspicuous corner.

Weylin and the others were currently showing Yulianne around, so tonight's match was actually a hard to come by chance at rest.

Beside Jiang Nan were to stadium managers.

"Lord Professor, you, have you truly decided to completely seal off the match? Good heavens! *You've also seen the situation outside! If we do not allow the spectators in...."

A manager currently pleaded for Jiang Nan to 'open up' the match with a face of worry and concern.

Jiang Nan glanced askance at him, "Mister, first answer two questions of mine, okay? The first. Is the lead role of the match you or this brother here?"

"It is *you!"

"The second. A complete sealing off was written very clearly on the contract of the match. You're literate, right?"

"Literate, literate...."

“And you’re still asking me whether or not to seal off the match?!” Jiang Nan clapped his hand to his forehead over and over, “I don’t even know what to say anymore…. Pig-brained, pig-brained…. Huh?”

Suddenly, the racket outside of the stadium screeched to a stop.

It was as if judgment day had come, and all that was left was noiseless space!

Jiang Nan leaned onto the door and peeked through the crack. The fight that had begun outside had already stopped, and a pathway in the center of the road had been opened up.

Sauron was currently walking along this path.

As he walked, he left behind a trail of a flower’s fragrance. From head to feet, he was completely suited up in his Flower Battle Armor, and every step he took caused several petals to dance around him gracefully.

“Flower Battle Armor!”

The manager’s eyes instantly lit up. He glared pettily at Jiang Nan for his previous scolding, and said with a smile, “It seems that Lord Sauron is preparing to go all out tonight! My, he’s even brought out the only Totem Equipment in Sun City that is recorded on the ‘Totem Equipment Ranking’, the Flower Battle Armor!”

“Totem Equipment Ranking?”Jiang Nan retracted his gaze from Sauron.

“Lord Professor, you, you do not even know of the Equipment Ranking?!” The manager had an odd look on his face, “Do *you not know? Intermediate ranked Totem Warriors can summon a Totem Guard. After a Totem Warrior dies, his Guard will not disappear. Instead, it will transform into a Totem Equipment based on the Totem Warrior’s attribute and level. Just like the Totem Ranking, the Advancement Association will also rank and compare these pieces of Totem Equipment, thus forming a Totem Equipment Ranking!”

A certain degree of disdain could be seen in the manager’s eyes, although this disdain was of course meant for Jiang Nan, “Lord Sauron’s Flower Battle Armor is ranked 936 throughout the whole continent on the Totem Equipment Ranking, and in Sun City.... Number one!”

Banana your guava!

Hanging eyeball freak, where’s your f***ing honesty!

Such an important thing as the Totem Equipment, you actually didn’t tell me?!

In truth, Jiang Nan had wrongfully accused the Hanging Eyeball Mister. Information about the Totem Equipment, this basic and widely known thing, had been written on the secret manual that

he had given to Jiang Nan the first time.

What a pity: this section was ruined by Alisa. Her reason? This toy isn't advanced enough; it can only hold my Rodi back....

Creak!

The stadium's main entrance opened up as Sauron walked in!

And right as the the door was closed once more in order to block the frenzied crowd, Sauron had already passed by Jiang Nan's side to head directly towards Arena #1.

Throughout the entire process, he had not looked at Jiang Nan even once!

This sort of disdainful action caused Jiang Nan's mouth to curve in an indiscernible, evil smile!

"My dear Mister Sauron, it is very easy to impair yourself communicatively if you don't talk, really...."

He quickly passed by Sauron and became the first to enter Arena #1!

Arena #1, which was also called the Experts Arena, was especially prepared for the top ten experts in Sun City.

Currently, this basketball court-sized Arena #1 had already been encircled by a black curtain. It meant that spectators were not permitted to watch, and also meant.... That between Jiang Nan and Sauron, only one person could live to walk out!

Following Jiang Nan's and Sauron's entrance into the arena, the manager sealed up the black curtain's only entrance, then declared coldly: "Before life and death is decided between Sauron and the Professor, any people who attempt to trespass and enter Arena #1 will be killed! Before victory is decided between the Professor and Sauron, escapees will also be killed!"

"As you command!"

Five hundred guards carrying longbows lied in wait in the vicinity of Arena #1, the arrows resting on the nooks of the longbows shining with a sinister blue light–the light of toxic poison!

And inside the arena, "My dear Mister Sauron, before we begin our duel, I want to ask you thirty-five questions.... En, you did not hear wrongly. I have thirty-five questions!"

Right before this critical match, Jiang Nan did not seem to be the slightest aware that this was a duel deciding life or death. Unlike the fanatic crowd or the nervous managers, his face beamed with a light-hearted smile as he began to circle around Sauron, "My first question: your age?"

Sauron closed his eyes.

“Alright then. My second question, your marriage status?”

Sauron let out a dark, cold smile, but still did not respond. By this time, Jiang Nan had already arrived at his left side.

“Ai, then let’s try the third question then.... Do you know, I’m actually really pig-brained!”

At this moment, Jiang Nan had already circled around to Sauron’s back, and he suddenly leapt up to a height of four or five meters!

Straight after, Jiang Nan’s body quickly began spinning like a full-powered drill. His two legs consecutively kicked out and a series of leg phantoms filled the sky, all directed towards the back of Sauron’s head!

An imitation of Gibson’s Wind move, Crushing Shadow!

Correct. Before I even began asking, this duel had already started! This brother here is ambushing the back of your head!

Crushing Shadow attacked the back of Sauron’s head from the back. Under normal circumstances, an opponent would definitely lean and turn their head to the left or to the right to evade this series of leg kicks.

As such, Jiang Nan had already grabbed a handful of limestone before going into the arena. He was simply waiting for Sauron's head to turn, and he would directly scatter the limestone and blind this pig-brained guy's eyes!

However....

Not only did Sauron's reaction occur outside of Jiang Nan's expectations, it was basically something that almost no one would have been able to think that.... He would be able to do!

Chapter 070: Night Of The Full Moon (2)

At first, Sauron did indeed turn his head to the left, thus dodging Jiang Nan on the right!

However, right as Jiang Nan scattered the rocks, Sauron's head.... Actually continued turning!

Fifty degrees!

Ninety degrees!

One hundred eighty degrees!

In the end, his head had actually turned 270 degrees! Not only did he dodge the stones, he even used an utterly outrageous angle to once again turn his face to meet Jiang Nan's!

Wolf Watch! Eagle Vision!

Only creatures like wolves and eagles could turn their heads 180 degrees!

Banana your guava, Sauron's faith wasn't a wolf! H-he, how could he perform the signature move of the Wolf Totem—Wolf Watch?!

Numerous doubts bubbled up in Jiang Nan's heart, but in the

Totem Arena, life and death was decided in an instant!

In Jiang Nan's stupefaction, not only did Sauron turn his head, his mouth even shot open and spat out a cyclone that seemed to carry with it a reeking and pungent animal-like smell!

This cyclone was like a meat grinder, quietly waiting for Jiang Nan to plummet from the sky....

It was just like Victor's move—Cyclone Blade!

Alright, alright, I can only go all out then!

Jiang Nan did not have any time to think further. Since he was in mid-air, if he did not kill his opponent, he himself would be ground into mincemeat! Seeing that he was just about to fall into this meat grinder, Jiang Nan could not dodge. As such, he borrowed the inertia from his spinning to forcefully flip in the air, changing directions to actively dive into the meat grinder himself!

And right as he was flipping, Jiang Nan's two arms also began whirling around in imitation of Hank's Massive Windmill. In an instant, he had already sped up the rate of his spinning to the limits. Now, it no longer seemed like a windmill, but another meat grinder!

Pu! Pu! Pu!

Two meat grinders instantly crashed into each other, and at the

moment of their collision, Arena #1 rang out with distorted noises of flesh colliding.

"That's not right, that's not right! You guys, listen to this!"

Outside Arena #1, a surveyor of the Advancement Association pricked up his ears in astonishment.

"What's wrong? The noises are very intense, so it seems that the Professor and Sauron are currently fighting to their satisfaction!"

"Satisfaction my ass! Listen to the sounds again!" The surveyor knitted his eyebrows: "Only duels where people fight each other head on will make such intense hitting noises! But what is Sauron? He's a Carnivorous Flower Totem! Sauron's matches are always mysterious and unpredictable, swallowing living people in silence. He, how can he produce such loud hitting sounds?"

"This.... Maybe the Professor currently holds the advantage and forced Sauron to fight close combat?"

"Perhaps, but...."

The surveyor shook his head continuously. He still had the time to continue speculating about the strangeness of this duel, but Jiang Nan did not even have the time to suspect anymore.

In his past life, wuxia novels all said that in the middle of some heroes' great duel, their minds would be able to circulate at

lightning speed. After unleashing one move, they would be able to think of f***ing one hundred more!

However, Jiang Nan wanted to say that this was all pure f***ing pig-brained nonsense!

After the two meat grinders collided into each other, the two's figures locked into combat with each other. Moves were as fast as lightning, and Jiang Nan did not even have the slightest bit of time to think of further moves, much less any time to suspect anything! Every move and action was based completely on instinct, and the movements were so quick that his own thoughts almost could not keep up anymore.

Time gradually passed and it was now 9:45. In order to make it more convenient for Totem Warriors who could fly, the black curtain around Arena #1 did not cover the arena overhead. Three hues of moonlight also landed on the two people's bodies.

On the Yuanzhi Continent on every first and last day of the month, the three moons would simultaneously shine as a full moon.

Tonight was the night of the first day of the New Year, so all three moons were naturally full!

And under the shining of those full moons, Sauron's battle capability began to grow stronger and stronger. Twenty moves later, he actually battled Jiang Nan to the point that he could no longer properly keep up with his blows!

“Aoooo~~~”

Sauron let out a strange howl, and after forcing Jiang Nan into a dead end on the arena, he was too excited, “Professor! This is the price you’ll pay for humiliating me!”

After he said this, his head traveled through the cover of layers and layers of flowers, and a massive wolf head snapped towards the cornered Jiang Nan!

F*** your price!

Jiang Nan’s bloodthirst had now appeared, and still reacting on instinct, he suddenly used ‘Dark Steps’ and arrived behind Sauron in the blink of an eye!

At the same time, a ‘Skeletal Poison Blade’ pierced into Sauron’s heart from the back with a ‘pop’!

He had kept refraining from using his Ghost Mystique Arts for the sake of waiting for an opportunity to ambush like this!

Drip!

Drip!

Drip!

Sauron's snarl came to a sudden stop as he lowered his head down uncomprehendingly. All he could see was a sharp spike protruding out from his chest right where his heart was located, dripping with fresh, dark blood....

The end had finally come!

Jiang Nan exhaled slowly, the severe consumption from his Ghost Arts leaving him a bit light-headed. However, the next moment, he suddenly saw the massive wolf head within the flowers clearly!

This wolf head was so familiar....

"Victor?!"

Jiang Nan blurted out in alarm.

The one who had died in defeat was actually the only son of Reyne Mountain's Wolf King, Victor?!

Victor's initial half of life was a tragedy!

After the battle during the drifting snow had concluded, Sauron found the Victor who had fallen off the cliff.

At that time, Victor had wanted to charge back up the mountain

to kill the Professor and avenge himself for his disgrace.

"My dear little brother Victor, do you still want to go back to confront the Professor?"

Sauron held Victor back, "Oh, no, no. As your friend, I must regretfully tell you that the Professor's match has already concluded. He has already left Mount Longinus...."

"Even if he fled into a rushing river, this wolf would never let him go!" Victor's fury did not diminish, "Tell me, where did the Professor go?!"

"I don't know either! Furthermore, even if I did now, as your only friend in Sun City, I would definitely not tell you!"

Like a very close bosom friend, Sauron spoke in an earnest and sincere tone, "Victor, my boy, I recommend that you forget the Professor. Right now, the Professor is no longer someone you can fight.... Don't worry, just listen to me. If you wish to take revenge against the Professor for humiliating you, there are only two ways: assassination or a public duel! However, think about it. The Professor has already teamed up with Talik. Aren't you afraid of attracting the Imperial Government's retaliation if you wish to assassinate the Professor who is under the protection of a high-ranking official of the Empire?"

"I can publicly challenge him!"

“Oh, no. This is even more impossible! My boy, the Professor is already ranked number one in Sun City with me. Before he duels it out with me, he cannot accept your challenge.”

Sauron ‘inadvertently’ let slip the news of his duel. In accordance with his expectations, Victor blurted out in surprise, “Duel?! When is this duel?!”

“On the night of the New Year!” Sauron laughed, then added an additional phrase, “On the night of the full moon!”

Night of the full moon!

When the three moons shined with a full moon’s light, the battle capabilities of werewolves would shoot up exponentially, so Victor would definitely have the strength to challenge any person in Sun City!

If he wanted to kill the Professor for the sake of revenge, the night of the New Year was the best opportunity!

However....

Sauron had already taken the opportunity to challenge the Professor on the night of a full moon!

Ai, if I could only fight in Sauron’s place, it would be great....

Victor's thinking was completely in the palm of Sauron's hands!

The day before Yulianne entered the city, Sauron once again went to look for Victor. This time, he wore his full body Flower Battle Armor, "I'm about to fight the Professor in a duel to the death. Victor, my friend, how about you have a drink with me to boost my morale?"

After several tens of cups of wine, Sauron was dead drunk. He pointed towards his Flower Battle Armor and joked, "See this? This is my Flower Battle Armor, an equipment ranked 936 throughout the entire continent.... Hic* There are so many benefits to this Flower Battle Armor~.... Hic* But, there's a disadvantage to it: if someone wanted to wear it to break the law or pass themselves off as me to do bad things.... Haha, I wouldn't be able to clear it up even if I jumped in a rushing river!"

Flower Battle Armor?!

Pass off!!

Victor's heart was enticed. Looking over, he saw that Sauron had already fainted from his drunkenness!

An opportunity!

His heart palpitated wildly, and Victor could finally no longer restrain himself from personally avenging his humiliation. As such, he tied Sauron up, stripped off his Flower Battle Armor, and

pretended to be Sauron as he left the restaurant!

"Professor, don't disappoint me! Please kill Victor...."

After Victor left, the naked Sauron opened his drunken eyes a sliver and laughed contentedly, "Killing the Reyne Wolf King's only son by mistake! Oh, Professor, Weylin.... Just wait for the snarling fury of tens of thousands of wolf clan members!"

To let the Professor kill Victor was Sauron's plan!

Drip, drip.

On the arena, blood continued to flow. Victor's head turned to look at Jiang Nan, his expression full of unreconciliation and incredulity....

And then his eyes glazed over and froze!

Victor died without closing his eyes!

(*TL: meaning he died with a grievance)

Huh!!!

Brother, how could you die?!

Jiang Nan wanted to cry, but had no tears. He did not know of

Sauron’s plan, but he knew that Victor was Wolf King Sofus’ only son, the only heir to Reyne Mountain!

Reyne Mountain’s hundred thousand wolf members were definitely go insane at his death!

Banana your guava!

Jiang Nan viciously spat out some saliva, then shook Victor’s corpse, scolding: “Victor, you pig brain! Alright, alright, you’ve died.... This brother here doesn’t want to be pursued by a hundred thousand wolf clan members, so I can only resort to this now! Don’t blame this brother here for having no spirit of loyalty or brotherhood! If you want to blame someone, blame the son of a b**** who lent you the Flower Battle Armor!”

Chapter 071: Death And Disappearance

The next moment, Jiang Nan acted out a scene as if from a soap opera.

“Sauron, can you take this blow?”

“Ah! Good! As expected, you’re a good opponent. Take this next move!”

As he made noises of battle with his mouth, Jiang Nan did not keep his hands idle: he stripped off Victor’s Flower Battle Armor, tying it and poking it, and turned it into a large bag!

He then placed the bag next to Victor and took out the dissection cane at his back, pressing lightly on a crystal button....

Click!

Two sharp scalpels popped out!

The blades gleamed and flashed!

Jiang Nan dissected Victor’s throat and wrists!

These three areas were arterial locations which, once cut, would gush and splatter out with fresh blood.

However, Jiang Nan poured all this fresh blood into the Flower Battle Armor bag.

It had to be said that the Flower Battle Armor's sealing property was shockingly good. After filling it with a few kilograms of blood, it actually did not leak anything out.

"Sauron, you're f***ing vicious! You, you actually want to snap at me?!"

On one hand, Jiang Nan continued making fighting noises. On the other, he waited for Victor's blood to fully drain out.

Gurgle, gurgle, gurgle....

The sound slowly quieted, and the blood flow from the three wounds finally dried up!

Right at this moment, Jiang Nan's scalpels once again flashed. This time, starting from the neck, he began to dissect all the way down. In just a few short minutes, he had already turned Victor's body into a pile of werewolf organs!

Internal organs, arteries, muscle, bone.... After the removal of any body part, Jiang Nan would diligently scan it, then throw it into the flowery bag full of blood!

A full-grown male's body was at least sixty to sixty-five kilograms, and after Victor turned into a werewolf, his weight exceeded one hundred kilograms, making him a huge lunk!

However!

Through Jiang Nan's dissection and compression, the fragments of Victor's body were all squeezed into the flowery bag. If held in one's hand, it would look just like.... A handbag that was simply a bit larger than normal!

What was even more satisfying was this: a flowery fragrance danced and fluttered unceasingly around the Flower Battle Armor, and continuously emitted even more flowery perfume. Under the cover of the fragrance and the petals, not even the slightest smell of blood leaked from the bag!

This....

Should probably be able to deceive them, right?

In consideration of the bag he was holding, Jiang Nan guiltily looked both left and right. Hey, no one's here!

He then stuck out his chest and proudly roared in a loud voice, "Sauron, where can you flee! You despicable coward! Since you can't beat me, you want to run?!"

After he said this, Jiang Nan strode around in circles, his two legs

making ‘thud thud’ noises as if two people were currently in the arena, one chasing, one fleeing.

“Banana your guava! Sauron, in order to escape with your life, you don’t even want your Flower Battle Armor anymore? Alright, alright! This brother here will see where you can run off to!”

After Jiang Nan’s meticulous trampling, several pieces of limestone turned into powder. Jiang Nan then grabbed a handful of the powder and threw the rest to the wind!

“Sauron, don’t even think about leaving!”

Jiang Nan rushed right after the powder while carrying Victor’s body and jumped out of the arena’s surrounding black curtain!

The manager outside listened to Jiang Nan’s performance as if intoxicated.

From what he heard, this was what was currently going on in the arena: the Professor was currently fighting magnificently with Sauron when suddenly, Sauron let out a sound similar to that of a wolf’s howl.

(It must be that Sauron had hurt himself, so his voice was hoarse, right?) <– these are the author’s words.

After a miserable shriek, the arena was silent for a few moments, then the intense battle abruptly began once more. Furthermore,

this time.... The Professor held the advantage, and was beating Sauron to the point that Sauron was trying to flee in every which way!

Several blows later, Sauron was already at the end of his rope, so he did not hesitate to throw out his Flower Battle Armor to hold Jiang Nan off as he escaped!

Oh no, Sauron was going to run!

Tonight was a life and death arena, and before the outcome was decided, Sauron could not be permitted to escape. When the manager realized this, he raised his hand and barked out: “Longbows at the ready! Be prepared to attack the fleeing Sauron at any time!”

Pu!

Jiang Nan threw out a cloud of dust and appeared, dazzling everybody’s eyes for a moment!

After the people’s visions returned, the Professor had already descended from the air while holding the Flower Battle Armor. He then grabbed onto the manager’s collar, so angry that the veins on his hand popped out!!

“Tell me, where did Sauron run off to?!”

The manager was completely dumbfounded!

Sauron, Sauron had already fled?

I didn't see anything though!

Did you see it clearly? The manager looked at his companions only to see several hundred blank expressions.

"Bastard! Several hundred of you didn't see Sauron running away?!" Jiang Nan was utterly steaming with rage, so he slapped the manager's face twice, "Bastard, bastard! Tonight is but a life and death match! You actually let Sauron run off? Damn it all! Damn it all! Damn! Damn! This is all your fault, this is all your f***ing fault!"

"Lord, please calm down, please calm down!"

The beaten manager almost began crying as he held his face dazedly, not knowing what he did wrong.

Did Sauron really run away?

He looked at the empty Arena #1 before him. F***, Sauron, this lowlife! He unexpectedly and actually ran!

You ran and actually made me receive a beating?!

The manager was also enraged, so he barked out angrily:

“Brothers, open a city-wide search of Sauron! Damn it all! Running away from a life or death match! Sauron’s a coward, an absolutely shameless coward! Locate and track this coward down!”

“Would a city-wide search alone be enough? Pig-brained, pig-brained!”

It was as if oil had been added to Jiang Nan’s fiery rage. Jumping up, he landed two more slaps on the manager’s face and pointed towards him, scolding: “Sauron destroyed the Totem Arena’s rules by fleeing just before the end! His actions are insulting the Totem Advancement Association, insulting all the totem masters on the continent, and particularly insulting your reputation, sullying your dignity! This damned Sauron, damn it all!”

“That’s right, Sauron ought to die! Brothers, cancel the searching order, and take on heavy weaponry. When you see Sauron, kill without pardon! Remember…. The storehouse has military weapons!”

Under Jiang Nan’s angry roars, the manager changed his command. He then looked meekly at Jiang Nan, “Lord, about what happened tonight….”

“Forget it, forget it. You brothers are quite diligent in your work, so about tonight’s affairs…. I won’t bother about it with you guys anymore.”

Jiang Nan’s face was exceedingly dark. He glared at the manager in a huff, then raised his hand and shook the Flower Battle Armor

in his hand, “Hey, Sauron used this thing to stall. What should I do with it?”

The manager let out a sigh of relief, “The Flower Battle Armor? Lord, it is already your spoils from the battle. You can do with it as *you please!”

“Really? So it’s fine if I take it with me right now?”

“Of course it’s fine!”

“Alright, then I’ll be leaving now…. Tsk, after several hundred blows, I really am a bit tired!”

With Victor in hand, Jiang Nan openly left the stadium!

Just like that, the results of tonight’s battle changed: Sauron fled right before his demise and disappeared! The Professor was completely victorious and seized the Flower Battle Armor!

Several hundred workers at the stadium could bear witness!

The day after, if Wolf King Sofus was to investigate the whereabouts of his son, Jiang Nan could openly educate him, “What?! The person I fought that day was actually Victor?! Okay, okay. Several hundred people can testify that after his defeat, Victor fled, and I no longer saw him again. Even if Victor died, huh…. It doesn’t even have a hair’s worth to do with me!”

This way, Jiang Nan had absolved himself of the crime of ‘mistakenly killing Victor’!

Furthermore…. Was clearing himself of his crimes enough?

This guy Sauron had lent the Flower Battle Armor to Victor. After several minutes, he would definitely come out to investigate the results of the battle!

As long as Sauron dared to appear at the stadium….

With the Emperor’s blessing! Those managers who now already hated Sauron to the bone would definitely put on a good show!

As expected, a minute after Jiang Nan left, the manager roared out inside the stadium, “Soldiers finished assembling! Brothers, Sauron has already abandoned his Flower Battle Armor and fled death! Immediately set out into the city to pursue and kill Sauron!”

What was even more interesting was this: almost at the exact same time, Sauron, the genuine Sauron, actually really came to the front of the stadium entrance!

Chapter 072: Professor, You're Ruthless!

Sauron was currently very happy.

He could already imagine the upcoming events: he would pretend to have a hangover and only be dressed in his underpants and tank top. Then, he would dash into the stadium in a seemingly frantic manner and grab onto a manager, barking out in a booming voice, "Has the duel started? Damn it! Victor got me drunk and even stole my Flower Battle Armor in order to disguise himself as me so he could participate in the duel!"

With utter astonishment, the manager would be so startled that he would be left speechless.

Only after a long while would he manager to sputter: "Lord Sauron, you, how can you have just come now! Victor has already been defeated; the Professor has already killed Victor!"

"What?!" Sauron would be flabbergasted, then subsequently lift his head and wail: "Victor! My brother! Why did you have to steal my Flower Battle Armor! You're but Reyne Mountain's only successor! How am I supposed to explain your death to your father!" His tone of voice would then take a turn, "Give me pen and paper! I want to write a letter to Wolf King Sofus describing the true reality of the situation—Damn it! The Professor murdered my good brother, Victor!"

That way, Wolf King Sofus would arrive in Sun City and completely wipe out the Professor, Weylin, and West Farms!

As for Sauron himself....

The Wolf King would not make any trouble for him because he was intoxicated by someone else. He had even lost his Flower Battle Armor, so he was also a ‘victim’!

Borrowing the Wolf King’s hand to destroy West Farms without any blame on his own part.... Tsk tsk, was this not a wonderful plan?!

The more Sauron thought about it, the happier he was. By this time, he had already knocked on the back entrance to the stadium, and a manager opened the door and stuck his head out.

“Has the duel already begun? Damn it....”

According to the play he had already planned in his mind, Sauron feigned a frantic appearance, preparing to fulfill his role in this scheme!

However, he had not even finished his sentence before the manager’s countenance changed. He glanced at Sauron’s underwear; en, as expected. He definitely had the appearance of forsaking his Flower Battle Armor and fleeing! He roared angrily: “Sauron, you coward! You lowlife, you dare to come back?!”

Sauron was stunned!

“Brothers, Sauron has appeared! Seize this guy and kill him!”

Swish, swish, swish!

Several thousand arrows descended from the sky in a thick blanket, aiming for the dazed and innocent Sauron!

One must know that before Sauron began putting on his show, Jiang Nan had already performed a scene like something out of a soap opera! Right now, the manager of the stadium absolutely loathed Sauron, this ‘despicable coward’ and ‘shameless runaway’!

As such, the manager did not hold back at all. After the first wave of arrows were released, he did not even check whether Sauron had lived or died before he shouted: “Cannons! Prepare the small scale cannon, the mortar cannons, Mortal Cannons, all the cannons! All cannons at the ready!!!”

Mortal Cannons?!

The moment he heard this phrase, Sauron went crazy!

Mortal Cannons were not some funny nonsense. On the continent, since there was the Ghost Totem that had to do with the nether world, hell, and the likes, there was naturally something to do with the living. It was the ‘Human Totem’, something associated with the human world!

The Mortal Cannon was something created through the Human

Totem's Vitality Art that boosted vitality and destroyed any unorthodox thing or evil spirit!

Motherf***er!

The manager hates me to the bone and views me as an unorthodox evil spirit to be destroyed!

Good heavens, exactly what happened?!

If they really were to fight, Sauron was not necessarily afraid of the stadium's guards or firearms. However, he could not provoke the Totem Advancement Association behind the stadium!

Seeing that he could no longer explain himself, Sauron gritted his teeth, turned tail, and ran!

"Damn it! This lowlife Sauron actually ran away again! Brothers, pursue!"

Why did he say 'again'?

An extremely unimaginable scene played out in Sun City.

Sauron dashed madly on the road in his underpants and tank top with several hundred stadium guards chasing him like wild dogs. Furthermore, as they chased, the manager even yelled out, "Residents of Sun City, in the name of the Totem Advancement

Association, we declare Sauron a f***ing coward, a fake man without balls! Residents, help us capture Sauron! The person wearing underpants in front is him!”

When interacting with others, who would not have one or two enemies?

The commonfolk did not dare to fulfill the request for capture, but thinking about Sauron’s past actions in the period of time before Yulianne’s arrival, he would threaten and bribe, seize things by force, and establish unfair contracts….

Son of a b**** Sauron, so there comes a day that this can happen to you too?!

A burly man whom Sauron had once bullied before waved around two axes, “Brothers of the Black Tiger Gang, pulverize the enemy! Chop Sauron to death!”

Huh!!!

Professor, you’re too f***ing ruthless!

Sauron did not know what Jiang Nan had done, but if someone were to say that Sauron fleeing in just underpants and a tank top had nothing to do with the Professor…. Even if Sauron was beat to death, he would not believe it!

May the Lord protect you, poor Mister Sauron!

Seeing Sauron's panicked fleeing, Jiang Nan prayed silently in his heart....

At this moment, Jiang Nan was currently squatting outside the stadium in a small alleyway, adopting a stance in which his 'two hands interlocked with each other' like how criminals were punished. He wore his silver Professor's mask on his face and hefted a large flowery bag on his back!

One or two cats would occasionally run past him with their fur on end and a "Meow~~". With a 'whoosh', there would no longer be any trace of them!

Scaredy cats, hmph!

Jiang Nan spat in the cats' direction, then was at a loss to do after feeling a bit of accomplishment.

Sauron had already become as pitiful as a dog dunked in water, and as for beating up that soaking dog, Weylin could take care of it....

Then next.... What was he to do?

Was he to immediately return to Weylin's side and receive his reward for defeating Sauron?

No good, no good. Talik was still staying at Weylin's place, and once this red-eyed guy took notice of the Professor's appearance, would not his eyes turn as red as a purebred rabbit?

Perhaps he could find a place to study Victor's body?

That was no good either. An analysis of the body structure could only be done with complete instrumental assistance. Currently, he was only a pathetic slave, and recklessly researching would only waste this perfect werewolf corpse!

Then.... Study the map of Mount Longinus?

En, not a bad idea, not a bad idea. The earlier he could unravel the mystery of Mount Longinus, the earlier he would be able to go look for skeletal remains. Consequently, he would be able to summon a Totem Guard even earlier and advance to the intermediate rank!

Thinking up till here, Jiang Nan grasped one of Victor's bones and drew a detailed map of Mount Longinus on the ground.

Precipitous cliffs on three sides and a steep incline on another side, while scattered on its northern face were 206 hidden caves....

This was the general structure of Mount Longinus!

If he wanted to locate the rumored skeletal remains at this dormant volcano.... Where was he to start looking?

Cliffs....

Steep incline?

Caves!

Two hundred six caves!

Two hundred six! Jiang Nan suddenly slapped his thigh and shot to his feet. How could he have not thought of this before? Was not 206 the number of bones in the human body?

Bones!

Jiang Nan immediately recalled the cave in which he hid himself after the battle of the drifting snow.

From the outline of that cave.... Was it not the shape of a skull?

Taking a second glance at the other caves....

This cave was in the shape of the hip bone and so was that one. Following that was the sacrum, phalanx, ischium....

Heavens!

The 206 caves on Mount Longinus were basically a disorderly map of components of the skeletal structure!

It was as if.... A person had exploded in mid air, completely scattering her bones. They then plummeted from the air with immense momentum due to the explosion only to smash into Mount Longinus and create 206 passages!

Then, over the months and years, the golden soil from Mount Longinus gradually clogged up these passages, turning them into today's.... 206 caves.

In other words....

If he was to locate the skeletal remains on Mount Longinus.... Was it that.... He could just randomly choose any cave.... And continue digging his way down?!

This was an outrageous conjecture!

However, Jiang Nan could no longer keep himself from wanting to attempt it.

"I'll go to Mount Longinus now and dig a tunnel to summon an expert's skeletal remains!"

Chapter 073: King Of The Wolf Clan

It took at least two or three days worth of time to get to Mount Longinus, so before he left, Jiang Nan entrusted someone to send two letters requesting leave to Weylin.

The first was written in the Professor's name and explained the truth of killing Victor. It then asked Weylin to thoroughly trample that soaked dog and take advantage of this opportunity to eliminate Sauron and Suzanne Farms.

The second letter requesting leave was written in Rodi's tone of voice, "Dear Miss Weylin, it's almost been a year since I've seen Auntie. I miss her dearly, so I'm specially requesting to return to the farm for several days.... Do you agree, or do you agree? You're most obedient slave, Rodi!"

After seeing this request for leave, Weylin would probably blow her top, right?

Jiang Nan imagined this with a shudder, then sneakily departed from Sun City out of fear that Weylin would stop him.

After seeing Rodi's request for leave, whether or not Weylin would blow her top was still unknown. However, once she saw the letter explaining how the Professor accidentally killed Victor....

Weylin would undoubtedly pass out from anger!

Jiang Nan was not aware of something extremely important: Victor had once mentioned that his father, Wolf King Sofus of Reyne Mountain, was about to arrive in Sun City to see Weylin, this ‘daughter-in-law’!

This son of a b****, Professor!

Running away after killing Victor, what if Wolf King Sofus were to suddenly come?!

Ambiguous communication was always bound to bring about some trouble....

This phrase was a true portrayal of Jiang Nan’s future several days later.

At the same time, this also described Sauron’s currently gloomy mood!

Under the crowd’s pursuit, Sauron zipped through ten odd main roads and came to Sun City’s eastern gate.

Right now, it was ten o’clock at night, the time at which the city gates would soon close, and seventy or eighty pedestrians were currently seizing this final chance to enter the city. At the same time, they also blocked Sauron’s path!

Damn it!

Glancing at the pursuing soldiers behind him, Sauron's heart grew cold. With one fist, he knocked an unlucky fellow flying, then consecutively punched out several more times, knocking twelve innocent passersby flying!

Either he would not do it or he would continue doing it! Discovering from the corner of his eye that there was still someone in his way, Sauron charged forward with his left foot. He then raised his right hand, the five sharp fingernails snatching towards the thirteenth person!

"Your dog eyes are blind!"

Suddenly! The thirteenth person laughed coldly and clamped onto Sauron's wrist instead!

He then twisted Sauron's entire right arm lightly.... Tearing it off!

Pu!

Blood spattered everywhere, and Sauron was in such pain that he nearly fainted!

In an instant, everybody was shocked into a daze!

Half a second, this guy crippled Sauron in just half a second!

Although Sauron was panicked and flustered, his mental state not exactly in the best condition, he was, after all, Sun City's number one expert up till yesterday!

An intermediate-rank 6th level Carnivorous Flower Totem Warrior had been crippled by someone in half a move....

How high exactly did this person's level need to be?!

"Tsk, with the fragrance of fresh flowers, this person's flavor is quite outstanding. Do you want to try it?"

After crippling Sauron, that person actually grabbed up Sauron's torn arm and put it underneath his nose to take a whiff. He then threw the arm to a massive black wolf next to him!

Aooo! The massive wolf devoured Sauron's arm in one gulp!

This animal actually dares to eat my flesh?!

Hot blood bubbled up into Sauron's head. He raised his head up indignantly, but right at that moment, Sauron saw the person's appearance clearly. Immediately, any sort of grievance he might have felt vanished like smoke in thin air....

This man was around forty years old, had a slender physique, and was taller than Sauron by half a head. An eerie arrogance also

shined through his pair of dark green eyes!

And on that enormous wolf's body hung on gleaming, gold spear....

Dark green eyes! Black wolf! Gold Spear!

It was the leader of the Nine Wolf Generals of Reyne Mountain, intermediate-rank 6th level Wolf Totem Master, Battle Wolf, Mody!

"I was not aware that General Mody had arrived and ran into the General! May the General forgive me!"

Sauron hastily clambered to his feet, and ignoring the fact that his torn arm was still bleeding, he quickly bowed.

"You know of me?" Mody spoke without lifting his head as he patted the enormous black wolf.

"Despite Sun City being a remote place, the name Nine Wolf Generals of Reyne Mountain is still well-known!"

Sauron held his torn arm as a myriad of doubts ran through his mind. Why did the Battle Wolf come? Could it be that it was for Victor?!

Hearing Sauron's bootlicking, Mody laughed and turned his head

towards the wide road outside the city gates, yelling: “Tyke, there’s actually a little fellow here who’s heard of our title! Interesting, interesting!”

Tyke!

The Berserk Wolf of the Nine Wolf Generals, the intermediate-rank 5th level Wolf Totem Master Tyke had also come?!

Intermediate-rank Totem Warriors could be called lords in Sun City, yet here there were two Totem ‘Masters’! Sauron’s scalp prickled and numbed!

However, the most terrifying was still to come!

Likewise accompanied by a giant Black Wolf, Berserk Wolf Tyke walked in, and on his giant wolf hung two blood-red battle-axes. However, Tyke was quite displeased as he spoke coldly: “Mody, right now isn’t the time to be showing off your title. His Majesty is about to enter the city; what are you dawdling here for?!”

His Majesty?!

An elderly man with a head of silver hair walked in right behind Berserk Wolf Tyke. He was dressed in a plain black robe, and no fierce, giant wolf followed alongside him. His appearance was also as ordinary as could be.

However, the moment this elderly man entered the city, all the

various beasts in Sun City began to tremble. They prostrated themselves down and cowered, so alarmed that they were in a complete daze!

This was a sort of instinct, an innate fear a beast had towards the aura of a king!

With the Wolf King's arrival, all beasts bowed their heads!

The master of Reyne Mountain's ten thousand wolf clan members, superior-rank 9th level Wolf Totem Master, a man only one step away from becoming a 'Totem King', Wolf King Sofus, had come!

Sofus had naturally come to see his 'daughter-in-law' Weylin due to Victor's letter.

As such, his current mood was wonderful. Sweeping his eyes over Sauron's torn arm, he benevolently said: "Mody, don't make it hard for him!"

Kill Sauron, don't make it hard for him. That was the Wolf King's standard act of benevolence!

"As you wish, Your Majesty!" Mody grabbed the gold spear from the giant wolf's body and licked his lips as he chuckled, "Seeing as how you have some ability, stand up and attack me! I'll give you the honor of dying under this 'Gold Prayer Spear'!"

“Your Majesty, Sofus, please hear me out!” Sauron prostrated himself and called out wildly: “I am Madame Suzanne’s Guard Commander, *your old friend Madame Suzanne!”

“Madame Suzanne’s subordinate?”

The spear in Battle Wolf’s hand halted as he turned his head to look at Sofus. “Your Majesty, His Highness, Victor’s letter mentioned Sauron before. It seems…. That he was His Highness’ friend as well!”

Sauron felt these words were like heavenly music, “That’s right, that’s right! I am Young Master Victor’s, no, His Highness, Victor’s friend! Uncle Sofus, I can also be considered to be *your nephew!”

Sofus glanced coldly at Sauron without any response. Clearly, he completely looked down on such a notion and would never admit to Sauron being his ‘nephew’.

Battle Wolf retracted his spear with a laugh: “Since your His Highness’ friend, where is His Highness? Immediately take us to look for His Highness, Victor!”

Victor!!!

The moment he heard this name, Sauron’s heart shook violently. He had but just schemed against Victor, and perhaps Victor had already been killed because of him!

Damn it! If I knew Sofus would appear tonight.... Even if you killed me, I still wouldn't have dared to scheme against Victor!

An indiscernible hint of malevolence flashed across Sauron's eyes. Since the deed had already been done, then he could only.... Stubbornly maintain his position till the end, pinning all the blame onto the Professor's head!

"Uncle, talking about my boy Victor now, can I first say something?" Sauron's suddenly began acting familiar and intimate, as if he had forgotten the enmity of his torn arm, and spoke sincerely, "*You're arrival is for...."

"Several days ago, His Highness' letter read that he had already chosen a crown princess for His Majesty, so His Majesty's trip now is to see this crown princess!" Battle Wolf's mouth tightened in a playful manner, but his tone soon turned icy: "Sauron, it seems that you're speaking a bit much today! Hurry up and tell me His Highness, Victor's location!"

"This.... It's not that I'm speaking more per say, it's just that, Uncle...." Sauron's face was troubled as he looked towards Sofus, "There are some things I truly do not know how to say!"

Chapter 074: Memories Of The Limestone

“Oh? Do you have something you dare not say?”

The Wolf King spoke amiably and contentedly. Usually, he would never allow a small character like Sauron to speak so much, but today, he truly was in a wonderful mood.

His son had already found his true love, while he himself, after waiting till his hairs grayed, could finally anticipate carrying a grandchild....

The moment he thought about this, the Wolf King’s smile grew even deeper, to the point that he even wanted to tell Sauron in a cordial manner, “Since you’re my junior, do not hesitate to say anything!”

“This....”

Sauron still did not speak. On the contrary, he turned his head to look at the pursuing crowd!

Catching sight of Sauron’s small action, Battle Wolf Mody chuckled coldly, “With the Reyne Wolf King’s name, all pursuers of Sauron, beat it!”

Reyne Wolf King?!

They had just seen the Battle Wolf cripple Sauron in half a move, so after hearing Sofus' name, there was almost not even one second of hesitation; several hundred people dispersed completely!

Only the manager of the stadium came closer with a bit of hesitation. He belonged to the Totem Advancement Association, so he had to pay his respects to the Wolf King, His Majesty.

"Now can you say it?" The Wolf King towered above Sauron, looking down on him, "Young fellow, my patience has its limits."

"Uncle.... Ai, alright. Now that it's come to this, I can only tell the truth!"

Sauron pointed towards the underpants and tank top he was wearing, "Truthfully speaking, my current situation is due to Young Master Victor! Just before, Victor intoxicated me and stole my Flower Battle Armor to disguise himself as me and attend a duel...."

"What? The one who fought in the duel just now wasn't you?!"

The stadium's manager stared at Sauron, flabbergasted.

"Of course it wasn't me. Just before, you criticized me for fleeing, but if you think about it, if I really did do that.... Would I still dare to go look for you while dressed like this?"

"That, then that person...." The manager's face was ashen, "Was

truly Young Master Victor?!”

With their confrontation, the truth of the situation seemed to have been revealed.

An idea had already formed in the Wolf King’s mind: Victor was displeased with the Professor as a love rival, so he intoxicated Sauron and stole his Flower Battle Armor to go duel with the Professor.

However, Victor was not the Professor’s match. In the end, he could only abandon the Flower Battle Armor to help himself stall for time to flee....

Right now, Victor had already ‘disappeared’!

When he thought till here, the Wolf King’s face darkened.

Victor, for the sake of a woman, you actually stole your friend’s belonging without the slightest care of your face as Reyne Mountain’s young master?!

Disgraceful!

Once this news spreads, how can I as your father have the face to meet the experts in this world!

“Immediately take me to the stadium and capture Victor, this

unworthy son!”

The Wolf King’s eyes had already turned blood-red due to anger, but the manager blanked out, “Go to the stadium? Your Majesty, Victor has already fled for a while now. I’m afraid if we go to the stadium....”

He wanted to say, “I’m afraid if we go to the stadium, we won’t be able to find Victor,” but before he could even finish speaking, he shivered in fear!

Damn it, he was really too muddled!

Wolves were the ancestors of hunting dogs and were the most skilled in tracing people through smell, so who under the heavens could compare with the Reyne Wolf King?!

Thinking of that year when Rheim Empire had warred against Janya, Janya’s number one expert, Marshal Iron Eye who was ranked on the Totem Heaven Ranking, had hidden himself within the million soldier army, taking the opportunity to kill seventy-some mid to high-ranking commanders. His actions completely paralyzed Rheim Empire’s commanding echelon for a whole three days!

At long last, the Rheim Emperor used a huge some of money to invite the Reyne Wolf King: he only used fifteen minutes. In fifteen minutes, Sofus found Marshal Iron Eye’s exact location, which led to the most stunning battle in a century’s worth of history between Rondor and Iron Eye!

In terms of tracking and investigating, Reyne Mountain was the absolute champion on the continent!

Furious!

The closer they drew to the stadium, the more furious the Wolf King felt. When they arrived before Arena #1, his fury was nearly at the bursting point!

Although Sauron had been at his side expressing goodwill the entire way and that he would not spread the fact that Victor had stolen his Flower Battle Armor, and although the stadium's manager was also acting like a yes-man, hinting that the Advancement Association would not pursue the matter of Victor's impersonation further.... His own son, the one and only son of the Reyne Wolf King and his sole successor, committed a shameless robbery?!

Disgraceful!

Sofus let out a long sigh. However, right after he inhaled following his sigh, he suddenly smelled a bizarre odor.

To ordinary people, this odor would only smell faintly of flowers; for a hunting dog, it would only be able to detect a second odor – the odor of a human carrying the scent of something like a pig.

However, Sofus, the one who was completely unrivalled on the

continent and could locate Marshal Iron Eye, had detected a third smell! Under the cover of the flowery fragrance, this smell was extremely faint. Even so, he was absolutely certain that it was…. The smell of fresh blood!

Victor's blood!

Weng!

(*TL: sound effect for buzzing/droning/humming)

Something seemed to have exploded in Sofus' mind, and all the wrath he felt towards his son immediately dissipated like smoke. He spoke, his voice tremoring, "Mody, Tyke, you two…. Have you smelt any particular odor?"

The faces of Battle Wolf and Berserk Wolf had also changed. They had likewise noticed the smell of blood, but they did not dare to mention the outcome they imagined had happened.

"Uncle Sofus, is something wrong?"

Seeing that the faces of the three people from Reyne Mountain had all changed, Sauron had taken it to be that he had made a mistake or something. However, Sofus seemed to have not heard what he said, and instead shook as he walked to the northeastern corner of the arena.

This was where Jiang Nan dissected Victor.

Picking up a piece of limestone that Jiang Nan had trampled on, Sofus sniffed it. Suddenly, two streams of tears flowed down his cheeks.

“Such a quick blade, haha, such a quick blade!”

Abrupt and maniacal laughter burst out from Sofus’ mouth along with tears on his face. He was like a lunatic with his head of white hair, and he held the stone, murmuring to himself, “One blade, two blades, three blades....”

“Uncle, Uncle!”

Sauron grabbed Sofus’ arm in alarm, but Battle Wolf pulled him away and managed to squeeze out, “Your Majesty, this limestone has probably absorbed the various odors from the vicinity.... I can’t identify it. I truly cannot identify it. Tell me, did I smell it wrong?”

Was he really unable to identify it? This was simply because he did not dare to confirm his results!

“Battle Wolf, you are not wrong!” Sofus had already stopped his maniacal laughter. He knelt on the floor as he pointed to the stone, his face expressionless, “Thirteen minutes and twenty-five seconds ago, the smell of fresh blood mingled with the earthen smell of the stone. This blood was sweet and vigorous, meaning that the Professor cut my son’s throat.... 13:26 minutes ago, the stone absorbed a second odor of blood, one that was heavily fishy and smelt of decay. This heavy odor signified that the Professor

chopped off my son's two hands.... The rest of the odors become chaotic. I do not know what the Professor did.... But my son Victor has already, already.... Aoooo!!!"

A wolf's mournful howl vibrated through Sun City!

The Professor killed Victor?!

The Reyne Wolf King's investigate ability are actually this terrifying?!

Tonight's moonlight.... Is too f***ing beautiful!

This mournful howl descended on Sauron's ears like heavenly tones, but his face expressed immense sorrow and grief, "Uncle, what did you say? Don't tell me that my boy Victor has already.... My good brother!" His face twisted as he spat out in rage: "Professor! It is definitely the Professor who killed Victor, used my Flower Battle Armor to bag his dead body up, and left the stadium! You damned manager, you crowd of blind people! You guys, you guys actually let the Professor openly and arrogantly take Victor's corpse from this place?!"

The manager was absolutely terror-stricken with this accusation. They could not bear the crime of letting the perpetrator off, so he responded panickedly: "Sauron, don't slander people like that! Both you and I are aware of his large Victor's body is. The Professor could not have possibly brought Victor's corpse out before our very eyes! Your Majesty, Sofus, our several hundred people will testify that the Professor could not have possibly taken

out Victor's body. Therefore.... He may not have actually killed Victor!" Halting, he then angrily declared: "Sauron, if you want to accuse the Professor and accuse us, you must take out even stronger evidence! Prove that the Professor could have taken Victor's hundred-kilogram werewolf body before several hundred people's eyes!"

That's right. If one was to say that the Professor killed Victor, how exactly did he take away Victor's corpse?

If this mystery could not be solved, then even if this was taken to the Imperial Court, the court would only say one sentence, "There is insufficient evidence, so the Professor is pronounced not guilty and shall be released!"

"You want proof? My nose is proof!"

Suddenly, the Wolf King stood up. His face no longer expressed sorrow or grief, but his eyes were vacant, vacant as though everything was so insignificant that nothing mattered!

This sort of expression was what would be considered the most terrifying!

The manager was so frightened that he lowered his head and timidly answered: "Your Majesty, you are Victor's father. According to the law, your sense of smell cannot act as evidence...."

“Alright, my sense of smell cannot be considered as evidence....”

Pu! Sofus suddenly crushed the limestone that had absorbed his son’s blood and stuffed it into mouth in handfuls. He then said coldly: “But when our Reyne Mountain does business, do we need evidence?! Battle Wolf and Berserk Wolf, the gray wolf howls to the moon. Command all the wolf clan members that at the 250-kilometer circumference line around Sun City.... Lock Sun City down and pursue the Professor!”

Chapter 075: Weylin And Jiang Nan

The course of nature ran without rest, and if there was a cause, there would always be an effect.... This phrase was pretty damn reasonable.

If Jiang Nan had not thought of going to Mount Longinus to dig tunnels, he would have most definitely been cornered in some alleyway by a group of wolf clan members. After a few howls, he would most likely turn into some wolf's excrement after two gulps.

On top of that, Jiang Nan's good luck was still continuing!

When Sofus sealed off Sun City, Jiang Nan had already arrived near a large river outside the city.

Since it was midwinter, the river's waters had already frozen over. Jiang Nan excavated a block of ice, then threw Victor's corpse and the Flower Battle Armor in. They both froze over into an ice block as well, which Jiang Nan then carried along as he went on his way.

Jiang Nan could swear to the heavens that his actions were only to guarantee that the corpse would not decay.

However, the river's waters and ice just so happened to disperse the smell, and Jiang Nan's inadvertent actions subsequently led to pursuing wolf clan members howling in frustration several hours later because they could not determine Jiang Nan's whereabouts.

Jiang Nan was still trekking towards Mount Longinus, but.... Sun City had already been turned upside down!

Wolves!

Countless giant wolves appeared out of nowhere, snarling ferociously as they guarded every major entrance around Sun City. If a person put up even the slightest bit of resistance, the group of wolves were sure to swarm over and tear the person to bloody pieces!

When the light of dawn soon broke through in the sky, Sun City had already turned into a world dyed in blood. Families wept bitterly and every person was in complete panic!

Sofus, on the other hand, sat upright in the city square beneath a Dragonhawk statue. His two eyes were narrowed as he gazed disdainfully at Sun City's miserable state!

"Your Majesty!"

Not long after, Battle Wolf Mody rushed over and knelt on the ground, saying, "The wolves have already searched every corner of Sun City. They caught onto the Professor's scent at the eastern entrance, so Berserk Wolf and Sauron are currently continuing the pursuit!"

Sofus was expressionless.

After another while, Berserk Wolf and Sauron hastily ran over, with Berserk Wolf smiling bitterly as he reported: “Your Majesty, I tracked the scent to the vicinity of a large river, then lost any sign of the Professor! Damn it, that bastard definitely took advantage of the river water and ice to flee!”

“The Professor ran off?”

The Wolf King’s eyes widened, and a biting iciness could be seen within them!

Berserk Wolf hurriedly knelt down, “Your subordinate is incompetent!”

“Uncle, this nephew here has a bit of an immature suggestion. I don’t know if I should say it or not....”

However, Sauron’s face was full of confidence as he spoke: “Although the Professor ran, Weylin is still here. You can simply let Weylin take the initiative to hand the Professor over! If she doesn’t hand him over.... By killing Weylin, you can let my brother Victor die in greater contentedness, can you not?”

The Wolf King’s mouth curved in a cruel smile, “Where is Weylin?”

“In the suburbs, the Sixth Block!”

“Command the wolves to set out and besiege the Sixth Block!”

As the wolves moved, Weylin fretted!

Before dawn broke, Weylin was still in a pretty good mood: she had succeeded at acquiring Yulianne’s favor, to the point that Yulianne had even given her a jade token that Weylin could present to the Emperor in order to receive her reward!

Carrying this jade token, Weylin was so happy that she was unable to close her mouth.

Aooo!

Suddenly, numerous wolf howls rang out from the window!

Weylin’s smile abruptly disappeared.

Unfortunately, right at this moment, a beggar sent over the Professor’s letter of explanation!

“Dear Miss Weylin, this brother here accidently killed Victor.... Don’t worry, everything has already been handled properly. You can just deal with Sauron in relief—yours truly, the Professor who is about to disappear for several days!”

Damn it, a group of wolves were all snarling and howling, so Sofus has most definitely arrived. Professor, you actually

disappeared?!

Weylin only felt as though the firmaments had collapsed!

Yet right at this moment, Eddy simple-mindedly came looking for her and casually asked, “Weylin, where’s Yulianne?”

Yesterday, Eddy followed Jiang Nan’s advice and teamed up with Weylin to carry out the Knife Work Feast. The relationship between the two had been temporarily smoothed over, so Weylin did not respond angrily, “Yulianne, that lady, went out. She said that she wanted to see Sun City’s morning market.”

“Oh!” Eddy’s expression gleamed a bit. He inched closer to Weylin with three centimeter steps, giggling as he shyly lowered his head, “That, Miss Weylin, can I discuss something with you?”

“If you have crap then let it spew!”

“Hehe, I’ll let it out, I’ll let it out!” Eddy fiddled with his fingers, saying, “Look, Rodi, that young fellow, performed pretty well during the Knife Work Feast. Are you considering…. To reward him?”

“En, he should be rewarded!”

“Right, right, he should be rewarded! Then would you consider…. That since Rodi is a knife work slave, to reward him, you would reward him with good prospects?”

“What prospects?!” Weylin heard some ill-intentioned cunning in his words and pricked her ears up with a ‘whoosh’!

Eddy lowered his head, failing to notice Weylin’s expression, “The future prospects of a knife work chef obviously include the Imperial Culinary Institute! Miss Weylin, just sell Rodi to me, and I’ll send him to the Imperial Culinary....”

“Still dreaming your damn dreams!”

As explosive as a barrel of gunpowder that had just been ignited, Weylin seized Eddy’s collar and slapped him with a ‘pa’, “How many times has this woman told you! Rodi isn’t for sale! If a lowlife like you continues to think about Rodi.... This woman will beat your mouth rotten!”

Eddy was flabbergasted, “Weylin, Rodi is a slave, not your old sweetheart or your man. Why are you so reluctant!”

“You, you actually guessed it?” Weylin nearly blurted out, “That’s right, Rodi is the one I love! I’ve taken a fancy to him since a long time ago! Ai, it’s a pity that this past half-year, Rodi, that lowlife, did something and actually doesn’t admit to our relationship anymore. It made me so angry that I just lashed him the whole day to vent....”

Ai, these words are too embarrassing. How could *I say such a thing?!

Weylin’s face went as red as a ripe apple.

Bang!

Suddenly, a huge crash sounded from outside the window. An overseer of West Farms had been thrown in by somebody from the outside, thus smashing the courtyard house’s entrance!

Weylin’s expression immediately shifted. She dashed outside, but before she could even react, the pungent smell of a beast assailed her nostrils, making her eyes water and nearly begin dripping with tears!

Wolves. All the wolf clan members in the vicinity of Sun City had all arrived, and at least eight thousand giant wolves had besieged the courtyard house!

Weylin then caught sight of Sauron within the crowd of wolves, “Sauron! You lowlife…. You’re crippled?!”

Sauron only had one arm left, so of course he was crippled. He chuckled: “My dear Miss Weylin, now isn’t the time for you to be concerning yourself with me. Tsk, tsk, the Professor killed Victor….”

“Sauron, cut the nonsense! Weylin, immediately hand over the Professor or else not even the chickens and dogs of West Farms will be left!”

Battle Wolf Modi came to Sauron's side on the back of a giant, black wolf and slowly took down the golden spear from its back.

Ranked 729th on the Totem Equipment Ranking, Gold Prayer Spear!

Weylin recognized Battle Wolf's weapon with just a glance. Furthermore, she also knew that the Nine Wolf Generals of Reyne Mountain were also called the 'Wolf King Weapon Warriors'. This reflected the fact that all nine wolf generals had a piece of Totem Equipment with 'Prayer' as part of its name. When all nine equipment combined, it became something with which Wolf King Sofus could cross the continent without fear.... Ranked 49th on the Totem Equipment Ranking, Sacred Battle Prayer Armor!

If a piece of Prayer equipment appeared, the Wolf King was bound to appear!

Weylin closed her eyes in despair!

Then, she secretly crushed the letter of explanation in her bosom that the Professor wrote, destroying the last clue with which the Wolf King could track the Professor down!

The Professor accidentally killed Victor for *me, for West Farms!

If I can't protect the Professor now, how would I have the face to see anyone else! "Sofus, come out! The Professor is long gone! If

you wish to take vengeance, come at *me!”

Weylin determined to fight to the death. On the other hand, after a night of trekking at full speed, Jiang Nan had already arrived at Mount Longinus. He was in the cranium-shaped cave in which he had previously treated himself before!

Throwing Victor’s body and the Flower Battle Armor to the side, Jiang Nan grasped an iron shovel from the side of the cave and began digging!

Dear skeletal remains of you peerless experts....

Huh!

Aren’t you guys buried a little too deep?

Mount Longinus’ soil mainly consisted of golden soil, so it was loose and easily broken apart. After digging for around two hours, Jiang Nan had already gone around seven or eight hundred meters deep.

By this time, Jiang Nan was so hungry that his stomach started protesting, causing an urge to give up to rise up in his mind.

“Fortunately, there’s golden soil here, or else.... Phew, this brother here would starve to death!”

After one more hour, Jiang Nan grabbed a handful of golden soil. Using his right hand, he continued excavating, but his left hand stuffed the golden soil into his mouth.

Immediately, an acrid taste of decay as well as a surging current of heat flowed into Jiang Nan's mouth, streaming down his throat and into his body.

The acrid taste of decay naturally belonged to the golden soil. As for the current of heat....

Jiang Nan had eaten this golden soil for a decade, and every time he consumed it, this heat current would always form. He had already gotten accustomed to it, so he simply thought it to be a normal occurrence.

Furthermore, the heat current felt as if it was bursting with power, making Jiang Nan feel as if he was meeting an old friend.

Pu!

As Jiang Nan reminisced, the iron shovel in his right hand seemed to have pierced through something like a window screen!

He had broken through! Jiang Nan had broken through, making a hole the size of a bowl!

A dazzling, golden radiance shot out from within the hole. Rubbing his eyes, Jiang Nan looked through the hole towards the

inside....

“Banana your pig brain! Pig-brained!”

Jiang Nan was so enraged he began spitting out curses!

Chapter 076: One Forty-Secondth Of A Probability

This was a three-meter tall cavern that gleamed with golden light. All four walls and its ceiling shined with a dazzling gold color, and from time to time, one or two handfuls of golden soil would sprinkle to the ground with rustling sounds.

And right in the center of the cavern, which was right before Jiang Nan's eyes, was a wooden stake stuck upright whose thickness was similar to a person's mouth.

On the wooden stake hung a small box on which was drawn a portrait of the freak with the hanging eyeball and several words written with strong strokes, "Keke, little fellow, you've already reached all the conditions of our little deal. The item with which you can get rid of your slave marking is in the box. A manual is also within...."

The freak with the hanging eyeball had already come!

This was not anything surprising. If Jiang Nan could link the map to the structure of the human body and thus find this place, then the freak with the hanging eyeball could only have done it faster!

However, this was the problem: the freak had already come once before, meaning that all the good reapings in the cavern.... Had already been snatched up by him, did it not?!

“That pig-brained freak! If you eat meat, you should at least leave some soup for your brother here.”

Jiang Nan fiercely pounded down with his shovels and widened the entrance, then scuttled in.

Bypassing the wooden stake, Jiang Nan saw that the cavern was the size of basketball court. Corpses consisting of human bodies and beast carcasses littered the entire ground in disarray. After taking a closer count, there were a total of 41 corpses, and two of them had not yet decayed. Looking at their appearance, it was actually the Weather Totem duo—Merlin and Gibson—the experts which Mount Longinus had devoured. As expected, they were all here!

Jiang Nan breathed out a sigh of relief, seeing that it seemed that the freak with the hanging eyeball had not gone to the extreme. At the least, he had left 41 corpses for him!

However....

Jiang Nan suddenly crouched down, fiercely slapping his mouth and clutching his head. He lifted his head and yelled with a frowning face of anxiety, “Hahh!! So worrisome for this brother!”

His face had already twisted.

Counting Victor, Jiang Nan now had a grand total of 42 corpses

before him. In other words, he could choose one from the 42 corpses to be his Totem Guard!

And a problem thus arose with this situation: of the 42 corpses, exactly which one was the most suitable?

The freak with the hanging eyeball had explained once before: at the present stage, Jiang Nan could only summon ‘one’ Totem Guard. Furthermore, the quality of this Totem Guard determined his future achievements.

One forty-secondth of a probability! If Jiang Nan chose correctly and summoned the best skeleton, he would be able to advance to the Totem Master stage within half a year. No matter what variables occurred on the continent, he would still be free and unfettered!

However, if he chose wrongly….

He could just look forward to being a minor character his entire life!

Time turned back to several hours before in Sun City at the Sixth Block.

“Weylin, since you aren’t willing to hand over the Professor, aooo…. For His Highness Victor’s death, prepare to pay with your life!”

After Weylin burst out in anger, Sofus did not appear. Battle Wolf, however, laughed coldly and hefted his Gold Prayer Spear.

Golden light flashed, and the spear stabbed towards Weylin's throat!

"You think this woman's afraid of you!"

A white light shined from Weylin's body. She transformed into Snow Swallow, trying to fly into the air first!!

However, right as Weylin spread her wings, the Gold Prayer Spear suddenly split into two, which then split into four.... In the blink of an eye, spear shadows covered the entire sky before her. Pu, pu, pu! They pierced several tens of bloody holes into Weylin's swallow wings!

The power gap between an intermediate-rank Totem Master and a primary-rank Totem Warrior was truly too wide....

"Hold back!"

Suddenly, a sound wave akin to an iron fist blasted out from the courtyard, firmly jolting Battle Wolf's spear!

Talik stood guard before Weylin! He was only an executioner, not a warrior skilled at fighting, so after risking death to block Battle Wolf's spear, he had already been shaken to the point that all seven orifices bled. His blood-red pupils almost seemed to be

immersed in blood-colored water!

However, Talik continued to steadily stand his ground before Weylin like a war god protecting his faith, preferring to die than retreat!

Battle Wolf stared blankly!

Weylin was completely dumbstruck!

At Mount Longinus, Talik had also rescued someone from Sauron. He could still be said to have put forth all his effort as well, going for broke! However, this time, Talik was totally staking his own life to contend!

Exactly what did he want to request of the Professor that he actually dared to risk his own life?!

“General Mody, I am an Imperial Count, the vice-captain of the Supreme Court’s execution squad, Talik. Please listen to what I have to say!”

Talik clambered up from the ground and wiped away the blood on his face. He placed his dangling hands onto his waist and panted with a fierce face, declaring: “Regarding today’s matter, I will....”

“Shut your mouth! I am well aware of your identity, Talik! You want to use your identity as a high-ranking official to protect Weylin and the Professor? Ha! What a joke!” Battle Wolf raised his

golden spear up high and laughed uproariously: “Reyne Mountain is a wolf clan of the wild! We don’t care about you high-ranking officials and aristocrats! Beat it, or else I’ll kill you along with them!”

“Alright, since the General doesn’t like me using my identity, then I’ll simply discuss concerning the morality of relations!”

Talik suddenly gestured strangely: he curled his right hand into a fist and positioned it horizontally against his chest, while his left hand fastened to his abdomen. All the while, the way he gestured seemed to portray that head of a massive lion, “General Mody, before the ‘Three Saints withdrew and the Hundred Thousand Great Mountains disintegrated’, Reyne Mountain was also one of the disciples of ‘Saint Jupiter’. I was born in the ‘Steel Clan’, and can be considered as an orthodox, direct descendant of Saint Jupiter. Please leave a way out for the Professor and Weylin on behalf of the fact that we are of the same origins!”

Weylin was absolutely befuddled when she heard these words!

The Three Saints was a term of address that pierced through the ear like lightning. It referred to three legendary figures who had long since vanished over a millennium ago, and Jupiter was one of them.

However, what did the Hundred Thousand Great Mountains and the Steel Clan refer to?

However, Weylin’s confusion did not mean that the people of

Reyne Mountain did not understand. The crowd of wolves parted and Sofus walked out with furrowed eyebrows, “You say that you are an orthodox, direct descendant of Ancestor Jupiter and a descendant of the Steel Clan, but what proof do you have?”

“The clan leader of the ‘Steel Clan’ of the present generation is precisely my Father, Rohn. This matter is not some kind of secret amongst the upper echelons of the Empire, and the Wolf King can investigate as he wishes!”

Talik followed up by pointing to his two eyes, “Furthermore, I am sure that the Wolf King is well aware of the origins of my two blood-red pupils. With a pair of eyes like these, does the Wolf King still not believe in my identity?”

“Huh. As expected, you are an orthodox, direct descendant of the Saint. In that case, you can also be considered to be my nephew!”

Although likewise considered a nephew, Sauron was still beneath Sofus’ status. However, for Talik, he personally came before him and patted his shoulder in praise, “Talik, on behalf of your father’s face and our relationship as descendants from the same origin, I will definitely compensate you for the losses Battle Wolf has brought to you. However, today…. The enemy who killed my son cannot live under the same sky as me! Step aside!”

“Uncle! I beg *you….”

“Talik, I respect that your father is the orthodox saint, which is why I gave you face. However, do you wish to force me to disown

you as my nephew?!”

Sofus eyes flashed coldly like lightning, “Berserk Wolf, invite Talik to the inner city hospital. Under my name, no one is allowed to neglect him!”

Berserk Wolf Tyke dashed out, grabbed Talik, then left!

The only one willing to stand up for her had been taken away, so Weylin let out a bitter laugh and stood up with difficulty. “Wolf King, seeing as how you speak reason, all that will happen is *my death. However....” She pointed at Chef Eddy who had long since been scared out of his wits, “This person is Talik’s friend and has no relationship with *me! Release him!”

“Miss Weylin?!”

Even if he was dreaming, Eddy would have never imagined that the Weylin who would constantly batter people with offensive remarks would be so just. He spoke out desperately: “My goodness! Weylin, you’re just enough, but *I can’t just run away right at the front line! What are you afraid of? Don’t forget that Yulianne is still a guest at our residence!”

Yulianne!

The moment this name was spoken, Sofus’ facial expression changed heavily as he glared viciously at Sauron, “Sauron, Yulianne is actually here? Why did you not say so?!”

If I had said it, would you still have dared to besiege Weylin's courtyard house? Sauron gave a faint chuckle, "Uncle, the heavens and the earth are enormous, but these are just words. The Professor killed Victor, so if *you wish to avenge him, it is only right and proper! Even if Yulianne were here, she would not fail to speak reason, would she!"

"That's right. I respect Yulianne's strength, but she cannot ignore the pain I feel from losing my son!" Sofus nodded, then suddenly called out loudly, "Miss Yulianne, if I, Sofus, could invite *you to show yourself! Today, I've mistakenly surrounded Miss' courtyard house, and am willing to apologize before you in your presence. However, may Miss understand my difficulty and permit to kill Weylin in vengeance!"

What powerful strength!

Just a simple name had scared Sofus to the point of apologizing right on scene. Exactly how powerful was Yulianne?!

If Yulianne were here, she probably could terrorize Sofus into retreat!

However....

Just several minutes before, Weylin had personally said, "Yulianne went out!"

Weylin's eyes shifted as she pointed to the main gate and said, "Sofus, wait here! I'll go invite Miss Yulianne out!"

She turned and entered the courtyard.

Lola just so happened to be hiding behind the door, and she spoke anxiously: "Miss, Yulianne's not even here!"

"You don't say! Of course *I know she's not here!" Weylin then whispered: "Lola, every five minutes, go out and tell Sofus that Yulianne is in the middle of cooking. To see her, he'll just have to wait outside!"

And the sound of a sigh, "Just stall for time as best as you can, ideally until Yulianne returns...."

Weylin was waiting for Yulianne to return and save her.

However, at this moment, Yulianne was....

Sun City, Third Block, the morning marketplace.

After the Wolf King ordered the besiegement of the city, the bustling marketplace of the previous days had long since vanished. Only occasionally would a few people run past, and that was only to collect the bodies of the relatives who had lost their lives to the wolves!

Seeing this, Yulianne knitted her eyebrows, “The crowd of wolves must be due to Reyne Mountain’s Wolf King arriving. Rhessat, let us return and find Weylin.”

The Golden Lion nodded and was just about to move when a voice suddenly rang out from before them, “Happy New Year, Miss Yulianne! Are you interested in undergoing a transaction?”

Mister Qian!

The mysterious expert who was worthy enough to make Yulianne reveal herself and bow, Mister Qian, was currently blocking Yulianne’s way.

He stood at a place about seven steps diagonal of Yulianne, a place that just so happened to be somewhere Yulianne would have to pass through, and also a place that was most optimal for ambushing Yulianne!

“Mister Qian, our family’s Miss has no interest in any sort of business. Step aside!”

Sensing Mister Qian’s hostility, the Golden Lion’s mane began standing on end.

“No, she will definitely be interested. If you don’t believe me, you can listen to my conditions....”

Mister Qian’s smile suddenly permeated with an enigmatic air.

As he fixed his gaze on Yulianne, his voice suddenly went icy, “As long as you accept my conditions, I will not kill you and expose.... Your game of impersonating Yulianne!”

Chapter 077: The Genuine Or Fake Yulianne

Yulianne's body jolted.

"As expected, Mister Qian is incredibly sharp!"

She then gave a slight bow, "I concluded that I had already perfected the art of imitating Yulianne flawlessly, and even my knife work has reached seven tenths of Yulianne's level. I wonder how Mister Qian detected that it was me?"

Mister Qian slowly put up two fingers, "First, your eyes! I've personally seen Yulianne's eyes before, and they exude a mysterious and exceedingly superior air. You do not possess Yulianne's martial capability to bewitch the moon with one blade and fell a thousand-troop army in one stroke, much less the heart of an expert who looks down on all the experts under heaven. That is why you will forever be unable to imitate Yulianne's charm!"

"Then the second?"

"The second...." Mister Qian shrugged, "I just so happened to know that Yulianne has a personal maid named Anya.... Isn't that right? Miss Anya?!"

Anya tacitly agreed to her identity: taking off her mask, she revealed herself to be a seventeen or eighteen year old girl whose face was plain and unnoticeable, similar to a girl who would live next door.

“Many thanks for Mister Qian’s advice. I wonder what the second part of the transaction is?”

Mister Qian answered seriously: “I would like to ask Miss Anya to find Yulianne immediately and relay to her this: the Janyan Empire hopes to invite Miss Yulianne to visit for a few days!”

Anya nodded, “I will certainly relay Mister Qian’s invitation as soon as possible. However, whether my family’s Miss will accept….”

“Just say that it is I, Qian Duoduo, ranked ninth on the Totem Heaven Ranking, and Marshal Iron Eye, ranked second on the Totem Heaven Ranking! It is us two Totem Heaven Ranking experts who would like to extend the invitation. Miss Yulianne will certainly accept then!”

“As expected, Mister Qian understands my family’s Miss. Well then, Anya will take her leave now!”

Anya faintly bowed, then walked past Mister Qian.

“Wait a moment!” Mister Qian chuckled, “I still have a question…. Of course, this question isn’t part of our transaction. You can choose to answer or not to answer…. Where is the true Yulianne?”

“Even if I tell you, would you dare to find her?”

Anya turned her head and laughed.

Mister Qian went blank, then laughed heartily.

At this time, the Golden Lion could not understand this clever and sharp-witted conversation, so indignant at Mister Qian's forcefulness, he berated: "Qian Duoduo, I'm not afraid to tell you that my family's Miss is currently making an offering for a deceased friend. If you dare to disrupt her offering ritual.... Hmph, be careful not to lose your head!"

"Deceased friend? To be able to become friends with Yulianne, that person must have been quite powerful while alive, hmm?"

"Far beyond powerful! Do you know of the Three Saints on the Totem Ranking who withdrew themselves from the world?"

"Of course I know!"

"Then do you know that before the Three Saints, there was the story of the 'Four Saints' too?"

"I know of that as well!"

"Then do you know why the Four Saint became the Three Saints?"

“Are you telling me that you know?”

“Of course I know! The reason why the Four Saints became the Three Saints was because one of the Saints was offed by my family’s Miss’ deceased friend!”

Offed a Saint?! Mister Qian’s pupils suddenly contracted!

Drip!

A drop of cold sweat actually fell from his forehead!

Anya slightly knitted her eyebrows as she called out to the Golden Lion, “You’ve spoken too much. Let us go; we’ll go look for Miss right now!”

The two of them left Sun City.

Mister Qian, on the other hand, stood in the middle of the road for seven or eight minutes in silence. Suddenly, an outrageous thought appeared in his mind.

That person actually killed a Saint when he was alive....

Ai, how come I’m not a Ghost Totem? If I was a Ghost Totem Master, and then I summoned that expert’s skeleton....

The throne of the number one expert in the world would have to change masters then!

After departing from Sun City, Anya and the Golden Lion came directly to Mount Longinus.

Correct! The true Yulianne was on Mount Longinus!

Yulianne's deceased friend, the peak expert who was able to kill a Saint when he was still alive, was buried within this dormant volcano as well!

Soothing moonlight shined upon the peak of Mount Longinus, and the reflection of the red lava along with the golden radiance of the golden soil appeared strange and wondrous under its light, filling the place with an intangible and indiscernible air of mystery.

Within that shroud of red and gold, a gown of white fluttered and waved, while long, raven black hair danced gracefully in the air. With a silver mask, a figure dressed in a gown whiter than snow stood in the fierce and biting wind of the mountain.

There was absolutely no difference between this person's appearance and Anya's disguise as Yulianne, but if Mister Qian could venture to say something, it was that within those boundless yet intense eyes, a nearly unnoticeable hint of sorrow existed.

The strongest under the heavens, a hint of worry. This was the

continent's number one beauty, the sovereign of knife work. This, was the person that no one could imitate....

Yulianne!

At this moment, Yulianne was currently gazing calmly through the reflecting red light of the lava towards the seemingly bottomless volcanic opening.

"Miss, Anya was incapable and was seen through by someone!"

Anya and the Golden Lion came to Yulianne's side.

Yulianne seemed to have not heard, and those starry eyes of hers continued to fix onto that volcanic opening.

"Miss, you haven't made your offering to your comrade yet. What are you looking at?"

The Golden Lion came to the edges of the volcanic opening and looked down curiously.

Unfortunately, he was not powerful enough, and could only see the red light.

Yulianne softly opened her vermilion lips, her voice ringing out like celestial tones, "A primary rank Ghost Totem Warrior is selecting a Totem Guard down there."

She continued with a faint laugh, “Moreover, he’s actually chosen the skeleton of my old friend!”

The Ghost Totem master Yulianne was referring to was naturally Jiang Nan!

And the skeleton Jiang Nan had set his sights on was precisely that of the peak expert who had once killed a Saint!

However....

The process Jiang Nan had undergone to choose this skeleton was quite unconventional.

More accurately, this process could be split into three steps: during the first step, Jiang Nan paced back and forth between the forty-two corpses, only to suddenly throw the familiar corpses of Victor and the Weather duo aside.

These three corpses were only about primary, intermediate rank Totem Warriors, which were not up to Jiang Nan’s standard.

The second step: Jiang Nan was most skilled at dissecting human bodies, so when selecting his Totem Guard, he naturally chose the human skeletons that he was most familiar with and heaved all the beast corpses aside.

When the third step came around....

Of the remaining human skeletons, there were delicate bone structures, wide hip and pelvic bones, and relatively small skeletal structures. Any corpses that conformed to these characteristics were definitely female, so Jiang Nan threw any female corpse he encountered behind him!

This unlucky fellow who deserved to be incapable of finding a girlfriend was fiercely thinking in his heart: Pig-brained women! None of you find me up to par, but this brother here doesn't find you up to par either!

"....."

After finishing these three steps, what lay before Jiang Nan was simply....

Something he had no other choice about, the final corpse!

To be precise, it was a skeleton.

Furthermore, this skeleton was extremely unusual: Jiang Nan had dissected a countless number of corpses. If one was to give him a bone, he could even determine the basic characteristics of the physiology of the person to whom the bone belonged when he or she was still alive. However, this skeleton, whether it was because it was too ancient or some other reason, exuded a faint, golden light, and its bone quality was as fine as gold. Solely by looking at

its outer appearance, forget its basic physiological characteristics, Jiang Nan could not even determine its gender—it was probably, maybe eighty percent, seemingly, most likely, male!

The only thing Jiang Nan was sure about was that this skeleton was extraordinarily old!

But, no matter what, it was the only choice.

“Alright, alright! I guess it’ll be you then!”

Jiang Nan shrugged his shoulders helplessly and inched closer to this golden skeleton with difficulty, or rather, drew nearer to the one who had once cut down a Saint.... A peerless expert!

Chapter 078: What Is Summoned Is An Expert!

At almost the exact same moment on the peak of Mount Longinus!

The Golden Lion pounded his chest and roared: “Miss, a trifling Ghost Totem master dares to profane your friend’s skeleton! What are you waiting for? I’ll go kill him then!”

Yulianne stood with her hands behind her back, her soul-captivating, starry eyes just as calm as before.

“Why should Miss take action?”

Anya laughed and said: “Ignoring the fact that that person is only a tiny primary rank Ghost Totem Warrior, even the Ghost Totem King, Domeyer, could forget about summoning and profaning that friend’s skeleton!”

“Why?”

“There is a phrase among Ghost Totems that experts cannot be easily dishonored! To be frank, there is a rank restriction when Ghost Totems summon their Totem Guards....” Anya explained: “For example, if a person is a 1st level Totem King, then when he dies, anyone who wishes to summon his skeleton must possess the same rank as that Totem King or higher. Rhessat, just think about it. If that old friend was powerful to an unimaginable degree, after

her death, how could a primary rank Ghost Totem Warrior summon her remains?”

(*TL: Yes, Chinese raws denote that it is a she. However, I can’t be sure if it is actually a she or the author just made a mistake and it’s a he.)

The Golden Lion blanked out, then let out a loud laugh, “That’s right, that’s right! Experts cannot be easily dishonored! To want to desecrate her skeleton, a mere Ghost Totem Warrior is far from being qualified!”

Within the cave, Jiang Nan was completely oblivious to the fact that the golden skeleton he had taken a fancy too actually belonged to a peerless expert who had once killed a Saint. He did not even know of the saying, ‘experts cannot be easily dishonored.

In actuality, the rank restriction in regards to summoning Totem Guards was basic knowledge that the freak with the hanging eyeball had already imparted to Jiang Nan.

However, this portion of content had been destroyed by his dear Auntie Alisa!

The reason being, this toy isn’t superior enough. It can only hold my Rodi back....

Without any hesitation, Jiang Nan squatted down next to the skeleton’s left hand.

“Oh. Let me think for a second. The incantation for summoning is....”

According to the secret manual, Jiang Nan pointed his right hand towards the skeleton’s forehead and condensed necromantic energy to the tips of his five fingers.

He then recited the summoning incantation.

“By might of my name, here is born an eternal life. Arise, my Ghost Totem Guard!”

Suddenly, Jiang Nan felt something like a cold stream form in-between his eyebrows that soon flowed to his fingertips, transforming into five pallid lights that shot into the space between the skeleton’s eyebrow ridge!

This was the Ghost Totem summoning incantation!

Hah, this brother here has a Totem Guard now too!

Jiang Nan clenched his fist in excitement!

But after one second,

Two seconds,

A total of three minutes passed, and the skeleton had not moved even one tiny bit!

“Could it be…. That I recited the incantation incorrectly?”

Jiang Nan kneaded his cheek to loosen the facial muscles around his mouth, then once again recited: “By might of my name, here is born an eternal life!”

Just like what had happened three minutes before, a cold stream once again appeared between his eyebrows, extended out to his fingertips, and shot into the spot between the skeleton’s eyebrow ridges….

But what was depressing was this: the skeleton had no reaction whatsoever!

Jiang Nan furrowed his eyebrows. Pig brains! The cold stream and lights prove that this brother here definitely didn’t recite the wrong words, so why….

“By might of my name, here is born an eternal life!”

Jiang Nan recited the incantation a third time.

However, there was still no change with the skeleton. It’s empty eye sockets gleamed with a gold light, as if it was mocking Jiang Nan’s incompetence!

“Huh? This is so damn worrying!”

Jiang Nan plopped down beside the skeleton in disappointment.

How strange. This brother here followed the requirements in the secret manual to the smallest detail! How could nothing happen?!

Suddenly, Jiang Nan looked at the stake that the freak with the hanging eyeball had erected near the entrance.

“Keke! Young fellow, when you see these words, you’ll probably be right in the middle of summoning a Totem Guard, right?”

Surprisingly, there were still additional words on the back of the stake, “Then are you grumbling about me, saying that I’ve already plundered this entire place?” The words continued to read, “Correct, I did in fact take a few higher level corpses, but…. Experts cannot be easily dishonored! My rank is not high enough to summon the strongest corpses there, so I left them inside the cave….” Further on, it was written: “After a period of time, I will personally deal with these stronger skeletal remains, and I hope that you do not casually move these few skeletons around…. Alright, I’ve already said all that needs to be said. Choose a skeleton most suited to your rank and continue summoning!”

Gawking at these words, Jiang Nan continuously smacked his forehead.

Experts cannot be easily dishonored!

So it turns out that my continual failures were because my rank was not high enough, and because I chose a skeleton that exceeded my level far too much....

Suddenly, Jiang Nan had an epiphany!

In the eyes of the Yuanzhi Continent's humans, experts could not be easily dishonored, and summonings had to take rank restrictions into consideration. This was probably a fundamental rule that could not be broken.

However, in the eyes of an anatomy specialist, could experts.... Truly not be easily dishonored?!

Pressing on the skeleton's skull, Jiang Nan used his sleeve to wipe it a bit, while his mouth spoke, "Experts cannot be easily dishonored! Alright, you are an expert. Your ranking is too high, and I have no way of summoning your entire skeleton...."

"However! What if I disassemble your 206 bones, then summon them separately?! Would the difficulty of summoning them be brought down to.... One fraction of the original 206, or even lower?"

After saying this, the two hands Jiang Nan had laid onto the skull gently twisted.

Crack! Without any visibly complicated movements and just a gentle twist, the golden skeleton's skull.... Was detached!

Jiang Nan then ignored the other bones and pointed his hand towards the skull, reciting softly: "By might of my name, here is born an eternal life!"

His voice had not even stopped ringing when a voice abruptly appeared in Jiang Nan's mind, "From this day forward, I am your most devoted servant, your most valiant death warrior! All that *you wish, I will do! Master, please bestow upon me a name!"

Success!

As expected, after disassembling the skeleton, the difficulty of summoning plummeted by several hundred times!

Jiang Nan gave a calm chuckle and pushed up on his nose as though he was readjusting the golden-rimmed glasses he had in his past world....

"Master, please bestow upon me a name!"

The skull called out once more!

However, Jiang Nan was totally calm and unhurried. Casually throwing the skull to one side and detaching a rib from the skeleton, he said, "By might of my name, here is born an eternal life. Dear Mister Rib.... arise!"

“From this day forward, I am your most devoted servant, your most valiant death warrior....”

This rib also heeded!

Jiang Nan finally gave a hearty laugh in delight!

One must know that what Jiang Nan wanted was not just one or two detached bones, but an entire skeleton!

But the freak with the hanging eyeball had already once said that at his present stage, Jiang Nan could only summon ‘one’ Ghost Totem Guard. In that case, if he was to completely disassemble all 206 bones, would these 206 bones be considered as ‘different components of the same Totem Guard’ or ‘206 different Totem Guards’?

Jiang Nan was uncertain about this question!

So he made an attempt and realized that he could summon the skull and rib right after each other. This indicated that no matter how many pieces the skeleton was disassembled into, they were all considered as a component of the same Totem Guard!

In other words....

Jiang Nan could individually summon the 206 bones and take

advantage of his unrivalled skeletal knowledge to reassemble them into a complete skeleton!

Experts cannot be easily dishonored?

After taking you apart and then reassembling you, *I can summon you as my.... TOTEM GUARD!

On the peak of Mount Longinus!

Seeing Jiang Nan's disassembly skills, Yulianne's beautiful eyes finally flashed with astonishment, "Half a second, he actually only used half a second!"

"Miss, what are *you saying?"

Following the direction of Yulianne's gaze, Anya looked towards the volcanic opening in confusion. Unfortunately, she was just like the Golden Lion, and her strength was not enough to penetrate through the red light and clearly observe Jiang Nan's actions.

"Half a second, half a second...."

Yulianne was still murmuring to herself.

The Golden Lion anxiously asked: "Miss, exactly what did you see? Aiyah, you're worrying me to death!"

After a moment of silence.

Yulianne suddenly laughed, and with this laugh, the silver mask that covered her face from the nose tip and above still appeared icy and fierce. However, below the mask, her mouth curved in a perfect arc that instantly made the world devoid of all color!

“Half a second! This Ghost Totem master used only half a second to detach my old friend’s skull!” The human body’s most complicated and intricate bone, the skull!

“What?!”

Anya and the Golden Lion blurted out cries of surprise, while the Golden Lion directly said: “Miss, if *you could please use ‘Light Circuit’ so that I can see this person!”

Yulianne gave a slight nod and suddenly raised her two hands.

Her eyes fixed onto Jiang Nan while ripples suddenly appeared between her two hands, and within those ripples…. Was a masked man in a short, black garment.

It was precisely Jiang Nan!

Yulianne could actually display a scene happening a thousand meters away right in front of her!

Within the ripples, Jiang Nan had already begun summoning his third bone. He easily detached a vertebra and called out, “By might of my name, here is born an eternal life!”

“How great!”

When the Golden Lion saw Jiang Nan’s skill at disassembling the bones, his face grew solemn as he squeezed out with difficulty: “This person’s level is not high, but his understanding of the human skeleton…. I bet even Ghost Totem King Dormeyer cannot compare! Anya, do you dare to make a bet with me?”

Anya was completely silent!

The Golden Lion turned his head and said in dissatisfaction: “Hey, I’m talking to you!”

“No, I don’t dare bet!”

Anya’s expression was as tranquil as before, but her voice carried a hint of bitterness, “Because I know that I cannot win. Furthermore, I even know…. That using half a second to detach the skull is not that man’s true strength. He can do this even faster, even by several tens of times more!”

The Golden Lion was gobsmacked, “How do you….”

“Rhessat, have you forgotten? Steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade…. The Great Master who butchered a pig in

seventeen seconds when we entered the city is precisely this person!”

“Butchered a pig in seventeen seconds?”

Yulianne slowly turned her head in their direction.

“Yes, Miss. Not only did this person use only twenty-seven blade movements to break down a pig in seventeen seconds, he even imparted seven words to me. They are…. Steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade!”

“Steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade….”

Yulianne pondered on these seven words.

Only now did the Golden Lion suddenly realize: “Damn it, I nearly forgot! Miss, no matter how this person’s knife skills are, he’s currently taking apart the skeleton of *your friend! I’m going to kill him!”

“No!”

Yulianne stuck out the index finger of her right hand and shook it lightly, “Steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade! Because of this phrase, I will fulfill the wishes of this Ghost Totem master. The strongest skeleton under the heavens…. Will be given to him!”

Her voice brimmed with fighting spirit, “Anya, this person needs a period of time before he can finish summoning. Go and make immediate preparations so that once he finishes his summoning, I can have a knife work showdown with him!”

After she said this, Yulianne pressed two hands on her belt.

Three knives hung on her belt!

These were precisely Yulianne’s world-famous…. Cutting knives!

Cutting knives versus the Golden Inch Blade. Which would be the ruler in knife work?!

Chapter 079: First Totem Guard Jack Is Born!

Under Yulianne's gaze, Jiang Nan summoned the rest of the bones one by one.

However, he was, after all, only a primary rank Ghost Totem warrior, and possessed a limited amount of necromantic energy. After summoning the seventh bone, Jiang Nan was so tired that his face had turned pale and drenched in sweat.

However, after resting for a short while, he continued summoning!

Just like that, by resting when he became weary and eating golden soil when he became hungry, Jiang Nan began his long and arduous summoning process.

In Sun City, on the other hand, the situation had developed quite strangely.

"Uncle, four hours have already passed!"

Sauron stood next to the Wolf King and surmised with a frown: "Yulianne still hasn't appeared. In my opinion.... Yulianne isn't even in the courtyard. Weylin is deceiving us!"

How would the Wolf King be unaware of the possibility that

Weylin might be deceiving him? However, if there was even one ten-thousandths of a chance that Yulianne was inside, he would not dare to be rash!

Bewitching the moon with one blade and felling a thousand-troop army in one stroke....

Yulianne could not be provoked!

It soon became five o'clock in the afternoon, and the sun had already begun setting.

But Sofus still had not made a decision! At this moment, Battle Wolf walked over angrily, "Your Majesty, a giant wolf patrolling Sun City just sent over some news: he said that this morning, there was a conflict between Yulianne and a fatty who looked like a merchant. The two of them exchanged a few words, and then Yulianne departed from Sun City!"

"Yulianne already left?"

In an instant, the Wolf King's face turned green!

Disgraceful! I'm the great master of a hundred thousand wolves, yet I've actually been duped by a girl like Weylin?!

"Command the wolves to attack! As long as they belong to West Farms.... Leave none alive!"

“Ai. What should have happened is now happening....”

In the courtyard, Weylin heard the Wolf King’s roar and sighed bitterly.

Talik had been taken away and Yulianne had departed from Sun City....

No more reinforcements were left, and the only path left for her was death!

Weylin raised her head and looked at the people within the courtyard: three farm managers and several overseers.

At this moment, their hands and feet were trembling, and color had already begun draining from their faces. Under the oppression of several thousand giant wolves, if they said they were not scared, it would be absolute bulls**t!

“Are you guys afraid of dying?”

Weylin asked in a strained voice.

An overseer laughed, “Miss, we brothers have followed *you for so many years. We’re afraid of getting the wrong end of the stick and being treated injustly, but we have never feared death!”

“Then have you all made proper arrangements for your families?”

“The gold coins that Miss rewarded us with that day are enough to last our families a lifetime!”

“Alright!” Weylin snatched out the whip at her waist and raised it, declaring: “In this lifetime of mine, *I’ve tasted bitterness and defeat, but I’ve never gotten the worst of something! Damn, I’ll count it enough to just bring a wolf pup down with me and a profit if I take two down! Let’s go! Follow *me to our deaths!”

“To our deaths!”

Swish, swish, swish!

Several tens of men all unsheathed their knives and swords, charging towards the street!

Seeing this, the Wolf King sighed in admiration, “With just one command, a myriad of men do not fear death. Weylin.... What a pity!”

It was a pity that Weylin was only an illegitimate daughter. If she was a successor of direct descent to the Rheinhardt family, Weylin’s name would have probably already been made known throughout the younger generation!

“Aiyah-yah, my dear Majesty, Sofus, I’m quite curious. Exactly

what do *you think is a pity?”

Suddenly, a voice rang out from the street corner!

This voice was very feminine and shrill, as if a latex balloon filled with water was rubbing back and forth on a steel board.

“He~~”

Including Sofus, a shiver ran up the spines of everyone present, making them feel an uncontrollable urge to scrape off the goosebumps that had appeared on their skin!

What was even more astounding was that this effeminate voice came from someone who was two meters tall, burly, bald, dressed in a vest of golden thread, wearing a small cap, and riding on a wee mule.... A giant black man!

Overseer Ceci!

A big shot surprisingly came from Rhein Headquarters, and this big shot was actually Overseer Ceci who had taken a mass of slaves just a month before!

Furthermore, behind Overseer Ceci, there was a cavalry of at least five hundred men armored in black, riding on black war horses, draped in blood-red capes, and equipped with numerous blades and bows of monotonous shades. Their movements seemed to be like that of a single person!

The First Totem Millennium, the Rheinhardt Clan's Headquarters' directly subordinate guards—the Glory Knight Squadron!

The moment the Glory Knight Squadron appeared, it was as if a chain of alternating red and white mountains had appeared, suppressing the crowd of wolves to the point that they began whimpering and groaning, nearly unable to stand up to the pressure!

"Ceci? Weren't you at Immortal Zoysia City serving Lord Rondor? What brings you here?"

The Wolf King gazed at Overseer Ceci coldly.

"Ai, it's not my fault that life is so ill-fated." Ceci withdrew a white handkerchief from his bosom and dabbed it at the corners of his eyes, sobbing: "One month before, I took two thousand slaves from Sun City. I originally thought that I had made a great contribution, and was just about to rest for several days to take good care of my skin, but who knew...." Putting his thumb and ring finger together, then shifting his weight to one leg, he pointed at Weylin, "This disappointing chit actually lost Mount Longinus! So Lord Rondor said, 'Aiyah, my dearest little Ceci~ You're most familiar with Sun City's surroundings, so why don't you go punish Weylin on my behalf....' And just like that, I've taken the clan headquarters' law enforcement team and returned~!"

After this long, effeminate response, the Wolf King frowned,

while the teeth of everybody else ached and creaked, barely holding back the urge to vomit.

Weylin, however, widened her eyes in pleasant surprise!

After losing Mount Longinus, she had already predicted that the clan's headquarters would send people to punish her!

However, she had not expected that it would be Overseer Ceci, nor did she expect that Ceci would actually bring five hundred Glory Knights. But....

Losing Mount Longinus was a problem from five days ago! Since Jiang Nan had already reacquired Mount Longinus, not only was Weylin free from sin, but she had performed a deed of merit instead!

As long as she had made a contribution, she could ask Overseer Ceci for support!

During Weylin's pleasant surprise, Ceci and the Wolf King had already exchanged a few sentences. Understanding what had happened, Ceci patted his chest: "The Professor actually killed Reyne Mountain's Crown Prince.... This, I'm at a loss for words~" He then pointed at Weylin, "Your Majesty, I'll just give you some face, hm? Weylin is going to receive punishment either way, so there is no difference between dying in our hands or your hands.... My dear, darling Glory Knights, let us withdraw~!"

The Wolf King laughed!

“Ceci, answer me! What is the third rule of the Rheinhardt Clan?”

Suddenly, Weylin’s fierce shout broke through the air.

Ceci was momentarily stunned, “Why ask such a thing~? The third…. huhu. Of course it’s ‘Reward for contribution, punishment for sin’~!”

(*TL: He’s giggling in a feminine way, but I can’t think of proper onomatopoeia for it)

“Then let the Glory Knights come back and protect *me, someone who’s performed meritorious service!”

“Meritorious service?!”

“Correct. Regardless of who impersonated Sauron to yesterday’s duel, the Professor won, so *I’ve already reacquired Mount Longinus!”

“Aiyah, protecting Mount Longinus is your duty, Weylin! Don’t tell me that….” Ceci’s fingers pinched together as if imitating the size of a tiny ant, “you want to let us dispatch the Glory Knights and fall out with the Wolf King for such a miniscule contribution…. And begin an open battle with Reyne Mountain?”

“Fine. This doesn’t count as a contribution? Then what about this?!”

Weylin took out the jade token that Yulianne had given her, “I’ve already gained Yulianne’s favor, and this is the token! With this jade token, I possess the qualifications to be rewarded with the chance of ‘having an audience with the Tortoiseshell of Destiny’ on behalf of the Rheinhardt Clan!”

Yulianne!

Hearing this name, Ceci suddenly went silent.

Immediately after, he waved his head, “My darling Glory Knights, Weylin has made a great contribution to the clan, so we cannot let her die in the Wolf King’s hand. Into formation…. Time to battle~!”

Ceci did not hesitate to protect Weylin, and the Wolf King definitely would not give up an opportunity to take vengeance. As a result, both sides turned a conflict into a bloody battle on the street!

The ordinary civilians were all praying silently: Damn it all! I don’t care who it is! Just let a hero come out and stop this chaos!

Unfortunately, that hero did not appear, or rather, during this emergency, the hero that was soon to bring an end to this chaos was still in some cave…. Playing with bones!

“Master, please bestow upon me a name!”

After an entire day of summoning, 206 bones had become Jiang Nan’s Totem Guard.

At this moment, Jiang Nan was surrounded by 206 bones flying and swirling around him. Like a flowering pineapple, amidst these small breezes of wind, Jiang Nan spread out his arms. His silver hair danced around, truly giving him the air of a Ghost Totem expert!

“Master, please bestow upon me a name!” The bones called out once again in a sharp voice.

“No rush, no rush, there’s no rush....”

Jiang Nan pointed at several bones belonging to the feet, “My dear feet bones, please lie down on the ground, okay?”

Clatter!

The leg bones lied down on the ground!

“En, very good.... Ankle bones, please jump onto the feet bones.... Leg bones, your places are right on top of the ankle bones....”

Under Jiang Nan’s guidance, 206 bones swiftly assembled, and in

just a few minutes.... They actually combined into a complete golden skeleton!

This was what I wanted!

Jiang Nan finally laughed. He knocked on the skull that he summoned first, “My dear skull, in the future, you will be the leader.... Your mission is to receive my commands and coordinate the movements of all the other bones, understand?”

Clackk!

The skull nodded.

“En, very good, very good. Now, I can give you all a complete name. Jack! From now on, you will be called Jack!”

Jack. This was the name of the pet dog Jiang Nan had raised in his last life – a chubby little Pekingese!

Click-clack???

As if sensing the meaning behind this name, Jack suddenly stuck out his mouth and glared!

Originally, Jack’s facial structure was already quite slim, so now, her round eye sockets and angry mouth shape actually.... Seemed a bit cute!

This appearance seemed to convey: “Hmph, you actually dared to give me such a disgusting name! You scoundrel!”

Jiang Nan was immediately stunned!

Could a summoned skeleton make human expressions too?!

The freak with the hanging eyeball’s secret manual never mentioned this!

Alright, alright. This is probably a normal occurrence with Ghost Totems. There’s nothing weird, nothing weird about it....

Jiang Nan comforted himself with a few words, then pointed towards the entrance through which he came in, making an effort to make himself seem like an actual master, “Jack, you are already my Totem Guard. This is my first command: widen this entrance, then carry me out. Understand?”

After he said this, Jiang Nan turned and picked up the small box that the freak with the hanging eyeball had left behind.

This box still contained the way of removing his slave marker, so he had to hide it on himself.

Just as Jiang Nan hid this box in his bosom and turned around to call Jack....

Suddenly!

A shining, golden radiance flashed over. Boom! A mysterious, rock-solid cylinder collided into Jiang Nan's head!

Fixing his eyes onto her, he could see that Jack was currently raising her own rib, pouting, shaking her small rear-end, and glaring fiercely at him!

It seemed as though she was saying, "You dare to make this young lady carry a smelly man like you.... Hah! I'll rib you to death!"

The mysterious cylinder that had attacked Jiang Nan was precisely Jack's rib bone!

Huh!!!

What an unruly little skeleton!

Chapter 080: Yulianne's Mindset, Yulianne's Strength

"This guy, did you just hit me?"

Jiang Nan cradled his head, staring at Jack in astonishment. A Totem Guard could actually attack their master?!

Jack's eye sockets widened even more, a golden light expressing an indecision between laughing or crying, as if saying, "A man, you actually called me a man?"

Then, with a 'click-clack', the skeleton turned with its rear-end facing Jiang Nan, "So what if I hit you! If you have the skill, bite me!"

Was this normal of Totem Guards?

The manual containing basic knowledge had been destroyed by Alisa, and the second manual that the freak with the hanging eyeball had given Jiang Nan was extremely simple. One could say that Jiang Nan's current level of Totem knowledge was only 'skin-deep'. No matter how much Jack acted like a human, he assumed it was completely normal.

On the other hand, something else was quite strange: while summoning the bones, Jiang Nan clearly heard their voices ringing out in his mind. However, after Jack's assembly, this mysterious connection had totally disappeared. In other words, Jack could

understand what Jiang Nan was saying, but Jiang Nan could only deduce Jack's thoughts and intents from her actions and expressions.

Seeing Jack's mischievous appearance, Jiang Nan attempted to give several more commands. To his surprise, Jack simply turned her head, stuck out her rear-end, and acted as though she had not heard anything!

"Huh? My dear man, even if you don't listen to my commands, you have to at least try your best to carry out the duty of a Totem Guard, don't you?"

Jiang Nan picked up the Flower Battle Armor and pointed towards the cave entrance, "Come with me!"

Jack narrowed her large eye sockets: Go with you? Click-hmph!

"You don't say anything, nor do you come with me.... This guy! Do you know what rules are?"

Jiang Nan walked back and squatted behind Jack.

Click-hah! Who cares about your rules?!

"Are you sure that you really don't want to know my rules?"

Jiang Nan's mouth tightened in a strange smile.

Unfortunately, Jack did not see this, and simply raised her chin gleefully. That's right! *I don't want to know. What can you do to me?

"Alright, alright...."

Suddenly, Jiang Nan grabbed Jack's neck and disassembled her entire body. Amidst Jack's whining cries of alarm, he once again assembled all 206 bones.

Her two legs were shorter, while her two hands twisted in reverse. Two ribs were stuck next to the mouth, and finally, a bone was stuck towards the rear-end....

This appearance was like a chubby Pekingese dog!

"Wuuuu!!!"

Jack looked at her appearance in despair.

However, Jiang Nan did not even spare a glance for Jack. Like a piece of garbage, Jiang Nan took the Pekingese-form Jack and threw her into the Flower Battle Armor. After tying it tightly, he viciously spat, "If you live, you belong to me. Even if you're dead, you're still my ghost! After entering the Jiang household, even if a brat like you turns into a dog, you still have to be an obedient dog! These are my rules!"

Hefting the Flower Battle Armor, Jiang Nan turned to leave.

“Wu! Wuwu, wuwuwu....”

In the bag, Jack cried out unceasingly. Her cries were filled with indignation, but they slowly became.... A bit bashful, a bit embarrassed!

This scoundrel!

This scoundrel dared to touch my body!

Not only that, but this scoundrel even said that I, I’m part of the Jiang household, and that I belong to him....”

What a bastard!

Who agreed to marry you!

By the time Jiang Nan came out, the three moons had already reached the highest point in the sky.

As he walked, Jiang Nan was three-tenths delighted and seven-tenths vexed. He was delighted that along with Jack’s appearance, he himself had definitely become an intermediate rank Totem Warrior.

As for the concrete level, it would be enough as long as he compared himself against an opponent.

However, what was frustrating was this: Hanging Eyeball's manual was honestly too simple. Although Jiang Nan was fully aware that Jack was of a high level in her lifetime and that she could definitely help him advance quickly....

Exactly how was he to speedily grow stronger?

Furthermore, whether Jack possessed other unique abilities, how her battle capability was, and when she would stop acting naughtily were still issues....

Regarding Jack, there were truly too many areas of concern.

Jiang Nan began to calculate in his heart: En. Once I return to the farm, I'll take Auntie and Suzu far away from this place and find an uninhabited area to continue my research!

As he was thinking!

Jiang Nan's two legs suddenly weakened!

This was a primal instinct. While facing peerless experts and an indomitable pressure, as long as someone was human, they would feel a helplessness to resist!

However, Jiang Nan simply gritted his teeth and stuck out his chest: “Which expert are you? Come out!”

“Great Master, it has been a while!”

Before Jiang Nan was a dense forest, and three people were currently waiting on a small path at the edge of the forest: a Golden Lion, a figure dressed in something whiter than snow, and a silver-masked woman.

This was the true Yulianne, and the pressure originated from her!

The voice, however, had come from one of the people next to Yulianne, Anya. At this moment, she was not wearing a mask, and simply looked like a girl-next-door.

Jiang Nan still thought that the genuine Yulianne was the one which he had met in Sun City. He gave a bright smile and walked up, “Miss, is there any advice you’d like to give me that you’re standing here blocking my way?”

“Steady heart, steady hands, an unsettled blade….”

The true Yulianne softly recited these seven words, then lightly flicked a challenge declaration to Jiang Nan, “I would like to personally witness the knife work you display with these seven words as a basis!”

A challenge?!

Jiang Nan's eyebrows knitted together, "Miss, haven't you already seen my knife work?"

"Please forgive me, Great Master. The Yulianne *you saw in Sun City was not Yulianne herself, but me."

Anya gave a gentle smile, "For various reasons, it isn't convenient for me to disclose why. However, after my family's Miss heard *your seven word insight, she was very interested in your knife work, Great Master, and hopes to compare knife skills."

After a moment of silence, Jiang Nan rubbed his nose bridge and suddenly asked, "Can I refuse?"

Anya chuckled, "It is only a simple comparison of knife skills, and not a duel to the death. Of course *you can refuse, Great Master. Only.... to compare knife skills with my family's Miss is the ultimate wish of countless famous chefs on the continent. Great Master, will you really refuse?"

"Oh, I really do refuse!"

Jiang Nan turned around and began striding away!

What a joke! Jiang Nan was currently carrying the two bodies of Victor and Jack. Why would he feel like comparing knife skills with someone?!

“Halt!”

The Golden Lion blocked Jiang Nan’s way, “Brat, my family’s Miss just challenged you. This is giving you more than enough face, so you’d better not reject it!”

“Yi! I’m so scared~~!”

Jiang Nan’s roguish character surfaced once more as he smirked and said, “Yulianne, you are the world’s owner of the fastest blade, its number one chef, and its number one beauty! If you want to thicken your skin and feel no shame in threatening me and forcing me to accept the challenge, then because I’m afraid of death, I’ll definitely accept it right away! Come on then! Threaten me! Force me!”

After he said this, Jiang Nan closed his eyes and raised his chin, his face expressing, As long as you aren’t afraid of acting more shamelessly than me, then I’ll be just as shameless.

“Y-you!” The Golden Lion was so enraged he could not even speak. However, he really could not muster the nerve to bully such a minor character!

Totally ignoring him, Jiang Nan turned and left.

However, right at this moment!

“Great Master! If Anya could be so bold as to guess, is the reason you do not wish to accept my family’s Miss’ challenge because you are worried about the two corpses on your back?!”

Jiang Nan abruptly halted his steps and turned his head to see Anya smiling contentedly.

She actually knew that there were two corpses on my back!

Then that must mean she saw the entire process of me summoning Jack?

Damn it all, my identity as a Ghost Totem master has been exposed!

All of Jiang Nan’s hairs stood on end!

Bowing his head and laughing bitterly, he then raised his head back up and threw his bag onto the ground, levelling his fists in front of his chest and saying fiercely, “Alright, since you guys have exposed my identity, come on! A group brawl or individual fight?!”

“Great Master, why say such things?” Anya chuckled: “The only reason I pointed out the corpses on Great Master’s back was to assure you: if Great Master is only unwilling to accept my family’s Miss’ challenge because of those two corpses, then there’s no need. My family’s Miss…. Never makes things difficult for a Ghost Totem master!”

Yulianne....

Actually did not intend on complying with the ‘Ghost Massacre Decree’?!

Jiang Nan gawked at Yulianne in astonishment. However, all he saw was a pair of eyes behind a silver mask that exuded a transcendental air, somberly looking down on the world!

If a young child was to determine the rules of a game of hide-and-seek, what adult would treat it sincerely and abide by it?

In the same manner, the various nations of the continent had established a ‘Ghost Massacre Decree’. But, did Yulianne who was capable of bewitching the moon with one blade and felling a thousand-troop army in one stroke, who possessed the ability to overturn the history of the continent, need to abide by the ‘Ghost Massacre Decree’?

In an instant, Jiang Nan understood Yulianne’s mindset!

In her perspective, the Ghost Massacre Degree was no more than a boring children’s game!

Exactly how strong was Yulianne that she could look down on the several hundred nations on this continent?!

At this time, Anya questioned him once more: “Great Master’s expression has shown understanding, so I’m sure that you

understand my family's Miss' attitude now. Correct, my family's Miss only values *your knife work. As for your identity as a Ghost Totem master, it is insignificant." Halting, she continued, "Now, will the Great Master accept my family's Miss' challenge?"

Jiang Nan closed his eyes and pondered for a moment, then rubbed his chin and answered: "There's no rush. First answer one question of mine...."

He stuck out one finger, "I heard that Yulianne previously vowed in public that to any man faster than her in knife work, she would.... Alright, if I really win against Yulianne, will she truly marry me?"

"Bastard!"

The Golden Lion flared up: "What kind of person is a brat like you that you dare to encroach on my family's Miss' dignity! It seems that today...."

"Rhessat!"

Yulianne suddenly barked out coldly, then came to a stop before Jiang Nan. After she sized Jiang Nan up with her starry eyes, she coldly answered: "A promise is worth a thousand pieces in gold! Yulianne will definitely carry out this vow!"

Hearing this, Jiang Nan shook his head and moved to continue the latter half of his words....

At this moment, everybody assumed that Jiang Nan's subsequent words would be, "Since Miss Yulianne is willing to fulfill her vow, then I will accept! Remember by all means that if you lose.... You absolutely must marry me!"

Thus, Anya took the initiative to interject with a smile: "Since Great Master has already agreed to the challenge, there's no rush. Anya must first say something beforehand to avoid the Great Master's future rebuke." She sighed, then continued, "Before Anya left Sun City, Wolf King Sofus suddenly arrived. Currently, I'm afraid that Weylin and the people of West Farms...."

Sofus came?!

Jiang Nan looked as if he had been struck by lightning, and the latter half of his words were swallowed back down.

If the Wolf King came, then Auntie's life is in danger! Weylin's life is in danger! Suzu's life is in danger, and everybody in West Farms is in danger!

I must return right away to save them!

But....

Can I save someone from the Wolf King's hands?

Jiang Nan rubbed his nose bridge, a flash of light zipping across his eyes. Suddenly, he revised the words he was originally intending to say and laughed: “Alright, I accept your challenge. However, the location of the match must be…. In Sun City!”